2596. I. G. 6.

A

VOYAGE

ROUND THE

WORLD,

IN

His BRITANNIC MAJESTY'S Sloop, RESOLUTION,

commanded by Capt. JAMES COOK, during the Years 1772, 3, 4, and 5.

By GEORGE FORSTER, F.R.S.

Member of the Royal Academy of MADRID, and of the Society for promoting Natural Knowledge at BERLIN.

K. K. LYCEAL BIBLIOTHEK ZU LAIBACH

VOL. II.

Mobilis enim et inquieta mens homini data eſt; nunquam ſe tenet: ſpargitur, et cogitationes ſuas in omnia nota atque ignota dimittit; vaga et quietis impatiens, et novitate rerum lætiſſima. SENECA.

LONDON,

Printed for B. WHITE, Fleet-Street; J. ROBSON, Bond-Street; P. ELMSLY, Strand; and G. ROBINSON, Pater-noſter-Row.

M DCCLXXVII.

CONTENTS.

BOOK II.

CHAP. V. *Run from Eaſter Iſland to the Marqueſas.—Stay in Madre de Dios Harbour, on Waitahoo. Courſe from thence through the Low Iſlands to Taheitee,* p. 1

CHAP. VI. *An Account of our ſecond Viſit to the Iſland of O-Taheitee,* 51

CHAP. VII. *The ſecond Stay at the Society Iſlands,* 114

CHAP. VIII. *Run from the Society to the Friendly Iſlands,* 159

BOOK III.

CHAP. I. *An Account of our Stay at Mallicollo, and Diſcovery of the New Hebrides,* 199

CHAP. II. *Account of our Stay at Tanna, and Departure from the New Hebrides,* 262

CHAP. III. *Diſcovery of New Caledonia.—Account of our Stay there.—Range along the Coaſt to our Departure.—Diſcovery of Norfolk Iſland.—Return to New Zeeland,* 377

CHAP. IV. *Third and laſt Stay at Queen Charlotte's Sound in New Zeeland,* 449

CHAP.

CONTENTS.

CHAP. V. *The Courſe from New Zeeland to Tierra del Fuego.—Stay at Chriſtmas Harbour,* 481

CHAP. VI. *Stay at the New Year's Iſlands.—Diſcovery of Lands to the Southward.—Return to the Cape of Good Hope,* 512

CHAP. VII. *Second Stay at the Cape of Good Hope.—Run from thence to the Iſlands of St. Helena and Aſcenſion,* 548

CHAP. VIII. *Run from from Aſcenſion paſt the Iſland of Fernando da Noronha, to the Açores.—Stay at Fayal.—Return to England,* 579

ERRATA of the SECOND VOLUME.

P. 40. l. 3.	*for*	mild	*read*	wild.
160. in the note,	*dele*	Dr. Hunter, in the Phil. Tranſ.		
443. in the note,	*for*	Δελφιν,	*read*	Δελφις.
527. l. 5.		accompanid		accompanied.

A

VOYAGE ROUND THE WORLD.

BOOK II.

CHAP. V.

Run from Eaſter Iſland to the Marqueſas—Stay in Madre-de-Dios harbour on Waitahoo—Courſe from thence through the Low Iſlands to Taheitee.

THE breeze with which we ſailed from Eaſter Iſland was ſo gentle, that we were ſtill in ſight of it the next day at noon, at the diſtance of fifteen leagues. The weather was rather ſultry, and captain Cook relapſed into his former bilious diſorder, by having exerted himſelf too much on ſhore, during the violent heat of noon. All thoſe who had been on the long excurſion acroſs the iſland, had their faces bliſtered by the ſun, and extremely painful in proportion as the ſkin peeled off. The ſhort ſtay near the land, and the uſe of a few vegetables from thence, had greatly reſtored to their health thoſe who were afflicted with the

1774. MARCH. Thurſday 17.

1774. MARCH. ſcurvy before; and ſeveral, though exceſſively weak, felt no inconvenience at preſent. It is true, the little ſupply at Eaſter Iſland ſerved only as a whet to our appetite, and made us all extremely eager in our wiſhes of reaching the Marqueſas of Mendoça, whither we now directed our courſe. Very fortunately for us the wind freſhened the next day, and continued ſo for ſome time, giving life to our hopes, and inſpiring more chearfulneſs than we had known for ſome months paſt.

In a few days, however, we were much alarmed to find ſeveral people ſickening again, and particularly complaining of conſtipations and bilious diſorders, which are deadly in hot climates. Among theſe was our excellent ſurgeon himſelf, whoſe illneſs gave us more pain than almoſt any thing elſe. The moſt unlucky circumſtance was, that the patients could not eat the potatoes which we had brought from the ſhore, becauſe they were too flatulent for their weakened ſtomachs.

Thurſday 24. A calm which happened on the 24th, our latitude being about 17° ſouth, was very diſagreeable to the ſick, and brought ſome of them very low. Captain Cook himſelf was obliged to keep his bed again, being afflicted with ſome alarming ſymptoms. However the wind returned in the afternoon, and freſhening conſiderably in a day or two, cooled the air very pleaſantly. This weather was very ſalutary to all the bilious patients; ſo that they appeared on deck,

deck, and walked, or rather crawled about, though exceedingly emaciated. 1774. MARCH.

My father ordered his Taheitian dog, the only one which ſtill remained alive after our departure from the Friendly Iſlands, to be killed; it was cut into quarters, which were ſerved up to captain Cook during ſeveral days, and gave him ſome nouriſhment, as he could not venture to taſte the ſhip's proviſions. By ſuch ſmall helps we ſucceeded in preſerving a life upon which the ſucceſs of the voyage in a great meaſure depended.

We daily ſaw Tropic birds and ſhearwaters after leaving Eaſter Iſland, and frightened many ſhoals of flying fiſh out of the water. Theſe fiſh were remarkably numerous on the 27th, when we ſaw none but ſmall ones, the largeſt not exceeding the length of a finger, and the leaſt ſcarcely ſo long as one of its joints. Our latitude that day, at noon, was 13° 13′ ſouth. Saturday 27.

Since the calm on the 24th we had a fine ſteady gale from the eaſtward, which ſpeeded our courſe prodigiouſly. The weather in general was ſerene, and the colour of the ocean a fine rich blue, bearing always a conſiderable relation to that of the ſky. Dolphins, bonitos, and ſharks appeared from time to time, and various birds at war with flying fiſhes enlivened the ſcene. To add to our comfort, the heat of the ſun became perfectly agreeable to us, being tempered by the rapid motion of the air, and permitted us APRIL.

1774. APRIL. to walk about the decks with ſome ſatisfaction. Nothing leſs was wanting to keep up our fainting ſpirits, and to ſtrengthen the ſick, who might be ſaid to feed entirely upon hope, having no refreſhments to reſtore their waſted ſtrength. We had already conſumed all the vegetables which had been purchaſed at Eaſter Iſland; nothing therefore remained, but either to return to the loathed diet of ſalted meat, of which the juices were utterly deſtroyed, by lying in pickle for three years, or to ſtarve on a ſmall quantity of bread, if the ſtomach could not digeſt thoſe groſs and unprofitable fibres. We were therefore unanimous in our wiſhes of a ſpeedy deliverance; and in proportion as the breeze ſlackened or encreaſed, the thermometer of our expectations fluctuated from abject deſpondence to the moſt ſanguine expectation. All our books which treated of Mendaña's Voyages were conſulted; and ſince the vague expreſſions, relative to the diſtance of the Marqueſas from Peru, gave us full ſcope for conjecture, every day produced a new calculation of their longitude. For the ſpace of five days we ſucceſſively paſſed over the different poſitions which our new geographers had allotted to thoſe iſlands, and overturned each new hypotheſis, not without ſome diverſion to the reſt, who either artfully concealed their own opinion, or candidly confeſſed that the *data* were too uncertain to bear a ſuperſtructure. During this courſe we enjoyed ſome beautiful evenings, and particularly obſerved the ſky and clouds

clouds tinged with different hues of green by the ſetting ſun, on the 3d of April. This colour has been obſerved by Frezier before, and is in fact nothing extraordinary, eſpecially if the air happens to be charged with vapours, which is frequently the caſe between the tropics. The ſame day we had caught a ſmall ſucking fiſh, adhering to a flying fiſh, with which we had baited a hook: a proof that theſe little creatures are not always fixed to ſharks. The ſame day we ſaw a large fiſh of the genus of rays, which is called a ſea-devil by ſome authors. It perfectly reſembled that which we had ſeen in the Atlantic, on the firſt of September, 1772. (See vol. I. p. 47.) The number of terns, tropic, and man of war birds, encreaſed around us almoſt every day, as we ran to the weſtward, and approached the iſlands which we expected to find. At laſt, on the 6th of April in the afternoon, we had ſight of a ſmall bluff iſland; but the haze which involved it, and which thickened as we advanced, prevented our examining the nature of the land, and building any hopes of refreſhment on its appearance. Quiros, who is ſuppoſed to have written the account of the voyage of the Spaniſh Adelentado (or captain-general) Don Alvaro Mendaña de Neyra, in the year 1595, gives a favourable account of the group of iſlands diſcovered in that voyage, which were named the Iſlas Marqueſas de Mendoça, in honour of the viceroy of Peru, Don Garcia Hurtado de Mendoça, marquis

1774. APRIL.

of

1774. April. of Cañete, who had ſet on foot that expedition. We had recourſe to this account, in order to gain ſome information relative to the land which now engroſſed all our attention.

Thurſday 7. The next morning we ſtood in-ſhore, and though the weather ſtill continued hazy, we ſoon diſtinguiſhed the different iſlands which the Spaniards have called la Dominica, St. Pedro, and St. Chriſtina. We were convinced at the ſame time, that the ſmall bluff iſland which we had firſt fallen in with, had not been ſeen by Mendaña; and captain Cook gave it the name of Hood's Iſland, from the perſon who firſt diſcovered it. La Dominica, which lay neareſt to us, was a high and mountainous iſland, of which the N. E. point was very ſteep and barren; but farther to the north we obſerved ſome vallies filled with trees, amongſt which we now and then diſcovered a hut. As the haze cleared away, we ſaw many craggy rocks like ſpires, and ſeveral hollow ſummits piled up in the centre of the iſland, which proved that volcanoes and earthquakes had been active there in changing the face of the country. All its eaſtern part is a prodigious ſteep and almoſt perpendicular wall, of a great height, which forms a ſharp ridge, ſhattered into ſpires and precipices. St. Pedro is a ſmall iſland, of very moderate elevation, but did not appear either fertile or populous. St. Chriſtina, the weſtermoſt of all, had the moſt promiſing appearance; and, though very high and ſteep, yet had ſeveral vallies, which widened towards

wards the ſea, and were covered with fine foreſts to the ſummits of the mountain. About three o'clock we entered the ſtraits, between the ſouth end of Dominica, and the N. E. part of St. Chriſtina, which is above two miles wide. We obſerved ſome pleaſant ſpots on both iſlands, between the clefts of the mountain; but ſaw no plains, like thoſe which ſo greatly embelliſh the Society Iſlands. The ſhore of St. Chriſtina was, however, ſufficient to revive all our ſpirits, and inſpired that cheerfulneſs which every fertile and pleaſing proſpect gives to the weary mariner. We paſſed ſeveral little coves, where the white foaming ſurf tumbled in upon the beach. The two projecting points of every cove included a valley, filled with foreſts and plantations, of a pleaſing verdure. On every beach we ſaw ſome inhabitants running about, or gazing at our ſhip. Sometimes they launched their canoes, and attempted to come after us; but a ſtrong breeze carried us ſo ſwiftly through the ſmooth water, that we left them far behind. We found a harbour on the weſt ſide of the iſland, which looked ſo tempting, that we eagerly wiſhed to come to an anchor; but juſt as we were turning about, in order to run into it, a heavy ſquall came over the high mountain with prodigious violence, and laid the ſhip on her ſide, ſo that we ſprung our mizen-topmaſt, and narrowly eſcaped being driven againſt the ſouthern point of the harbour. After we had trimmed our ſails again, we tacked, and anchored about

1774. APRIL.

1774. APRIL. about five o'clock in the entrance of the harbour. During the ſquall, about fifteen canoes, putting off from different parts of the iſland, came near the ſhip. Some were double, and contained fifteen men; others, on the contrary, were ſmall, and had from three to ſeven men. As ſoon as we were at anchor, we invited the natives, by every ſign of friendſhip, and by addreſſing them in the Taheitian language, to come on board. This they did not venture to do; but at firſt they brought their canoes cloſe alongſide, and offered us ſome pepper-roots, which were doubtleſs ſigns of peace, as at the Society and Friendly Iſlands. After we had faſtened theſe roots to the ſhrouds, they ſold us a few fiſh in exchange for nails, and likewiſe ſome excellent large bread-fruit, perfectly ripe, at ſight of which our whole ſhip's company expreſſed the greateſt marks of joy in their countenances.

The natives about us were a well-made, handſome people, of a good yellowiſh or tawny colour, but looked almoſt black, by being punctured over the whole body. They were all naked, having only a ſmall piece of cloth, perfectly reſembling that made by the people of Taheitee, round their waiſt and loins. Their beards and hair were of a fine jetty black, and their language much nearer the Taheitian, than any other dialect in the South Sea, with this difference, that they could not pronounce the *r*. Their canoes were thin, and formed of boards ſlightly ſewed together,

gether, and their paddles were made like thoſe of Taheitee, with a knob at the end. We continually enquired for hogs, and told them to bring us ſome; and towards night we had the ſatisfaction to ſee a pig along-ſide, which we purchaſed for a knife. As ſoon as it was dark, the canoes retired, according to the general cuſtom of all the nations in the South Sea we had hitherto ſeen, on whom the novelty of an European ſhip cannot prevail to wake a ſingle night. The vallies in our harbour were very full of trees, and every part anſwered the graphical deſcription which the Spaniards have given, and by which we were well convinced that their harbour of *Madre de Dios* was the ſame where we had anchored *. Its ſituation, deduced from aſtronomical obſervation, is in 9° 55′ S. latitude, and 139° 8′ W. longitude. We ſaw many fires through the trees, at a great diſtance from the water, and concluded the country to be well inhabited. The next morning early we had a full view of the land, clear of the clouds which reſted on it in the evening. On the ſouth ſide riſes a peak, which is very craggy and inacceſſible. All the north ſide is a black, burnt hill, of which the rock is vaulted along the ſea-ſhore, and the top clad to the ſummit with a ſhrubbery of caſuarinas. But the bottom of the harbour is filled up with a very high ridge, level at top, and reſembling the

1774. APRIL.

Friday 8.

* See Mr. Dalrymple's Collection, vol. I. p. 66.

1774. APRIL. Table-mountain at the Cape of Good Hope. Several vallies, perfectly filled with trees, lead up from two beaches to the very ſummit of the mountain, which appears exceſſively ſteep. Along its uppermoſt edge we ſaw a row of ſtakes or palliſadoes, cloſely connected together, like a fortification, within which, by the help of our glaſſes, we diſcerned ſomething like huts. Theſe places we ſuppoſed to be what the Spaniards have called intrenchments; but they bore a great reſemblance to the hippas of the New Zeelanders, which are commonly ſituated on high ridges, and ſurrounded with palliſades.

The natives, encouraged by the trade which we had begun the evening before, came off in ſeveral canoes, ſoon after ſun-riſe, and brought great quantities of bread fruit, which we bought for ſmall nails. They likewiſe ſold ſome bananas, and traded very fair for ſome time, but without venturing to come on board. However, after breakfaſt, it appeared that their diſpoſition had but too much ſimilarity with that of the Taheitians. Some of them began to deal diſhoneſtly with us, receiving the nail for which they had offered a bread-fruit, without delivering it in return. The captain, to intimidate them, fired a muſket over their heads. This had the deſired effect, and they immediately handed up the fruit for which we had bargained. Some others, after they had ſold their goods, came on board to be gazed at, and to gaze. While captain

tain Cook prepared to go into his boat with my father, one of theſe natives, finding the large iron ſtanchion looſe, to which the man-ropes on the ſhip's ſide, by which we aſcended or deſcended, were faſtened, ſnatched it up, leaped overboard with it, and, notwithſtanding its weight, ſwam with great agility to his canoe, where he ſecured it. This hazardous enterprize being reported to captain Cook, who was juſt ſtepping into the boat, he ordered a muſket to be fired over the native's head, whilſt he meant to come round the ſhip, to recover the ſtanchion. The muſket was fired, but the man took no notice of it, looking about him with great unconcern. The captain hearing it, ordered another to be fired, and put off from the ſhip. The ſecond ſhot had no other effect than the firſt; upon which an officer, who that moment came upon deck, ſnatched up a muſket, and taking exact aim, ſhot the man through the head. His companion in the ſame canoe inſtantly threw the iron into the ſea, which had been the cauſe of this unfortunate event. The captain in his boat came up, and ſaw the canoe full of blood, and the dead corſe lying in it. The other native baled the blood out into the ſea, and then retired to the ſhore with all the other canoes, and left us perfectly alone. The natives on the beach hauled the canoe through the ſurf, and carried the corſe up into the woods. Preſently after we heard drums beating, and ſaw a conſiderable number of the inhabitants aſſembled on the beach,

1774. APRIL.

1774. APRIL. with ſpears and clubs in their hands, which had a very unfriendly appearance, and rather ſeemed to threaten that we had no farther refreſhments to expect. We cannot but lament, that the time in which this man was killed, by a perſon who was ignorant of the nature of his offence, did not admit of any previous conſideration. The firſt diſcoverers and conquerors of America have often, and very deſervedly, been ſtigmatiſed with cruelty, becauſe they treated the wretched nations of that continent, not as their brethren, but as irrational beaſts, whom it was lawful to ſhoot for diverſion; and yet, in our enlightened age, prejudice and raſhneſs have often proved fatal to the inhabitants of the South Sea. Mahine burſt into tears, when he ſaw one man killing another on ſo trifling an occaſion. Let his feelings put thoſe civilized Europeans to the bluſh, who have humanity ſo often on their lips, and ſo ſeldom in their hearts!

Captain Cook, knowing the weak condition of his crew, was unwilling to relinquiſh the hope of procuring refreſhments at this iſland; and therefore, after directing the ſhip to be removed deeper into the harbour, ſelected a party of marines and ſailors, and landed under the vaulted rocks to the northward, accompanied by Dr. Sparrman, Mahine, my father, and myſelf. A great troop of the natives, conſiſting of more than a hundred men, received us on theſe rocks with ſpears and clubs in their hands, of which they did not attempt

attempt to make any uſe. We approached them with demonſtrations of friendſhip, which they returned; and our firſt requeſt was that they ſhould ſit down, to which they inſtantly agreed. We then endeavoured to ſhew the beſt ſide of what had happened, and acquainted them that we had only ſhot at one of their countrymen, becauſe he had made free with our property; that we were deſirous of living as friends with them; and that we only came to take in wood, water, and refreſhments, for which we had nails, hatchets, and other curious articles to offer in return. The natives were pacified by our ſpecious reaſonings; they ſeemed to think their countryman had deſerved his fate, and conducted us round the beach to a fine brook, where we eſtabliſhed our waterers, and began to purchaſe ſome fruits, which were at firſt brought down very ſparingly. For greater ſecurity, the marines were drawn up in a line, under arms, and our return to the water ſecured. But we had no occaſion for theſe precautions; the people with whom we dealt were too honeſt to break a peace to which they had conſented, and of too gentle a diſpoſition to revenge the death of a man whom they could not entirely acquit. In a ſhort time our trade went on more briſkly, and the natives came down with loads of plantanes, bananas, and bread-fruit from the hills, which they ſold for a trifling conſideration of iron ware. 1774. APRIL.

Among

1774. APRIL. Among the croud we ſaw no women, they having probably retired to the mountains on the firſt alarm; but there were ſome men better armed and ornamented than the reſt, who ſeemed to be their leaders. They were all without cloathing, having nothing but a ſmall piece of cloth to cover the loins. They were tall, and extremely well limbed; not one of them unweildly or corpulent like a Taheitian, nor meagre and ſhrivelled like a native of Eaſter Iſland. The punctuation which almoſt entirely covered the men of a middle age, made it difficult to diſtinguiſh their elegance of form; but among the youths, who were not yet marked or tattowed, it was eaſy to diſcover beauties ſingularly ſtriking, and often without a blemiſh, ſuch as demanded the admiration of all beholders. Many of them might be placed near the famous models of antiquity, and would not ſuffer in the compariſon:

Qualis aut Nireus fuit, aut aquoſâ
Raptus ab Idâ. HOR.

The natural colour of theſe youths was not quite ſo dark as that of the common people in the Society Iſles; but the men appeared to be infinitely blacker, on account of the punctures which covered their whole body, from head to foot. Theſe punctures were diſpoſed with the utmoſt regularity; ſo that the marks on each leg, arm, and cheek, and

and on the correſponding muſcles, were exactly ſimilar. They never aſſumed the determinate form of an animal or plant, but conſiſted of a variety of blotches, ſpirals, bars, chequers, and lines, which had a moſt motley appearance. Their countenances were pleaſing, open, and full of vivacity; their eyes were large and dark-coloured; their hair black, curled, and ſtrong; a few excepted, who had light-coloured or ſandy hair. The beard however was thin in general, on account of the numerous ſcars of punctures which commonly covered that part of the face. The number of ornaments, in ſome meaſure, might be ſaid to ſupply the want of cloathing. On their heads many of them wore a kind of diadem; this conſiſted of a flat bandage wrought of coco-nut core, on the outſide of which ſeveral round pieces of mother of pearl, ſome of them five inches in diameter, were fixed, covered in the middle with a plate of tortoiſe-ſhell, perforated like fret-work. Several tufts of long, black, and gloſſy cock's feathers formed the plumes to this head-dreſs, which was really beautiful and noble in its kind. Some wore round coronets of the ſmall ligulated feathers of the man of war bird, and others a circle, from whence ſeveral ranges of twiſted ſtrings of coco-nut core, about two inches long, either of the natural colour, or dyed black, diverged round the head. In their ears they ſometimes placed two flat pieces of a light wood, of an oval ſhape, about three inches long, covering the whole ear, and

painted

1774. APRIL.

1774. APRIL. painted them white with lime. Their leaders wore a kind of gorget round the neck, or rather on the breaſt; it conſiſted of ſmall portions of a light wood, like cork, glued together with gum, in a ſemicircular form; a quantity of ſcarlet-beans *(abrus precatorius*, Linn.) are glued all round it with the ſame gum, forming a great number of rows, of the length of two or three inches. Thoſe who were not poſſeſſed of this glaring ornament, at leaſt wore a ſtring round the neck, and faſtened it to a piece of ſhell, which was cut and poliſhed in the ſhape of a large tooth. They were alſo fond of having bunches of human hair tied on a ſtring round their waiſt, arms, knees, and ancles. All theſe ornaments they freely parted with for a trifling conſideration, except the laſt, which they valued very highly, though they were the uſual reſidence of many vermin. It is probable that theſe bunches of hair were worn in remembrance of their dead relations, and therefore looked upon with ſome veneration; or elſe they may be the ſpoils of their enemies, worn as the honourable teſtimonies of victory. However a large nail, or ſomething which ſtruck their eyes, commonly got the better of their ſcruples.

After we had made theſe obſervations on the people who ſurrounded us, we left the beach, and rambled through the woods at a ſhort diſtance from captain Cook's ſtation, collecting ſeveral plants, of which we had ſeen the greateſt part at the Society Iſlands. As we did not care to advance far

far into the country the firſt day, we confined ourſelves to the low land, which bordered upon the beach, and which we found entirely uninhabited. However we met with a number of ſquare compartments among the trees, laid out with great ſtones, moſtly of a regular ſquare figure; which we afterwards learnt, were the foundations of their houſes. It may be conjectured from thence, that theſe places have been abandoned, on account of ſome inconvenience of the ground; or that they are only made uſe of at certain ſeaſons. All this part was deſtitute of plantations, and covered with foreſt-trees, ſome of which ſeemed to be very good timber. The natives did not attempt to ſtop us, and left us to purſue our walk entirely by ourſelves. A little hill, covered with long graſs up to our middle, and broken into a perpendicular wall to the ſea, juts forward, and divides this beach from another to the ſouthward. On the north ſide of this hill we found a fine ſpring of clear water, in the very place where the Spaniſh navigators have deſcribed it, which guſhes out of the rock, and is collected in a little baſon, from whence it flows into the ſea. A brook runs down from the higher hills cloſe to it; another more conſiderable deſcends on the middle of the beach, and ſupplied us with water; and again another is to be met with in the northern corner. This iſland is therefore extremely well watered; and the vegetation, as well as the inhabitants, evidently derive great benefit from it in this hot climate.

1774. APRIL.

1774. APRIL. We ſoon returned to the trading place with our acquiſitions, and converſed with the natives, who had now ſo far laid aſide their diſtruſt, as to part with their arms to us for our iron tools. Theſe weapons were all made of the club-wood, or caſuarina*, and were either plain ſpears, about eight or ten feet long, or clubs, which commonly had a large knob at one end. Captain Cook had been very ſucceſsful in the meanwhile, having procured a great quantity of fruit and ſeveral hogs, with all which we embarked in our boats at noon. The weather which had been very warm on ſhore, was really much cooler on board, where the wind came down in ſtrong guſts from the mountains, ſometimes attended with ſmall ſhowers.

In the afternoon I remained on board, but my father accompanied the captain on ſhore, and went up the hill a little way to a wretched hut; but finding no inhabitants there, who had probably been alarmed by their ſhooting at birds, he put ſeveral nails on a few bread-fruit, which he ſaw cloſe to the hut, and then deſcended to the beach with ſome botanical acquiſitions.

Saturday 9. Seven canoes arrived about the ſhip from La Dominica the next morning, whilſt ſeveral others from St. Chriſtina went up the ſtrait. The former ſeemed to be of the ſame nation with thoſe with whom we were already ac-

* The Taheitians call it *tòä*, which ſignifies war, becauſe it furniſhes the inſtruments of bloodſhed.

quainted,

quainted, and brought the ſame fruits to ſell, which we had purchaſed in this iſland. We went on ſhore after breakfaſt, and found our friendly natives aſſembled on the beach. Among them was a chief, who was dreſſed in a cloak manufactured of the paper-mulberry bark, like the Taheitian cloth, and who wore the diadem, the gorget, the ear-pendants, and bunches of hair. We learnt that this man was the king of the whole iſland, though he had not great reſpect ſhewn him. He preſented captain Cook with ſome fruits and hogs, and continued in the neighbourhood of our people the whole day. He acquainted us that his name was *Hònoo* *, and that he was *he-ka-aï*, which was doubtleſs a title correſponding to the aree of Taheitee, and areekee of the Friendly Iſlands. He ſeemed to be a very good-natured, intelligent man, a character ſo prevalent in his countenance, that Mr. Hodges, who drew his picture, could not fail of expreſſing it, as may be ſeen in the print of him, in captain Cook's account of this voyage. We enquired for the name of this iſland and the adjacent ones, and found that St. Chriſtina was called WAITAHOO, La Dominica HEEVAROA, and St. Pedro ONATEYO. Mahine, who was exceſſively fond of 1774. APRIL.

* This word ſignifies a turtle, or ſea-tortoiſe, in the Taheitian language; it is therefore probable that the names of theſe people ſometimes are taken from animals, like thoſe of the North-American Indians. In the ſame manner *O-Too*, the name of the king of Taheitee, ſignifies a heron.

1774. April. theſe people, on account of the vaſt ſimilarity between their manners, language and perſons, and thoſe of his nation, was continually engaged in converſation with them, and purchaſed a great number of their ornaments. He ſhewed them many cuſtoms of his country, with which they were unacquainted, and among theſe was the method of lighting a fire, by rubbing together the dry ſticks of the *hibiſcus tiliaceus*, to which they were extremely attentive. Captain Cook found a great quantity of vegetables, ſome fowls and hogs, at the trading place, which he purchaſed for ſmall nails, knives, pieces of cloth, &c. The red feathers of Tonga-Tabboo, or Amſterdam Iſland, were likewiſe in great repute here, and the natives gave many head-dreſſes, and other ornaments, in exchange for them. We ſaw only one woman this day, who ſat down in the circle of her countrymen, and was dreſſed in a piece of cloth made of bark, like the women of the Society Iſlands. She was an elderly woman, and ſcarce diſtinguiſhable from a Taheitian. We walked this day about a mile and a half, on the ſouth ſide of the rivulet. After croſſing a clear ſpot, from whence we had a full proſpect of the harbour, we entered a thick wood, where we ſaw chiefly the ratta, or Taheitee nut-trees (*inocarpus* *) which grew to a conſiderable ſize and height, and ſome fine bread-fruit trees; both which are

* See Forſt. Nova Genera Plantar.

planted

planted in the plains at Taheitee, the heat being leſs violent there than at theſe iſlands. At laſt we came to one of the huts of the natives, which, in compariſon with the lofty houſes of the Society Iſlands, was only a wretched hovel. It was placed on an elevated platform of ſtones, which were not ſmooth and even enough to form a very comfortable couch, though they were covered with mats. On this baſe the natives had erected a quantity of bamboo-canes, cloſely connected together, between five and ſix feet high, above which the roof roſe in a ridge at top, conſiſting of ſmall ſticks, thatched with the leaves of the bread-fruit and ratta tree. The whole houſe might be about fifteen feet long, and eight or ten feet broad, and the method of placing it on a foundation of ſtones, ſeemed to intimate that the country is ſubject to heavy rains and inundations at certain ſeaſons. We ſaw ſome large wooden troughs here, and found pieces of bread-fruit, mixed with water, in them. Three natives appeared near the hut, who, at our deſire, went down about a hundred yards to the brook, and brought us ſome freſh water to drink. Having rewarded them for their readineſs to ſerve us, we walked to the beach, and from thence returned on board. In getting into our boat, we ran the greateſt riſk in the world of being overſet, and were wetted by the ſurf, which broke upon the rocks. Mahine, who ſtill remained on ſhore, plunged into the water, and ſwam to the boat, to prevent our ex-

1774. APRIL.

poſing

1774. APRIL. poſing ourſelves once more to the ſame danger in taking him in.

Dr. Sparrman ſtaid on board with me in the afternoon, deſcribing and drawing ſome plants which we had collected in the morning; but my father returned aſhore with the captain to the ſouthern beach, where he found ſeveral habitations near the ſea, but ſaw no women. This was the ſame beach to which the natives had carried the dead body of their countryman. They were conducted to a houſe, which had been that unfortunate man's dwelling, and ſaw ſeveral hogs there, now the property of his ſon, a youth of fifteen years, to whom they made ſeveral expiatory preſents. Our people enquired for his female relations, but were told they remained on the top of the mountain, to weep and mourn for the dead. We had ſome reaſon to ſuſpect, from this account, that the palliſades or encloſures along the top of the rock, ſurrounded the burying-places of the inhabitants. The captain purchaſed a quantity of fruit, and ſeveral hogs, at this beach; and though he was in the midſt of the relations of a man whom our people had killed, he did not perceive the leaſt animoſity or ſpirit of revenge amongſt them.

The next morning Dr. Sparrman went on ſhore with me to the watering place, where the trade for proviſions was very conſiderable. Our iron ware was however lowered in value at leaſt two hundred per cent. ſince our anchorage in the

the harbour. Our ſmall nails, which they had eagerly taken at firſt, were now no longer current; and even the large ones were not much coveted. Beads were not eſteemed at all; but ribbons, cloth, and other trifles were more agreeable. Some large hogs were purchaſed for pieces of the mulberry-bark, covered with red feathers, which we had obtained at the iſland of Amſterdam or Tonga-Tabboo. 1774. APRIL 8.

The weather was exceedingly hot this day, for which reaſon many of the inhabitants made uſe of large fans to cool themſelves. Theſe fans, of which they ſold us a great number, were formed of a kind of tough bark or graſs, very firmly and curiouſly plaited, and frequently whitened with ſhell-lime. Some alſo had large feathered leaves, which anſwered the purpoſe of an umbrella, and upon examination, were found to belong to the *corypha umbraculifera*, Linn. a kind of palm. The fans are repreſented on a reduced ſcale on the ſame plate, with the head-dreſſes of theſe people, and inſerted in captain Cook's account of this voyage.

Notwithſtanding the immenſe heat of the day, we reſolved to aſcend the mountain, in hopes of being well rewarded for the trouble, by the diſcoveries we ſhould make. The palliſades at the top were particularly what we aimed at, none of our people having hitherto any idea of them. Mr. Patton and two other gentlemen were of the party. We

ſoon

1774. APRIL. ſoon croſſed the fine rivulet, at which our people watered, and followed the path on the north ſide, ſeeing that the greateſt number of inhabitants had come down from thence. The aſcent was at firſt not very fatiguing; ſeveral gentle hills formed the fore-ground, which were almoſt level on the ſummits, and contained ſeveral ſpacious plantations of bananas, in excellent order. Theſe ſpots always opened upon us unexpectedly, as the reſt of our way lay through a cloſe tufted wood of fruit-trees, mixed with other ſorts, extremely pleaſant to us, on account of the thick and cooling ſhade. Here and there we met with a ſolitary coco-nut palm, which, far from lifting its royal head with becoming pride, was out-topped and hid by meaner trees. In general theſe trees do not thrive well upon mountains, preferring a low ſituation; inſomuch that they abound upon the coral-ledges, where they have ſcarcely ſoil ſufficient to take root. A few natives accompanied us, and ſome others met us with fruit, which they carried to our trading place. In proportion as we aſcended, we paſſed a number of their houſes, which were all built upon an elevated baſe of ſtones, and exactly upon the plan of that which I have deſcribed, page 21. Some of them ſeemed to be very lately built, and looked very clean within; but we could not diſtinguiſh the number of beds in them, of which the Spaniards make mention, and ſuſpected that they only meant different mats ſpread on the floor. The ground became

came much ſteeper and rugged as we advanced. The rivulet frequently ran in a deep glen, on the brink of which the path was rather dangerous. We were likewiſe obliged to croſs the water ſeveral times in our way; but always found the habitations more numerous towards the top. We reſted in ſeveral places, and were preſented with fruit and a little water by the natives, who reſembled the Taheitians too much in other reſpects, to be unlike them in hoſpitality. We never ſaw a ſingle deformed, nor even ill-proportioned man among them; all were ſtrong, tall, well-limbed, and active in the greateſt degree. The nature of their country contributes towards their activity; and the exerciſe which they are obliged to take, probably preſerves their elegance of form. Having advanced near three miles from the ſea ſide, we ſaw a young woman, who came out of a houſe before us, and haſtened up the hills as faſt as we advanced. She was dreſſed in a piece of cloth, made of the mulberry-tree's bark, and reaching to the knees. Her features were like thoſe of the Taheitee women, as far as we could diſcern at the diſtance of thirty yards, which ſhe took care to preſerve between herſelf and us, and her ſtature was middle ſized. The natives made many ſigns to us to return, and ſeemed to be very uneaſy and much diſpleaſed at our progreſs. Dr. Sparrman and myſelf, deſirous of preſerving the plants which we had collected, turned back, whilſt Mr. Patton and the reſt went on about two miles farther, without

1774. APRIL.

1774 APRIL. out ſeeing any thing more than ourſelves. We were the more eaſily perſuaded to deſiſt from our purpoſe, as the heat of the day, our precarious ſtate of health, and the fatigue of the aſcent, had entirely exhauſted us, and as we ſaw no proſpect of reaching the ſummit. It appeared indeed at leaſt three miles diſtant from the place where we ſtopped, the greateſt part of which ſeemed to be infinitely ſteeper than what we had hitherto left behind us. The whole ground, as far as we had gone, was covered with a rich mould, and contained excellent plantations, and groves of various fruit-trees. The rocks under this mould, which appeared chiefly near the banks of the rivulet, or on the broken ſides of the path, contained volcanic productions, or different kinds of lava, ſome of which are full of white and greeniſh ſherls. Theſe iſlands are therefore ſimilar, in regard to their origin and the nature of their minerals, to the Society Iſlands, the greater part of which ſeem to have had burning mountains. About the houſes we frequently ſaw hogs, and fowls of a large ſort, and now and then ſome rats. The trees were likewiſe inhabited by ſeveral ſmall birds, which reſembled thoſe of Taheitee and the Society Iſlands; but they were not frequent, and in no great variety. The Marqueſas, upon the whole, ſo much reſemble the Society Iſlands, that they only ſeemed to want the beautiful ambient plain, and the coral reef, which forms their excellent harbours. No people in the South Sea, whom we had hitherto met with,

with were ſo much like each other in form, cuſtoms, and language, as the inhabitants of both theſe groups of iſlands. The principal difference ſeemed to lie in the different degrees of cleanlineſs. The Taheitians, and their next neighbours of the Society Iſlands, are perhaps the cleanlieſt people under the ſun; they bathe two or three times a day, and waſh their hands and face before and after every meal. The inhabitants of the Marqueſas did not make their ablutions ſo frequently, and were beſides very ſlovenly in the manner of preparing their meals. Their principal food is bread-fruit, which they roaſt over the fire, rarely baking it under ground; when it is ſufficiently done, they put it into a very dirty wooden trough, out of which their hogs are fed at other times, and mix it up with water. This mixture they ſcoop out with their hands. They alſo prepare fermented paſte from their bread-fruit, of which they make the ſame kind of acidulous pottage, which is a great dainty with the Taheitian chiefs. Their bread-fruit is doubtleſs the largeſt and moſt delicious which we ever taſted; and as we bought many of them perfectly ripe, we found them as ſoft as a kind of cuſtard, and in that ſtate too luſcious to be eaten. Their food conſiſts of the ſame variety of fruit and roots which are common at Taheitee, except the apple *(ſpondias.)* Their diet is chiefly vegetable; though they have hogs and fowls, and catch abundance of fiſh at certain times. Their drink 1774. APRIL.

1774. APRIL. is purely water, ſince coco-nuts are ſcarce, at leaſt in the parts which we viſited. It is however to be ſuſpected, that ſince they have the pepper-root, and make uſe of it as a ſign of peace, like the other iſlanders, they may alſo prepare the ſame dainty beverage from it, with which the others intoxicate themſelves. They are peculiarly cleanly in regard to the *egeſta*. At the Society Iſlands the wanderer's eyes and noſe are offended every morning, in the midſt of a path, with the natural effects of a ſound digeſtion: but the natives of the Marqueſas are accuſtomed, after the manner of our cats, to bury the offenſive objects in the earth. At Taheitee, indeed, they depend on the friendly aſſiſtance of rats, who greedily devour theſe odoriferous dainties; nay they ſeemed to be convinced that their cuſtom is the moſt proper in the world; for their witty countryman, Tupaya (Tupia), found fault with our want of delicacy, when he ſaw a little building, appropriated to the rites of Cloacina, in every houſe at Batavia.

We haſtened down to the ſea-ſide, in order to reach it before our boats put off. When we came to the ſhip, we found it ſurrounded with canoes from different parts, who brought ſeveral hogs and plenty of bananas for ſale. The alarm which our unfortunate act of violence had ſpread among the natives on the firſt day, was now forgotten, and they came into the ſhip in great numbers, converſing familiarly with our people, and expreſſing great ſatisfaction

at

at every thing which they ſaw. They had even ſo far laid aſide all thoughts of what had happened, that many began to pilfer again, as often as an opportunity offered; however, if they were detected, they never failed to return very quietly what they had taken. They frequently danced upon the decks, for the diverſion of our ſailors; and in theſe dances we obſerved a ſtriking reſemblance with thoſe of Taheitee. It appeared likewiſe that their muſic was nearly the ſame, eſpecially as they had the ſame kind of drums, of which Mahine purchaſed one. Their canoes were likewiſe very ſimilar to thoſe of Taheitee, but of no great ſize. The heads commonly had ſome flat upright piece, on which the human face was coarſely carved; and their ſails were made of mats, triangular, and very broad at the top. The paddles which they uſed were made of a heavy hard wood, ſhort, but ſharp-pointed, and with a knob at the upper end. 1774. April.

I ſtaid on board in the afternoon, and ranged the collections which we had hitherto made. In the evening, captain Cook, with ſome officers, Mr. Hodges, Dr. Sparrman, and my father, returned on board, having been out all the afternoon to viſit two coves to the ſouth of our harbour. They found theſe places extremely open, and expoſed to the ſea, and run great riſk in landing and embarking, on account of the prodigious ſurf on the beach. They met with abundance of refreſhments for their pains, and

pur-

1774. APRIL. purchaſed ſeveral hogs. The natives were leſs reſerved in both places than in our harbour, and a conſiderable number of women appeared among them, with whom the boat's crew ſoon became acquainted, ſince ſeveral of them had as much complaiſance as certain ladies at the Society and Friendly Iſlands, New Zeeland, and Eaſter Iſland. They were inferior to the men in ſtature, but well proportioned, and ſome in feature approached the pleaſing contour of the Taheitian women of quality. Their general colour was the ſame as among the common people of the Society Iſlands, and only very few were a little fairer than the reſt. No punctures were obſerved on them, though the other ſex are ſo much accuſtomed to diſfigure themſelves with this unſightly ornament. One of the handſomeſt conſented to be drawn by Mr. Hodges, and an exact engraving, made from his drawing, is inſerted in captain Cook's account of this voyage. All the women wore pieces of cloth of the mulberry bark, of different ſorts; but the variety of theſe cloths was very trifling, compared with what it is at Taheitee; and it ſeemed the quantity was likewiſe inconſiderable, for, inſtead of being wrapped up in that number of pieces, ſo common among the luxurious chiefs of that iſland, they only wore a ſingle *ahòw* or cloak, which covered them from the ſhoulders to the knees. Round their necks they ſometimes had a few looſe ſtrings, which were not very ornamental; but our people took notice of no other

other finery among them. After a ſhort ſtay, our party prepared to return to their boat. One of the ſailors, having been inattentive to his duty, received ſeveral blows from the captain. This trifling circumſtance would not deſerve a place in this narrative, but for the obſervation, which the natives made upon it. As ſoon as they ſaw it, they ſhewed it one to another, and exclaimed *tape a-hai te tina*, " he beats his brother." We were well convinced ftom other inſtances that they knew the difference between the commander and his people; but it appeared at the ſame time, that they looked upon us all as brethren. The moſt natural inference in my mind is, that they only applied an idea to us in this caſe, which really exiſts with regard to themſelves. They probably look on themſelves as one family, of which the eldeſt-born is the chief or king. As their community is not yet arrived at that degree of civilization which the Taheitians enjoy, a difference of rank does not take place among them and their political conſtitution has not acquired a ſettled monarchical form. The nature of their country, which requires a greater labour and culture than Taheitee, is one great cauſe of this difference; for ſince the means of ſubſiſtence are not ſo eaſily attained, the population and the general luxury, cannot be ſo conſiderable, and the people remain upon a level. Agreeable to this obſervation, we have found that no particular honour or reſpect was paid to their king HONOO, who viſited us on the

1774. APRIL.

ſecond

1774. APRIL. ſecond day after our arrival. All his pre-eminence ſeemed to conſiſt in his dreſs, which was more complete than that of many of his people, who by choice, or through indolence, go naked in a happy tropical climate, where cloathing is not wanted.

Monday 11. The next morning the captain went to the ſame cove again, but was much leſs ſucceſsful than on the preceding evening. The natives, who were not yet ſufficiently acquainted with the excellence and durability of our iron ware, refuſed to take it any longer, and coveted a number of articles, which it was not in our power to part with. In the afternoon, therefore, we weighed the anchor, and ſtood out of the harbour of Madre de Dios, where we had lain ſomething leſs than four days. We had provided a conſiderable quantity of excellent water during that time, and obtained a very ſalutary ſupply of refreſhments from a friendly and well-diſpoſed people. Our acquiſitions in natural hiſtory had been but inconſiderable, from the great ſimilarity of this iſland to Taheitee and the adjacent group, and on account of our very ſhort ſtay. The ſame cauſes had likewiſe prevented our forming a more perfect acquaintance with the natives, who ſeemed to be well worth the contemplation of philoſophic travellers. We particularly regretted, that it had not been in our power to examine thoſe encloſures on the ſummits of the mountain, which, as I ſtill ſuſpect, have ſome connection with their

their religious rites. The Spaniards make mention of an oracle *, which, from their accounts, ſeems to have been a burying-place, like thoſe of the Society Iſlands; but we were likewiſe unfortunate enough not to meet with any thing of this kind. The number of theſe good people cannot be very conſiderable, on account of the ſmall ſize of the iſlands which they inhabit. *Waitahoo*, or St. Chriſtina, is about eight leagues in circuit; *O-Heeva-roa* †, or Dominica, fifteen leagues; *Onateyo*, or St. Pedro, three leagues; and Magdalena, which we only ſaw at a great diſtance, five leagues, according to the Spaniſh account. The natives of theſe different iſlands, we have great reaſon to believe, are all of one and the ſame tribe, like the people of Taheitee and the Society Iſles; we may at leaſt affirm it with certainty of thoſe of St. Chriſtina and Dominica, having converſed and traded with both. The iſland of Dominica, the largeſt of the Marqueſas, is ſo exceſſively ſteep and craggy in many parts, that its inhabitants cannot be ſo numerous as thoſe of St. Chriſtina in proportion to its ſize. Such ſpots as are fit for culture are very populous in theſe iſlands; but as they are all very mountainous, and have many inacceſſible

1774. APRIL.

* See Mr. Dalrymple's Collection of Voyages, vol. i. p. 68.

† It is remarkable, that this name occurs in the liſt of iſlands which Tupaya and other natives of the Society Iſles communicated to their Engliſh friends. The people of the Marqueſas who could not pronounce the *r*, always ſaid O-Heeva-oa.

1774. APRIL. and barren rocks, it is to be doubted whether the whole population of this group amounts to fifty thouſand perſons. The Spaniards, who diſcovered them, found their manners gentle and inoffenſive, if we except a trifling difference at Magdalena, which probably aroſe from ſome miſunderſtanding, or from the impetuous temper of thoſe navigators. When we arrived amongſt them, we were received with every mark of friendſhip. They preſented us with roots of pepper, and branches of tamannoo (*calophyllum inophyllum*, Linn.) in ſign of peace; they ſold us their proviſions; and though we killed one of their brethren, they continued the ſame kind treatment, and permitted us to roam about their country to a great diſtance without moleſtation. This behaviour, their manners, their beautiful forms, their dreſſes, proviſions, embarkations, and their language, prove that they have the ſame origin with the Taheitians, and only differ from them in a few reſpects, which the nature of their country required. The advantages which the rich encircling plains beſtow on the Taheitians and their near neighbours, muſt drop in great meaſure at the Marqueſas. When they have cultivated as much ground as will afford them the means of ſubſiſtence, there is none remaining for thoſe extenſive plantations of mulberry-trees, which every where ſtrike the eye at Taheitee: indeed if they had the ground, they cannot afford to beſtow the time which this branch

branch of culture requires. The great ſources of Taheitian affluence and luxury, their profuſion of food, and their vaſt variety and quantity of cloth, do not exiſt in the Marqueſas: but the inhabitants have a competence; they are all equal among themſelves; they are active, very healthy, and beautifully made; there is nothing which can make them unhappy, by debarring them the means of obeying nature's voice. The Taheitians have more comforts and conveniencies; they have perhaps ſuperior ſkill in the arts, and theſe things give them a greater reliſh for the enjoyment of life; but to balance theſe advantages, they are no longer upon a level; one part lives by the labours of the other, and diſeaſes already wait upon their exceſſes. 1774. APRIL.

——————Scilicet improbæ
Creſcunt divitiæ, tamen
Curtæ neſcio quid ſemper abeſt rei. HOR.

The fruits and freſh meat which we obtained at the Marqueſas, may be conſidered as the firſt reſtoratives after a cruize of four months and a half; during which we viſited the frozen zone to 71 deg. and the torrid to 9½ deg. S. latitude. The ſmall ſupply of potatoes at Eaſter Iſland was only a medicine, which providentially ſtopped the rapid progreſs of various diſeaſes on board, but could not prevent their return, when we approached the torrid zone; whoſe active heat ſet our ſtagnant and putrid blood into a

1774. APRIL. ſtate of fermentation. The wan look of all on board ſufficiently proved, that our meeting with the Marqueſas prevented a fatal and general attack of noxious diſtempers, which would have found us an eaſy prey, and might, in a ſhort ſpace of time, have made great havock in our ſhip. It muſt be allowed, at the ſame time, that, as far as human art, and a humane beneficent diſpoſition will go, our worthy ſurgeon, Mr. Patton, took the beſt precautions poſſible to preſerve the healths of all on board, by ſuggeſting the proper methods to captain Cook, and by watching over us with unremitted aſſiduity. I will venture to affirm, that it is to him alone, under Providence, that many of us are indebted for our lives; and that his country owes him the preſervation of thoſe valuable and uſeful members of the commonwealth, who were ſent out on this dangerous expedition. Great commendations are likewiſe due to captain Cook, who left no experiment untried which was propoſed to him, and which ſeemed to promiſe ſucceſs. The fate of the voyage depended upon the health of the crew, and he had the more merit in taking his meaſures agreeably to this reflection, ſince, however obvious it may ſeem, it has ſeldom guided other naval commanders.

The ſhort ſtay at the Marqueſas had not been ſufficient to reſtore our patients to perfect health, and thoſe who had the bilious cholic were rather worſe than before, having ventured to eat flatulent fruits, which were extremely dangerous

gerous in a weak ſtomach. Captain Cook himſelf was far from being recovered; for though he had experienced the bad effects of expoſing himſelf to the burning rays of the ſun at Eaſter Iſland, he had been active all the time, in purchaſing proviſions, and ſuperintending his people on ſhore. The effort which I had made in climbing the mountain, had likewiſe been too violent for my precarious ſtate of health, and threw me into a dangerous bilious diſorder, which was the more mortifying, as it happened juſt at a time, when the ſcene for my occupations was to open. 1774. April.

We ſteered S. S. W. from St. Chriſtina, and afterwards changed the courſe to S. W. and W. ¼ S. bringing to, every night, for greater ſafety, as we were now very near the archipelago of low iſlands, which had always been looked upon as a very intricate part of the Pacific Ocean. The Dutch navigators, in particular, have given an unfavourable idea of it; for Schouten calls it the Bad Sea, and Roggewein the Labyrinth. The latter loſt one of his ſhips, the African Galley, on a low iſland, which, from that unfortunate accident, he called Pernicious Iſland. This circumſtance having happened within the memory of man, is known among the Society Iſles; from whence we may conclude, that Pernicious Iſland cannot be at a great diſtance from that group.

On the 17th we diſcovered a low iſland, about ten o'clock in the morning, and coming up with it about noon, we Sunday 17.

were

1774. APRIL. were convinced, from the perſpicuity of Mr. Byron's deſcription, that it was the eaſtermoſt of King George's Iſlands. We were alſo confirmed in this belief towards night, when we perceived the other iſland, which he comprehended under that name. The iſland before us was extremely low and ſandy, and formed an elliptic rocky ledge, no leſs than ſix leagues in its longeſt diameter, from north to ſouth. Its latitude is 14° 28′ S. and its longitude 144° 56′ W. From ſpace to ſpace it was covered with coco-nut trees in great numbers, which had a pleaſing airy look. Various trees and ſhrubberies ſometimes concealed the ſtems of theſe palms to a great part of their height, but their beautiful crown always towered above the reſt. The intervals between theſe green ſpots were ſo low, that the ſea waſhed over them into the lagoon within. The ſtillneſs of the water, confined by the ledge of rocks, and its milky hue where it was ſhallow, contraſted very agreeably with the ruffled ſurface of the berylline unfathomable ocean. We ſailed cloſe along the weſtern ſide of the iſland in the afternoon, and obſerved the rocks to be tinged with a fine ſcarlet colour in many places, exactly as Mr. Byron had found them. Several canoes ſailing in the lagoon, ſmokes riſing up between the clumps of trees, and armed men of a dark hue running along ſhore, were objects which greatly encreaſed the pleaſure of the proſpect. We likewiſe perceived women retiring to a remote part of the ledge, with bundles

dles on their backs; an evident ſign that they expected no good from our appearance on their coaſt. Indeed, having had the misfortune to loſe ſome of their countrymen in oppoſing Mr. Byron's boats, and having been expelled from their habitation during a whole day by his people, who lived at diſcretion on their coco-nuts, it is not ſurpriſing that they ſecured their ſmall poſſeſſions againſt the invaſion of people who looked ſo like their enemies. Towards the S. W. end of the iſland we perceived the paſſage into the lagoon, which Mr. Byron mentions, and ſent a boat to ſound in its entrance, becauſe at that time we were not yet acquainted with his ill ſucceſs in the ſame attempt. Our people found a bottom of ſharp corals, which made it impracticable for the ſhip to anchor. The natives, who were aſſembled in arms on the north point of the paſſage, behaved very quietly, and brought ſome coco-nuts, which were exchanged for nails. Upon this information, another boat was hoiſted out, and both ſent to the ſhore again, in order to trade with the natives, and to efface the ſiniſter ideas which they ſeemed to have conceived of us at firſt. My father, Dr. Sparrman, and myſelf were of the party; though I was extremely ill of a bilious complaint. We landed without any oppoſition, and immediately mixed among the natives, of whom there ſeemed to be about fifty or ſixty. They were all a ſet of ſtout men, of a dark brown, and had ſome punctures on the breaſt, belly, and hands,

1774. APRIL.

1774. APRIL. hands, chiefly in imitation of fiſhes, which furniſh a great part of their food. Their features were not diſagreeable, but more mild than thoſe of the natives of all the high iſlands about them. They went perfectly naked, having only a very ſmall piece of cloth about their loins. Their women did not come near us; but thoſe whom we ſaw at a diſtance had the ſame colour as the men, and their piece of cloth was enlarged to the ſize of a ſhort apron. The hair and beards were generally black and curling, but ſometimes cut; however I took notice of a ſingle man, whoſe hair was quite yellowiſh at the points. As ſoon as we landed they embraced us, touching our noſes, after the cuſtom of New Zeeland, and began to bring cocoanuts and dogs for ſale to the boats. Mahine, who was with us, purchaſed ſeveral dogs for ſmall nails, and ſome for ripe bananas, which he had brought from the Marqueſas. This fruit was much valued by the people of the low iſland, who immediately knew it; it ſhould ſeem therefore that they have ſome acquaintance with the high iſlands, ſince bananas never grow upon their barren coral-ledges. The dogs were not unlike thoſe at the Society Iſlands, but had fine long hair of a white colour. Mahine therefore was eager to purchaſe them, becauſe that very ſort of hair is made uſe of in his country to adorn the breaſt-plates of the warriors. We attempted to go directly into the grove, under which the habitations were ſituated; but the natives

op-

oppoſing it, we advanced along the point, picking various plants, and particularly a ſcurvy-graſs, which was common, and ſeemed to be very wholeſome. The natives ſhewed us that they bruiſed this plant, mixed it with ſhell-fiſh, and threw it into the ſea, wherever they perceive a ſhoal of fiſhes. This food intoxicates them for ſome time, and thus they are caught on the ſurface, without any other trouble than that of taking them up. The name which they give to this uſeful plant is *e-Now*. We likewiſe met with plenty of purſlane, reſembling the common ſort, which the natives call *e-Tooree*. This plant likewiſe grows at the Society Iſlands, and is there dreſſed under-ground, and eaten by the people. There were ſeveral ſorts of trees on this iſland which grow in the Society Iſles, and likewiſe ſome plants which we had not ſeen before. The ſoil was extremely ſcanty; the foundation conſiſted of coral, very little elevated above the ſurface of the water. On this we found a coarſe white ſand, mixed with fragments of coral and ſhells, and a very thin covering of mould. We advanced inſenſibly round the point, ſo as to come behind the habitations, and diſcovered another point jutting out into the lagoon, and forming a kind of bay, of which the ſhore was perfectly covered with ſhrubberies and groves. Between the two points the water was very ſhallow; and we perceived a great body of the natives croſſing over from the fartheſt point, and dragging their ſpears after them. 1774. APRIL.

1774. APRIL. We immediately retired into the thicket, and paſſed by the huts, of which all the inhabitants were on the beach. Theſe huts were very ſmall and low, covered with a kind of matting of coco-nut branches. We only ſaw ſome dogs in them. Their boat-houſes were exactly of the ſame materials, only a little larger. The canoes in them were very ſhort, but ſtout, and pointed at both ends, and had a ſharp keel. As ſoon as we came on the beach, we mixed among the natives, who were rather ſurpriſed to ſee us come out of their village. We acquainted the lieutenant who commanded our boats with the hoſtile appearances we had ſeen, upon which our people were upon their guard, and prepared to reimbark. In the mean time Mahine aſſiſted us in converſing with the natives, who told us that they had a chief or *areekee*, and that they called their iſland TEOUKEA. Their language, upon the whole, approached very much to the Taheitian dialect, except that their pronunciation was more coarſe and guttural. The reinforcement now began to appear in the buſhes, armed with long clubs, or round ſhort ſtaves, and ſpears, ſome fourteen feet, ſome nine feet long, pointed with the jagged tail of the ſting-ray. We therefore ſtepped into our boats, but the natives crouded about them, and ſeemed in doubt whether they ſhould detain us or not; however, as our retreat had been too early for their ſcheme, they appeared contented with our departure, and aſſiſted us in puſhing

off

off the boats. Some threw ſmall ſtones into the water near us, and all ſeemed to glory in having, as it were, frightened us off. They all talked a great deal, and very loud, after we were gone, and at laſt ſeated themſelves along the beach, in the ſhade of the trees. We were no ſooner on board, and had recited our adventures, than the captain ordered four or five cannon-ſhot to be fired over their heads, and into the ſea before them, to ſhew what he could do. Theſe balls, and eſpecially the laſt, terrified them ſo much, that they all ran away from this point with the greateſt precipitation. The number of coco-nuts which we obtained among them did not amount to more than thirty, and the dogs were about five. Mr. Byron found wells on this iſland, which, though they afforded but a ſmall quantity of freſh water, may be ſufficient to ſupply the few inhabitants with this neceſſary element. That navigator likewiſe met with burying-places of ſtone, in the grove, which have a very great affinity with the Taheitian maraïs. The offerings of animal and vegetable food, hung on the branches of trees around theſe cemeteries, ſtrengthen that ſimilarity. There is reaſon to believe, from this circumſtance, as well as from the form, manners, and language of the people, that they are very nearly allied to the happier inhabitants of the mountainous iſles in the neighbourhood. The great lagoons within their circular iſlands are probably plentiful reſervoirs of

1774 APRIL.

1774. APRIL. fiſh, from whence they are ſupplied with conſtant food. The ſandy barren part of their ledges is a fit place upon which turtles may depoſit their eggs; and it appears from the fragments found by the Dolphin's people, that they know how to catch theſe large creatures, whoſe nutritive fleſh and ſhell muſt be a delicious treat to them. The few plants which thrive about them are very uſeful, and furniſh them with the means of facilitating the capture of fiſh; ſome trees are ſo large that their trunks may be uſed for canoes, and their branches for weapons and tools. The coco-palm, which is the principal ſupport of many nations on the globe, is likewiſe of infinite ſervice to them, and almoſt every part of it is uſeful. The nuts which it bears, whilſt they are green, contain from a pint to a quart of limpid liquor, which has a very pleaſant ſweetneſs, joined to a peculiar agreeable flavour; its coolneſs and integrant particles, doubtleſs, make it a moſt delicious draught, powerful beyond compariſon in quenching thirſt in a hot climate. When the nut grows older, the kernel forms, which is at firſt like a rich cream, and afterwards grows firm and very oily, like an almond, being extremely nutritious. The oil is frequently expreſſed, and employed to anoint the hair and the whole body, at certain times. The hard ſhell provides the natives with cups; and the fibrous coating round it affords all kinds of cordage, which are ſtrong, elaſtic, and not much impaired by conſtant uſe.

Several

Several articles of Indian houſhold furniture, and ſeveral ſorts of ornaments are made with it. The long feathered leaves or branches, which ſpread from the top of the ſtem, are fit coverings for their houſes; and when plaited, make good baſkets for proviſions. The inner bark yields a kind of cloth, ſufficient for covering the body in a hot climate; and the ſtem itſelf, when grown too old to bear, is at leaſt fit to be uſed in the conſtruction of a hut, or may make the maſt of a canoe. But beſides fiſh and vegetable food, they have alſo dogs, which live upon fiſh, and are reckoned excellent meat by the natives of the Society Iſlands, to whom they are known. Thus Providence, in its wiſe diſpenſations, made even theſe inſignificant narrow ledges rich enough in the productions of nature, to ſupply a whole race of men with the neceſſaries of life. And here we cannot but expreſs our admiration, that the minuteſt agents are ſubſervient to the purpoſes of the Almighty Creator. The coral is known to be the fabrick of a little worm, which enlarges its houſe, in proportion as its own bulk encreaſes. This little creature, which has ſcarce ſenſation enough to diſtinguiſh it from a plant, builds up a rocky ſtructure from the bottom of a ſea too deep to be meaſured by human art, till it reaches the ſurface, and offers a firm baſis for the reſidence of man! The number of theſe low iſlands is very great, and we are far from being acquainted with them all. In the whole extent of the Pacific Ocean, between the

1774. APRIL.

1774. APRIL. the tropics, they are to be met with; however, they are remarkably frequent for the ſpace of ten or fifteen degrees to the eaſtward of the Society Iſlands. Quiros, Schouten, Roggewein, Byron, Wallis, Carteret, Bougainville, and Cook have each met with new iſlands in their different courſes; and what is moſt remarkable, they have found them inhabited at the diſtance of two hundred and forty leagues to the eaſt of Taheitee. Nothing is more probable than that on every new track other iſlands of this kind will ſtill be met with, and particularly between the 16th and 17th degree of S. latitude, no navigator having hitherto run down on that parallel towards the Society Iſlands. It remains a ſubject worthy the inveſtigation of philoſophers, to conſider from what probable principles theſe iſlands are ſo extremely numerous, and form ſo great an archipelago to windward of the Society Iſlands, whilſt they are only ſcattered at conſiderable diſtances beyond that group of mountainous iſlands? It is true, there is another archipelago of coral ledges far to the weſtward; I mean the Friendly Iſlands; but theſe are of a different nature, and appear to be of a much older date; they occupy more ſpace, and have a greater quantity of ſoil, on which all the vegetable productions of the higher lands may be raiſed.

Monday 18. After leaving Teoukea we ſtood off and on during night, and then continued our courſe beyond the adjacent iſland, which is comprehended under Mr. Byron's appellation of King

King George's Iſlands. It reſembled Teoukea perfectly, and only ſeemed to be larger. Its length from N. to S. appeared to be near eight leagues, and the breadth of its lagoon five or ſix miles. It had numerous clumps of buſhes and trees, and was adorned with a great number of coco-nut palms.

The next morning, at eight o'clock, we deſcried another iſland of the ſame nature, but which we ſuppoſe had not been ſeen before. Towards noon another appeared to the weſtward, which we coaſted all the afternoon. It was about eight leagues long, and full of people, who ran along the ſhore with very long ſpears in their hands. The lagoon within was very ſpacious, and ſeveral canoes ſailed about upon it. It appears to me, that the moſt elevated and richeſt ſpots on the coral-ledges, are generally to leeward, ſheltered from the violence of the ſurf. In this ſea, however, there are ſeldom ſuch violent ſtorms, as might make theſe iſles uncomfortable places of abode; and when the weather is fair, it muſt be very pleaſant ſailing on the ſmooth water in the lagoon, whilſt the ocean without is diſagreeably agitated. A third new iſland was ſeen in the evening, which we left the next morning, after we had lain to all night. This group captain Cook called Palliſer's Iſlands; they are ſituated in about 15° 36′ S. latitude, and 146° 30′ W. longitude. The northernmoſt of theſe iſlands ſeem to be the Pernicious Iſlands on which Roggewein loſt the African galley. Tueſday 19.

1774. APRIL. galley. As Mr. Byron found a boat's rudder on Teoukea, which is at a ſhort diſtance from theſe iſles, that circumſtance ſerves to confirm my ſuppoſition *.

We now ſteered to the S. W. being clear of the low-iſlands, and continued ſtanding on, the following night, towards the iſland of Taheitee. The general ſatisfaction which this courſe gave to all on board can ſcarcely be deſcribed. Aſſured of the good diſpoſition of the inhabitants, we could look upon this iſland as our ſecond home. Our ſick had ſome hopes of recovery, by having an opportunity of walking or reſting in its cool ſhades, and by uſing the light ſalubrious diet of the iſlanders. The reſt expected to acquire new ſtrength and vigour, to enable them to encounter thoſe perils and hardſhips which were yet in reſerve for them. The captain was ſure of meeting with that abundance of refreſhments, which would enable him to bring the voyage to a happy concluſion; the aſtronomer longed to fix an obſervatory on ſhore, in order to determine the rate of going of the time-keeper, which had not been ſettled ſince our departure from New Zeeland; and we were not leſs deſirous of returning to this iſland, in order to complete, in ſome meaſure, a botanical collection, which our ſhort ſtay in the winter ſeaſon had left but too imperfect.

* See Hawkeſworth, vol. I. p. 102.

Our

Our friend Mahine was perhaps more anxious than us all to ſee Taheitee, which he had never viſited, though many of his relations and friends reſided there. As the natives of the Society Iſlands allow it the firſt rank in affluence and power; and as we had frequently confirmed this teſtimony to him, his curioſity was ſo much the greater. But he had other motives which prompted him to wiſh himſelf there. 1774. April.

He had collected a conſiderable number of curioſities, which he was well convinced would give him weight among his countrymen; and he had acquired ſuch a variety of new ideas, and ſeen ſo many diſtant and unknown countries, that he was perſuaded he would attract and demand their attention. The proſpect of being courted by every body, and the idea of diſtinguiſhing himſelf by his intimacy with us, by his acquaintance with our manners, and above all, by making uſe of our fire arms for his diverſion, gave him infinite pleaſure. It is not to be doubted, that it was inhanced by the hope of being ſerviceable to all his ſhipmates, whom he loved with the ſincereſt affection, and by whom he was generally eſteemed in return.

We diſcovered land about ten o'clock the next morning, which in a few hours afterwards we knew to be part of Taheitee. We ſtood towards it all the day, but could not reach it before it became dark, and were therefore obliged to ſtay out another night. Every perſon on board gazed continually at this queen of tropical iſlands; and though I Thurſday 21.

1774. APRIL. was extremely ill of my bilious diſorder, I crawled on deck, and fixed my eyes with great eagerneſs upon it, as upon a place where I hoped my pains would ceaſe. Early in the morning I awoke, and was as much ſurpriſed at the beauty of the proſpect, as if I had never beheld it before. It was indeed infinitely more beautiful at preſent, than it had been eight months ago, owing to the difference of the ſeaſon. The foreſts on the mountains were all clad in freſh foliage, and gloried in many variegated hues; and even the lower hills were not entirely deſtitute of pleaſing ſpots, and covered with herbage. But the plains, above all, ſhone forth in the greateſt luxuriance of colours, the brighteſt tints of verdure being profuſely laviſhed upon their fertile groves; in ſhort, the whole called to our mind the deſcription of Calypſo's enchanted iſland.

With ſuch a landſcape before us, it cannot be doubted, but that our eyes were continually fixed upon it. We had the farther pleaſure to diſtinguiſh every well-known ſpot as we ſailed along. At laſt the beautiful ſcenery of Mataväi opened to our view in all its grandeur; and we directed our courſe into the bay, from whence we had ſailed near eight months before.

1774. APRIL.

CHAP. VI.

An account of our ſecond viſit to the iſland of o-Taheitee.

Ille terrarum mihi præter omnes
Angulus ridet———— HOR.

WE were no ſooner diſcovered from the ſhore, than ſeveral canoes put off to welcome us with preſents of fruit. Among the firſt who came on board, were two young men of ſome note, whom we immediately invited into the cabin, where they were made acquainted with Mahine. The politeneſs of the nation required that they ſhould make him a preſent of clothing; accordingly they took off their own upper garments, which were of the beſt ſort, and put them on him. He gratified them in return with a ſight of his rarities, and made them a preſent of a few red feathers, which they valued very highly. Friday 22.

At eight o'clock in the morning we dropped an anchor in Matavaï bay, and were ſurrounded preſently after by a whole fleet of canoes, in which our old friends brought us fiſh, bread-fruit, apples, coco-nuts, and bananas, all which they ſold at low rates with the greateſt readineſs. Their fiſh were mullets and bonitos, which they brought perfectly alive in a kind of trough, fixed between the two

1774. APRIL. hulls of a double canoe, and provided with wicker-work at both ends, where the water freely entered.

Some tents were now eſtabliſhed once more on Point Venus, for the purpoſe of making aſtronomical obſervations, as well as for the convenience of trading, wooding, and watering. The captain, Dr. Sparrman, and my father went on ſhore, whilſt I remained on board ſo ill that I could ſcarcely crawl about. I amuſed myſelf, however, in trading out of the cabin windows, and by that means collected a number of curious fiſh, whilſt they brought home nothing new from their excurſion. They had found the appearance of the whole country much improved; the verdure luxuriant, many trees ſtill loaded with fruit; the brooks full of water, and a great number of new houſes built. Mahine, who went on ſhore with them, did not return at night, having found ſeveral of his relations, and particularly a ſiſter, named Teïòä, one of the prettieſt women on the whole iſland, who was married to a tall, well-made man, called Noona, of the better claſs of people, and native of Raietea. His houſe was very large, and near our tents, being only about a hundred yards beyond the river. Mahine had laid aſide his European cloaths before he went on ſhore, and put on the elegant new dreſſes his friends had brought him, with a degree of pleaſure and eagerneſs, in which a natural predilection for the manners of his country was very conſpicuous. There are many inſtances

ſtances among different nations in an imperfect ſtate of civilization, and likewiſe among ſavages, that the force of habit produces this effect. It is no wonder that a native of the Society Iſles ſhould prefer the happy life, the wholeſome diet, and the ſimple dreſs of his countrymen, to the conſtant agitation, the nauſeous food, and the coarſe awkward garments of a ſet of ſeafaring Europeans; when we have ſeen Eſkimaux return with the utmoſt ardour to their own deſolate country, to greaſy ſeal-ſkins, and rancid train-oil, after having been entertained with ſubſtantial viands, the pomp of dreſs, and the magnificence of London. Mahine had indeed found the happineſs and pleaſure which he had expected. He was courted and looked upon as a prodigy by all the Taheitians who ſaw him; he was feaſted with their choiceſt meats, he received ſeveral changes of dreſs, and revelled among the nymphs of the land. Senſible to pleaſure, like all the children of nature, but debarred the ſight of his pretty countrywomen for a long while, and perhaps tinctured with a double reliſh for ſenſuality by his acquaintance with ſailors, the facility of gratifying every wiſh had endeared the country to him, and captivated him more than any thing elſe. Beſides theſe incitements, the ſhip, in a warm climate, was but an uncomfortable abode at night. There he would have been pent up in a narrow, cloſe, ill-ſcented cabin; whereas on the ſhore he breathed a pure air, deliciouſly perfumed by

1774. APRIL.

the

1774. APRIL. the exhalations of fragrant flowers, and was continually fanned by a cooling gentle land-wind, exactly like young Zephyr, who has ſuch great obligation to the poets. Whatever the exalted degree of pleaſure might be, which fell to the ſhare of the happy Mahine, there were thoſe on board who thought their ſituation worthy of envy. Immediately on the firſt evening ſeveral women came on board, and the exceſſes of the night were incredible. I have already obſerved before, that the women who made a practice of this intercourſe were all of the common or loweſt claſs, and I ſhall only add at preſent, that they were the ſame who had been ſo liberal of their favours during our firſt ſtay at this iſland. It is therefore obvious, that the proſtitutes are only a particular ſet among the reſt, and that the cuſtom is far from being ſo general as hath been hitherto ſuppoſed, on the faith of other accounts. It would be ſingularly abſurd, if o-Maï were to report to his countrymen, that chaſtity is not known in England, becauſe he did not find the ladies cruel in the Strand.

Saturday 23. The next day we had delightful weather, and a great number of natives came on board. I ventured to go on ſhore to the tents in the forenoon, but after walking about thirty yards, I was obliged to turn back and ſit down, in order to prevent my fainting away. The fine apples, which the natives brought for ſale, looked ſo extremely tempting, that I ventured to tranſgreſs the poſitive order of the

the phyſician, and having regaled myſelf with one of them, returned on board immediately. Not leſs than fifty large bonitos had been purchaſed by our people during my ſhort ſtay on ſhore, for ſpikenails and knives; and beſides theſe we had obtained ſuch a quantity of fruit, that we were enabled to ſerve it out in plentiful portions. At my return I found a native in irons, who had already taken an opportunity to pilfer ſome nails in the ſhip. Several of the better ſort of people interceded very ſtrongly, and preſented a number of bonitos, in order to procure his releaſe. Theſe were accepted, and he was ſet at liberty, with a warning not to practiſe the ſame tricks again. 1774. APRIL.

The women who had paſſed the firſt night on board returned in the evening, and ſeveral others came with them; ſo that every ſailor had his partner. The night was very fair and moon-light, and being dedicated to St. George, the tutelar ſaint of England, the pleaſures of Venus were joined to the uſual orgies of the feſtival.

Dr. Sparrman and my father had been on ſhore the whole day, and returned after ſunſet. They had walked acroſs One-tree-hill into the province of Parre. There they met with Tootahah's mother, and Happaï, the father of the king, to whom they made ſome ſmall preſents. They were likewiſe accoſted by a native there, who did them ſeveral good offices, and particularly ſwam a conſiderable way in a pond where they had ſhot ſome wild-ducks.

They

1774. APRIL. They continued marching to the weſtward at leaſt ten miles from Point Venus to their new friend's dwelling. He prepared them a very good meal of fruit, and baked them a rich and moſt delicious kind of pudding, which is made of the kernel of coco-nuts and eddy-roots, ſcraped very ſmall, and mixed together. The trees about his hut furniſhed him with abundance of freſh coco-nuts, of which he offered a great number to his gueſts. After dinner he preſented them with a perfumed dreſs of the beſt ſort, and attended them back again with a quantity of fruit, which remained untouched. He ſlept that night on board, and went away the next morning highly delighted with ſeveral knives, nails, and beads. As they returned they came near the king's houſe, and there ſaw the two goats which captain Furneaux had preſented to him. The ſhe-goat had brought two kids ſoon after our departure, which were almoſt full-grown. The whole breed was in excellent order, extremely ſleek and well fed, and their hair as ſoft as ſilk. If the natives continue to take the ſame care of them, they will ſhortly be able to turn them wild on the mountains, where they would propagate prodigiouſly, and afford them a new and moſt valuable article of food.

Sunday 24. The next morning I found myſelf greatly relieved by the apple which I had eaten; and captain Cook, who ſtill had ſome remains of his bilious complaint, had felt the ſame effect from the uſe of this excellent fruit. We continued there-

1774. APRIL.

therefore to eat it; and recommended it to all the bilious patients. Our recovery in conſequence was much quicker than we had any reaſon to expect, and in a few days no other ſymptom than a ſlight weakneſs remained.

A number of chiefs came on board this day with large hogs, and canoes loaded with fruit, all which were purchaſed for iron ware. Towards noon, the king, O-Too, with his ſiſter Towraï, and his brother came on board, though it had rained juſt before. They brought a preſent of ſeveral hogs to captain Cook, and the king ſeemed to have entirely laid aſide that diſtruſt, which had ſo ſtrongly characteriſed him before. They received ſome hatchets; but the principal thing for which they enquired were red parrot's feathers, which they called *oora*. The accounts of Mahine, and the little preſents of this precious plumage which he had made to his friends, had given riſe to this enquiry. We immediately ſearched all our collections from the Friendly Iſlands, and found a conſiderable quantity, which we did not think proper to ſhow all at once. O-Too and his ſiſter were gratified with a ſight of a part of our riches, at which they ſeemed perfectly amazed and delighted. I have already mentioned, when I ſpoke of purchaſing theſe feathers, that ſome were glued on a piece of cloth cloſe to each other, and ſome were diſperſed on ſtars of cocoa-nut core wrought in fret-work. Our royal gueſts received a ſmall portion of the firſt ſort, about the ſize of two fingers,

1774. APRIL. ers, beſides a ſtar or two, with which, for the preſent, they went away contented, as it ſeemed, beyond their warmeſt hopes. Theſe red feathers, with which they ornament the dreſs of their warriors, and which perhaps are made uſe of on ſome other ſolemn occaſions, are valued at an incredible rate in this iſland, and clearly prove the exiſtence of a great degree of luxury among the natives.

Monday 25. On the next day we had a number of viſits from different chiefs, amongſt whom was our friend Potatow, his wife Whainee-ow, and his former wife Polatehera, whom the fame of our great riches of red feathers had reached. They brought with them numbers of hogs, many of which were exchanged with the utmoſt avidity for ſmall pieces of cloth covered with red feathers. The difference between the preſent opulence of theſe iſlanders, and their ſituation eight months before, was very aſtoniſhing to us. It was with the utmoſt difficulty that we had been able to purchaſe a few hogs during our firſt ſtay, having been obliged to look upon it as a great favour, when the king or chief parted with one of theſe animals. At preſent our decks were ſo crouded with them, that we were obliged to make a hog-ſtye on ſhore. We concluded, therefore, that they were now entirely recovered from the blow which they had received in their late unfortunate war with the leſſer peninſula, and of which they ſtill felt the bad effects at our viſit in Auguſt 1773. In the morning we had continual hard

ſhowers,

ſhowers, and ſuch violent thunder and lightning, that, for the ſake of greater ſafety, a copper chain was fixed to the maintop-gallant-maſt-head. Juſt as a ſailor was clearing it of the ſhrouds, and had thrown the end over board, a terrible flaſh of lightning appeared exactly over the ſhip, and the flame was ſeen to run down along the whole length of the chain. A tremendous thunder-clap inſtantaneouſly followed, which ſhook the whole ſhip, to the no ſmall ſurprize of both the Europeans and Taheitians on board. However we happily ſuffered not the leaſt damage from this exploſion. This circumſtance confirms the great uſe of the electrical chain, which had been ſo clearly proved at Batavia, while captain Cook lay there in the Endeavour *. 1774. April.

The rain did not abate till the evening, when the ſhowers became intermittent, and entirely ceaſed the next morning. The firſt intelligence which we received from our tents was, that ſeveral waiſtcoats and blankets belonging to the captain had been ſtolen by the natives, from the man who was waſhing them. The captain embarked therefore about ten o'clock, in order to viſit O-Too, by whoſe help he hoped to recover his bed-cloaths. I was now ſo well recovered, that I ventured to accompany him in the boat, with my father, Dr. Sparrman, and ſome others. When we approached O- Tueſday 26.

* See Hawkſworth's Compilation, vol. III. p. 712.

1774. APRIL. Parre, we beheld one of the moſt magnificent ſights which it is poſſible to be entertained with in the South Sea. This was a very numerous fleet of great war-canoes, lying arranged along the ſhore, completely fitted out, and manned with rowers and warriors, dreſſed in their robes, targets, and towering helmets. The ſhores were lined with crouds of people, and a kind of ſolemn ſilence prevailed among them. We landed, and were met by Tee, one of the king's uncles, who was going to lead captain Cook into the country, when the commander in chief of the fleet ſtepped on ſhore and met them. At ſight of him the common people exclaimed, "Towhah is coming," and made room for him with a degree of veneration which ſurpriſed us. The chief advanced to captain Cook, and taking him by the hand, called him his friend, and deſired him to ſtep into his canoe. It appeared to us at that time that Tee was uneaſy, and did not approve of captain Cook's going with Towhah; therefore, when we were juſt abreaſt of his canoe, which was one of the largeſt, the captain ſtopped ſhort, and refuſed to go on board. Towhah left him very coolly, and, to all appearance hurt at the refuſal, ſtepped into one of the canoes. We then walked down along the whole range of veſſels, whoſe prows were turned to the ſhore. All our former ideas of the power and affluence of this iſland were ſo greatly ſurpaſſed by this magnificent ſcene, that we were perfectly left in admiration. We counted no leſs than one hundred

hundred and fifty-nine great double war-canoes, from fifty to ninety feet long betwixt ſtem and ſtern. When we conſider the imperfect tools which theſe people are poſſeſſed of, we can never ſufficiently admire the patience and labour with which they have cut down huge trees, dubbed the plank, made them perfectly ſmooth, and at laſt brought theſe unweildy veſſels to the great degree of perfection in which we ſaw them. A hatchet, or, properly, an adze of ſtone, a chiſſel, and a piece of coral, are their tools, to which they only add the rough ſkin of a ray, when they ſmooth or poliſh their timber. All theſe canoes are double, that is, two joined together, ſide by ſide, by fifteen or eighteen ſtrong tranſverſe timbers, which ſometimes project a great way beyond both the hulls, being from twelve to four and twenty feet in length, and about three feet and a half aſunder. When they are ſo long, they make a platform, fifty, ſixty, or ſeventy feet in length. On the outſide of each canoe there are, in that caſe, two or three longitudinal ſpars, and between the two connected canoes one ſpar is fixed to the tranſverſe beams. The heads and ſterns were raiſed ſeveral feet out of the water, particularly the latter, which ſtood up like long beaks, ſometimes near twenty feet high, and were cut into various ſhapes. A white piece of cloth was commonly fixed between the two beaks of each double canoe, in lieu of an enſign, and the wind ſwelled it out like a ſail. Some had likewiſe a ſtriped cloth, with various red chequers, which,

1774. APRIL.

as

1774. APRIL. as we afterwards learned, were the marks of the diviſions under the different commanders. At the head there was a tall pillar of carved-work, on the top of which ſtood the figure of a man, or rather of an urchin, whoſe face was commonly ſhaded by a board like a bonnet, and ſometimes painted red with ochre. Theſe pillars were generally covered with bunches of black feathers, and long ſtreamers of feathers hung from them. The gunwale of the canoes was commonly two or three feet above the water, but not always formed in the ſame manner; for ſome had flat bottoms, and ſides nearly perpendicular upon them, whilſt others were bow-ſided, with a ſharp keel, like the ſection drawn in captain Cook's firſt voyage *. A fighting ſtage was erected towards the head of the boat, and reſted on pillars from four to ſix feet high, generally ornamented with carving. This ſtage extended beyond the whole breadth of the double canoe, and was from twenty to twenty-four feet long, and about eight or ten feet wide. The rowers ſat in the canoe, or under the fighting ſtage on the platform, which conſiſted of the tranſverſe beams and longitudinal ſpars; ſo that wherever theſe croſſed, there was room for one man in the compartment. Thoſe which had eighteen beams, and three longitudinal ſpars on each ſide, beſides one longitudinal ſpar between the two canoes,

* See Hawkeſworth, vol. II. p. 225.

had

had conſequently no leſs than a hundred and forty-four rowers, beſides eight men to ſteer them, four of whom were placed in each ſtern. This however was not the caſe with the greateſt part of the canoes here aſſembled, which had no projecting platforms, and where the rowers or paddlers ſat in the hulls of the canoe. The warriors were ſtationed on the fighting ſtage, to the number of fifteen or twenty. Their dreſs was the moſt ſingular, and at the ſame time the moſt ſhewy ſight in the whole fleet. They had three large and ample pieces of cloth, with a hole in the middle, put on one above another. The undermoſt and largeſt was white, the next red, and the uppermoſt and ſhorteſt brown. Their targets or breaſt-plates were made of wicker-work, covered with feathers and ſhark's teeth, and hardly any of the warriors were without them. On the contrary, thoſe who wore helmets were few in number. Theſe helmets were of an enormous ſize, being near five feet high. They conſiſted of a long cylindrical baſket of wicker-work, of which the foremoſt half was hid by a ſemicylinder of a cloſer texture, which became broader towards the top, and there ſeparated from the baſket, ſo as to come forwards in a curve. This frontlet, of the length of four feet, was cloſely covered with the gloſſy bluiſh green feathers of a ſort of pigeon, and with an elegant border of white plumes. A prodigious number of the long tail feathers of tropic birds diverged from its edges, in a radi-

1774. APRIL.

ant

1774. APRIL. ant line, reſembling that glory of light with which our painters commonly ornament the heads of angels and ſaints. A large turban of cloth was required for this huge unweildy machine to reſt upon; but as it is intended merely to ſtrike the beholder with admiration, and can be of no ſervice, the warriors ſoon took it off, and placed it on the platform near them. The principal commanders were moreover diſtinguiſhed by long round tails, made of green and yellow feathers, which hung down on the back, and put us in mind of the Turkiſh baſhas. Towhah, their admiral, wore five of them, to the ends of which ſeveral ſtrings of coco-nut core were added, with a few red feathers affixed to them. He had no helmet on, but wore a fine turban, which ſat very gracefully upon his head. He was a man ſeemingly near ſixty years of age, but extremely vigorous, tall, and of a very engaging noble countenance.

Having reached our boat again, we rowed along under the ſterns of the canoes to the end of the file. In each canoe we took notice of vaſt bundles of ſpears, and long clubs or battle-axes, placed upright againſt the platform; and every warrior had either a club or ſpear in his hand. Vaſt heaps of large ſtones were likewiſe piled up in every canoe, being their only miſſile weapons. Beſides the veſſels of war, which we found to conſiſt of one hundred and fifty-nine double canoes, we counted ſeventy ſmaller canoes without

out the ranks, moſt of which were double likewiſe, with a roof on the ſtern, intended for the reception of the chiefs at night, and as victuallers to the fleet. A few of them were ſeen, on which banana-leaves were very conſpicuous; and theſe the natives told us were to receive the killed, and they called them *e-vaa no t'Eatua*, "the canoes of the Divinity." The immenſe number of people thus aſſembled together was, in fact, more ſurpriſing than the ſplendor of the whole ſhew. Upon a very moderate calculation, there could not be leſs than fifteen hundred warriors, and four thouſand paddlers, beſides thoſe who were in the proviſion-boats, and the prodigious crouds on the ſhore. 1774. APRIL.

We were at a loſs to know the meaning of this armament, nor could we obtain any information till we came back to our ſhip. The king having left O-Parre, and gone into the diſtrict of Matavaï, we returned on board about noon. There we found many chiefs, and among the reſt Potatow, who dined with us, and informed us, that the whole armament was intended againſt the iſland of Eimeo, of which the chief, a vaſſal of O-Too, had revolted. We learnt at the ſame time, to our greater ſurprize, that the fleet which we had ſeen was only the naval force of the ſingle diſtrict of Atahooroo, and that all the other diſtricts could furniſh their quota of veſſels in proportion to their ſize. This account opened our eyes, in regard to the population of the iſland, and convinced us in a few moments, that it was

1774. APRIL. much more conſiderable than we had hitherto ſuppoſed. The reſult of a moſt moderate computation gave us one hundred and twenty thouſand perſons in the two peninſulas of Taheitee *.

The number of diſtricts in both peninſulas amounts to forty-three; we aſſumed at a medium, that each could equip only twenty war-canoes, and we ſuppoſed each of theſe to be manned only with thirty-five men. The ſum of men employed in the fleet, excluſive of the attending boats, would then be no leſs than thirty thouſand; and theſe we aſſume as the fourth part of the whole nation. What makes this computation ſtill more moderate is, that we ſuppoſe theſe thirty thouſand to be the whole number of perſons capable of bearing arms, or fit for ſervice; and that the common proportion of theſe men, to the reſt of the people, is much ſmaller than one fourth, in all the countries of Europe.

Captain Cook returned to O-Parre with us in the afternoon. The whole fleet had already left that diſtrict, and the canoes were diſperſed; but we found O-Too, and were extremely well received. He conducted us to ſeveral of his houſes, through a country which perfectly reſembled a garden; ſhady fruit-trees, ſhrubberies with odoriferous flow-

* This calculation was afterwards confirmed to be very low, when we ſaw the fleet of the ſmalleſt diſtrict, which amounted to forty-four war-canoes, beſides twenty or five and twenty of a ſmaller ſize.

ers,

ers, and rivulets enlarged into limpid ſheets of water, continually varied before the eye. The houſes were all kept in the beſt order; ſome were ſurrounded with walls of reeds, but others were open like the uſual dwellings of the people. We paſſed ſeveral hours in his company, with ſome of his relations, and principal attendants, who took every method to expreſs their friendſhip towards us. The converſation, though not yet very coherent, was however extremely lively; and the women in particular laughed and chatted with the greateſt good humour. We often found them diverting each other by playing upon words; and ſometimes we were highly entertained with a real witty ſtroke, or a humorous ſally. It was near ſunſet when we departed, after ſharing ſome part of the happineſs which ſeems to be ſo natural to this favoured iſland. The calm contented ſtate of the natives; their ſimple way of life; the beauty of the landſcape; the excellence of the climate; the abundance, ſalubrity, and delicious taſte of its fruits, were altogether enchanting, and filled the heart with rapture. Surely the ſatisfaction which we naturally feel in the happineſs of others, is one of the moſt delightful ſenſations with which the human ſoul is bleſſed. 1774. APRIL.

The next morning the captain and my father paid another viſit to O-Too at Parre, and found there the admiral of the fleet, Towhah, to whom they were introduced by O-Too himſelf. They all came on board before noon, and Wedneſd. 26.

1774. APRIL. viſited every part of the ſhip above and below decks, particularly to gratify the curioſity of Towhah, who had never ſeen a ſhip before in his life. He paid more attention to the multitude of new objects on board, to the ſtrength and ſize of the timbers, maſts, and ropes, than any Taheitian we had ever ſeen, and found our tackle ſo exceedingly ſuperior to that which is uſual in his country, that he expreſſed a wiſh to poſſeſs ſeveral articles, eſpecially cables and anchors. He was now dreſſed like the reſt of the people in this happy iſland, and naked to the waiſt, being in the king's preſence. His appearance was ſo much altered from what it had been the day before, that I had ſome difficulty to recollect him. He appeared now very luſty, and had a moſt portly paunch, which it was impoſſible to diſcern under the long ſpacious robes of war. His hair was of a fine ſilvery grey, and his countenance was the moſt engaging and truly good-natured which I ever beheld in theſe iſlands. The king and he ſtaid and dined with us this day, eating with a very hearty appetite of all that was ſet before them. O-Too had entirely loſt his uneaſy, diſtruſtful air; he ſeemed to be at home, and took a great pleaſure in inſtructing Towhah in our manners. He taught him to make uſe of the knife and fork, to eat ſalt to his meat, and to drink wine. He himſelf did not refuſe to drink a glaſs of this generous liquor, and joked with Towhah upon its red colour, telling him

him it was blood. The honeſt admiral having taſted our grog, which is a mixture of brandy and water, deſired to taſte of the brandy by itſelf, which he called *e vaï no Bretannee*, Britiſh water, and drank off a ſmall glaſs full, without making a wry face. Both he and his Taheitian majeſty were extremely chearful and happy, and appeared to like our way of living, and our cookery of their own excellent proviſions. They told us that their fleet was intended to reduce the rebellious people of Eimeo (or York Iſland) and their chief, Te-aree-Tabonooee, to obedience, adding, that they would make the attack in a diſtrict of that iſland, called Morea. Captain Cook propoſed, in jeſt, to accompany them with his ſhip, and to fire upon the enemies of O-Too, which at firſt they ſmiled at, and approved of; but preſently after they talked among themſelves, and then changing their tone, ſaid they could not make uſe of his aſſiſtance, being reſolved to go out againſt Eimeo the fifth day after our departure. Whatever might be the real motive of this reſolution, it certainly was the moſt politic in their ſituation. We were too powerful an ally, not to be formidable even to thoſe for whom we ſhould fight; and waving that conſideration, it was making the people of Eimeo too important, to bring our invincible four-pounders againſt them; for to theſe only would the victory be aſcribed, even by the vanquiſhed; and as ſoon as we ſhould have left the iſland, the conquerors would loſe much of that im- 1774. APRIL.

portance

1774. April. portance which they had in the eyes of their enemies before the battle. Such a degree of contempt might prove fatal to them in the end.

Thurſday 28. My father, with Dr. Sparrman, a ſailor and a marine, went on ſhore the next day in the afternoon, with an intent to go up to the ſummit of the mountains. We had a great number of canoes about us all this time, and in them there were always ſome chiefs of different diſtricts, who brought on board their hogs, and their moſt valuable poſſeſſions, in order to exchange them for red feathers, on which they placed an extravagant value. Theſe feathers produced a great revolution in the connections which the women had formed with our ſailors; and happy was he who had laid in a ſufficient ſtock of this uſeful and precious merchandize at the Friendly Iſlands; the women crouded about him, and he had the choice of the faireſt. That our red feathers had infuſed a general and irreſiſtible longing into the minds of all the people, will appear from the following circumſtance. I have obſerved, in the former part of this narrative, that the women of the families of chiefs never admitted the viſits of Europeans; and alſo that whatever liberties ſome unmarried girls might with impunity allow themſelves, the married ſtate had always been held ſacred and unſpotted at Taheitee. But ſuch was the force of the temptation, that a chief actually offered his wife to captain Cook, and the lady, by her huſband's order,

order, attempted to captivate him, by an artful diſplay of all her charms, ſeemingly in ſuch a careleſs manner, as many a woman would be at a loſs to imitate. I was ſorry, for the ſake of human nature, that this propoſal came from a man, whoſe general character was in other reſpects very fair. It was Potatow who could deſcend to this meanneſs, from the high ſpirit of grandeur which he had formerly ſhewn. We expreſſed great indignation at his conduct, and rebuked him for his frailty. It was very fortunate for us, that a conſiderable quantity of this red plumage had been diſpoſed of by our ſailors at the Marqueſas, in exchange for artificial curioſities, before they knew the high value which it bore at Taheitee. Had all theſe riches been brought to this iſland, the price of proviſions would in all likelihood have been raiſed to ſuch an unreaſonable height, that we might have fared even worſe than during our firſt viſit. A ſingle little feather was a valuable preſent, much ſuperior to a bead or a nail, and a very ſmall bit of cloth, cloſely covered with them, produced ſuch extatic joy in him who received it, as we might ſuppoſe in an European, who ſhould unexpectedly find the diamond of the Great Mogol. Potatow brought on board his monſtrous helmet of war of five feet high, and ſold it for red feathers; ſome others followed his example, and targets without number were bought by almoſt every ſailor. But much more ſurpriſing than this, was their offering for ſale 1774. APRIL.

thoſe

1774. APRIL. thoſe curious and ſingular mourning dreſſes, which are mentioned in captain Cook's firſt voyage *, and which they would not part with on any account at that time. Theſe dreſſes being made of the rareſt productions of their iſland, and of the ſurrounding ſea, and being wrought with the greateſt care and ingenuity, muſt of courſe bear a very conſiderable value among them. A number of complete mourning dreſſes, not leſs than ten, were purchaſed by different perſons on board, and brought to England. Captain Cook has given one to the Britiſh Muſeum, and my father has had the honour of preſenting another to the Univerſity of Oxford, now depoſited in the Aſhmolean Muſeum. This remarkable dreſs conſiſts of a thin flat board, of a ſemicircular form, about two feet long, and four or five inches broad. Upon theſe are fixed four or five choſen mother of pearl ſhells, by means of ſtrings of coco-nut core paſſed through ſeveral holes which are pierced in the wood, and in the edges of the ſhells. A larger ſhell of the ſame kind, fringed with bluiſh-green pigeon's feathers, is fixed to each end of this board, of which the concave margin is placed upwards. Upon the middle of the concave margin there are two ſhells, which together form nearly a circle about ſix inches in diameter; and on the top of theſe a very large piece of mother of pearl, com-

* See Hawkſworth's Compilation, vol. II. p. 143. 146. 236. alſo the plate, No. 5.

monly

monly with its purple coating on, is placed upright. It is of an oblong ſhape, enlarging rather towards the upper end, and its height is nine or ten inches. A great number of long white feathers, from the tropic bird's tail, form a radiant circle round it. From the convex margin of the board hangs down a tiſſue of ſmall pieces of mother of pearl, in ſize and ſhape ſomething like an apron. This conſiſts of ten or fifteen rows of pieces about an inch and a half long, and one-tenth of an inch in breadth, each piece being perforated at both ends, in order to be fixed to the other rows. Theſe rows are made perfectly ſtreight and parallel to each other; therefore the uppermoſt are divided, and extremely ſhort, on account of the ſemicircular ſhape of the board. The lower rows are likewiſe commonly narrower, and from the ends of each row a ſtring hangs down, ornamented with *opercula* of ſhells, and ſometimes with European beads. A taſſel or round tail of green and yellow feathers hangs down from the upper ends of the board on the ſide of the apron, which is the moſt ſhewy part of the whole dreſs. A ſtrong rope is fixed on each ſide of that pair of ſhells, which reſts immediately upon the concave margin of the board, and this ſtring is tied about the head of the perſon who wears the dreſs. The whole piece hangs down perpendicularly before him, the apron hides his breaſt and ſtomach, the board covers his neck and ſhoulders, and the firſt pair of ſhells comes before his face. In

1774. APRIL.

1774. APRIL. one of theſe ſhells there is a ſmall hole cut out, through which the wearer muſt look in order to find his way. The uppermoſt ſhell, and the long feathers round it, extend at leaſt two feet beyond the natural height of the man. The other parts of his dreſs are not leſs remarkable. He puts on a mat or a piece of cloth with a hole in the middle, like the uſual dreſs of the country. Over this he places another of the ſame ſort, but of which the fore part hangs down almoſt to the feet, and is beſet with many rows of buttons made of pieces of coco-nut ſhell. A belt, conſiſting of a twiſted rope of brown and white cloth, is tied over this dreſs round the waiſt; a large cloak of net-work, cloſely beſet with great bluiſh feathers, covers the whole back; and a turban of brown and yellow cloth, bound with a great quantity of ſmall twiſted ropes of brown and white cloth, is placed on the head. An ample hood of alternate parallel ſtripes of brown, yellow, and white cloth deſcends from the turban to cover the neck and ſhoulders, in order that as little as poſſible of the human figure may appear. Commonly the neareſt relation of the deceaſed wears this whimſical dreſs, and carries in one hand a pair of large pearl-ſhells, which are clapped or beaten together continually, and in the other a ſtick, armed with ſhark's teeth, with which he wounds any of the natives who chance to come near him *. What may have been the origin of this ſingu-

* See Hawkeſworth, vol. II. p. 236.

lar

lar cuſtom we cannot determine; but to me it ſeems to be calculated to inſpire horror; and the fantaſtical dreſs in which it is performed, has ſo much of that ſtrange and terrifying ſhape which our nurſes attribute to ghoſts and goblins, that I am almoſt tempted to believe ſome ridiculous ſuperſtition lurks under this funeral rite. The ſpirit of the deceaſed, exacting a tribute of grief and tears from its ſurvivors, and therefore wounding them with the ſhark's teeth, would not be an idea too extravagant for men to have adopted. Whatever it might be, we never could obtain any intelligence from the natives on the ſubject; they gave us an account of the ceremony, and of the dreſs, telling us the names of every part; but it was impoſſible to make ourſelves underſtood, as ſoon as we wanted to know why it was ſo? The moſt ſingular fact with which Mahine acquaint-us, relative to the mourning rite, was, that at the death of a man, a woman performs the ceremony; but when a woman dies, a man muſt go the rounds with the ſcare-crow dreſs. In England the curioſity has been ſo great, that a Taheitian mourning-dreſs, which a ſailor brought over, has been ſold for five and twenty guineas. But in this reſpect the Taheitians are no way inferior to civilized nations. In conſequence of Mahine's relation of his adventures, the chiefs continually importuned us to give them curioſities from Tonga-Tabboo, Waïhoo, and Waitahoo*, inſtead of 1774. APRIL.

* Amſterdam Iſland, Eaſter Iſland, and St. Chriſtina.

1774. APRIL. Engliſh goods, in exchange for their proviſions and curioſities. The feathered head-dreſſes of the two laſt iſlands, and the baſkets, clubs, and painted cloth of the former, pleaſed them exceſſively; nay, they were eager to poſſeſs the mats of Tonga-Tabboo, though in general they perfectly reſembled their own manufacture. Our ſailors therefore frequently took advantage of their diſpoſition, and gave them the ſame mats under another name, which they had formerly purchaſed in their own iſland, or in the Society Iſlands. Thus there is a ſimilarity in the general inclinations of human nature, and particularly in the deſires of all nations who are not in a ſtate of ſavage barbariſm, but have the advantage of civilization. The reſemblance will appear ſtill more perfect, if we relate with what eagerneſs the Taheitians liſtened to the accounts of their youthful traveller. They always attended him in crouds, their oldeſt men eſteemed him highly, and the principal people of the iſland, not excepting the royal family, courted his company. Beſides the pleaſure of hearing him, they had likewiſe that of obtaining a number of valuable preſents from him, which coſt them only a few kind expreſſions. His time was ſo agreeably taken up on ſhore, as he found new friends in every hut, that he ſeldom came on board, unleſs to fetch a new ſet of preſents, or to ſhew the ſhip to his acquaintance, and to introduce them to captain Cook and his ſhipmates. His ſtories, however, were too wonderful ſometimes to find

ready

ready belief among his audience, who now and then applied to us for a confirmation of his account. The rain converted into ſtone, the ſolid white rocks and mountains which we melted into freſh water, and the perpetual day of the antarctic circle, were articles which even ourſelves could not perſuade them to credit. The account of canibals in New Zeeland was more eaſily believed, though it filled them with horror. He brought on board a company of the natives during my father's abſence on the hills, who were come on purpoſe to ſee the head of the New Zeeland boy, which Mr. Pickerſgill had preſerved in ſpirits. He readily gratified them with the ſight, and their report brought great numbers to ſee it. I was preſent when it was ſhewn, and it ſtruck me to hear them give it a peculiar name in their language. They unanimouſly called it *te Tae-aï*, which appears to be equivalent to "man eater." The reſult of my enquiries among many of the chiefs and moſt intelligent people, on this extraordinary circumſtance, was the following. They ſaid they had a traditional report among them, that in an indefinite but very remote period of time, there were man-eaters upon their iſland, who made great havock among the inhabitants, and were a very ſtrong robuſt people; but that this race had long ſince been entirely extinct. The ſame account was confirmed to me in the ſtrongeſt terms, on my return to England, by o-Maï, with whom I happened to converſe upon the ſubject. The influence of this fact upon

1774. APRIL.

1774. APRIL. upon the ancient hiſtory of Taheitee is very ſtriking; but ſhall we conclude, that a ſet of canibals have by ſome accident made a deſcent upon the iſland, and committed depredations upon the indigenous people? or is it not rather evident, that the original ſtate of the whole nation is concealed in this tradition, and that all the Taheitians were anthropophagi, before they arrived at that ſtate of civilization, which the excellence of the country and climate, and the profuſion of vegetables and animal food, has introduced? It is a fact no leſs ſurpriſing than certain, that the more we examine the hiſtory of almoſt every nation, the more we find this cuſtom prevalent in the firſt periods of their exiſtence. Traces of anthropophagy are ſtill extant at Taheitee. Captain Cook ſaw fifteen recent jaw-bones hanging in one houſe *. Might they not be preſerved as trophies taken from their enemies?

Friday 29. The next morning one of the natives, who had attempted to ſteal a water-caſk from our tents, was apprehended and confined. O-Too and Towhah coming on board ſomewhat early, being made acquainted with his offence, accompanied captain Cook on ſhore to ſee him puniſhed. He was tied to a pole, and, with their conſent, received two dozen of very ſevere laſhes. A great croud of natives, who were ſpectators of this act, were ſo much terrified, that they began to

* See Hawkeſworth, vol. II. p. 161.

run

run off; but Towhah called them back, and, in a ſpeech which laſted about four or five minutes, pointed out the equity of our conduct, and the neceſſity of puniſhing thefts. He repreſented, that though our power was infinitely ſuperior to theirs, yet we neither ſtole any thing, nor uſed any violence, but honeſtly paid a proper price for every thing we received, and frequently gave preſents where we expected no return. That we had ſhewn ourſelves their beſt friends, and that to ſteal from friends was a ſhameful action, which highly deſerved to be puniſhed. The good ſenſe and ſingleneſs of heart of this excellent old man, endeared him to us, and his harangue carried perſuaſion among his audience. In the afternoon Towhah came along ſide with his wife, an elderly woman, who ſeemed to have the ſame excellent character as her huſband. They were in a large double canoe, with a roof built over the ſtern, and had eight rowers. The old couple invited Mr. Hodges and myſelf to come into the canoe, and we accompanied them to Parre. Towhah aſked us a variety of queſtions during the time we were on the water, chiefly relating to the nature and conſtitution of the country from whence we came. As he had never ſeen any of our perſons of high rank, he concluded that Mr. Banks could be no leſs than the king's brother, and that captain Cook was high admiral. The information which we gave him was received with the greateſt marks of ſurprize and attention; but when we told him we had neither

1774. APRIL. ther coco-nut nor bread-fruit trees, he ſeemed to think but meanly of our country, though we enumerated all its other advantages. We were no ſooner landed, than he ordered a repaſt of fiſh and fruit to be ſerved up, and inſiſted on our partaking of it. We had juſt dined before we left the ſhip, but unwilling to give offence, we ſat down and ate of the proviſions, which were excellent. Indeed we could not but compare this happy country to Mahomed's Paradiſe, where the appetite is never cloyed by being gratified. The meal was already ſerved, and we were going to help ourſelves, when Towhah deſired us to ſtop. In a few moments one of his attendants brought a large cook-knife, and ſome bamboo-ſticks, inſtead of forks. Towhah carved the victuals, and gave each of us a bamboo, ſaying he would eat in the Engliſh manner. Inſtead of eating his bread-fruit by handfuls, he now cut it ſmall, and took a bit of it after every morſel of fiſh, to ſhew how exactly he remembered our cuſtom ſince the time of his dining with us. The good lady feaſted apart ſome time afterwards, according to the invariable cuſtom of the country. We walked about and chatted with them both till near ſunſet, when they embarked in their canoe, and returned to the diſtrict called Atahooroo, part of which belonged to Towhah. They took leave of us very cordially, and promiſed to return to the ſhip again in a few days. We hired a double canoe for a nail, and returned on board before it was dark. I found Dr. Sparrman and

my

my father juſt returned from the mountains. Noona, the ſame lively and intelligent boy whom I have already mentioned in the former part of this narrative *, had been their conductor. As they ſet out in the afternoon (on the 28th) they only reached a ſmall hut on the ſecond ridge, having croſſed two deep vallies, and climbed two ſteep hills, rendered very ſlippery from a ſmart ſhower which had fallen. Here they found a man with his wife and three children. The man enlarged his cottage by means of branches of trees, and prepared them a ſupper; after which, having previouſly made a fire, they watched and ſlept by turns. The fire was ſeen on board our ſhip; and in return they heard the ringing of the ſhip's bell at midnight, though they were upwards of a league diſtant from it. The whole night was fair and cool; but their friendly hoſt, whoſe name was Tahéa, had a violent cough. At day break they reſumed their march towards the ſummits, and Tahea led the way, with a load of coco-nuts. The difficulties increaſed as they aſcended; the paths running along the narrow ridge of ſteep hills, whoſe ſides were almoſt perpendicular. The greateſt danger aroſe from the ſlipperineſs, occaſioned by the rains of the preceding day. When they had aſcended to a conſiderable height, they found thick ſhrubberies and woods on theſe ſteep ſides; and attempting to col-

1774. APRIL.

* See vol. I. p. 339.

1774. APRIL. lect plants there, they frequently met with precipices which are really tremendous. Still higher up the whole ridge was covered with a foreſt, where they gathered a number of plants, which they had never ſeen in the vallies below. After they had croſſed the ridge, there fell a heavy ſhower of rain; and they coming to a very dangerous part, Tahea ſaid they could go no farther. They reſolved however to leave their heavy plant and proviſion bags behind, and went up with a ſingle muſket to the ſummit of the mountain, which they reached in about half an hour. Juſt about that time the clouds broke, and they had a proſpect of Huahine, Tethuroa, and Tabbuamanoo. The view of the fertile plain under their feet, and of the valley of Matavaï, where the river makes innumerable meanders, was delightful in the higheſt degree. Thick clouds however prevented their diſcerning any thing on the ſouth ſide of the iſland. In a few moments even the other part was covered again, and they were involved in a miſt which wetted them to the ſkin. In their deſcent my father had the misfortune to fall in a very rocky place, and bruiſed his leg in ſuch a manner, that he nearly fainted away. When he recovered, and attempted to proceed, he found that he had alſo received a dangerous rupture, for which he now continues to wear a bandage. Tahea aſſiſted him in going down; and they all arrived on board about four o'clock in the afternoon. The upper hills they found to conſiſt of a kind of clay extremely compact

and

and ſtiff. The vegetation on the upper part of the mountains was luxuriant, and the woods conſiſted of many unknown ſorts of plants. They enquired particularly for the perfume-wood, with which the natives perfume their oil. Tahea ſhewed them ſeveral plants which are ſometimes uſed as ſubſtitutes; but the moſt precious ſort itſelf he either could not, or would not, point out to them. O-Maï has told me that there are at Taheitee no leſs than fourteen different ſorts of plants employed for perfuming; which ſhews how remarkably fond theſe people are of fine ſmells. 1774. April.

The number of common women on board our ſhip was conſiderably encreaſed ſince we had begun to deal in red feathers; and this night in particular many ſtrolled about the decks who could not meet with partners. The abundance of pork likewiſe attracted them; for being almoſt entirely deprived of that rich food in their own houſhold, they were eager to obtain it among our ſailors, and ſometimes conſumed incredible quantities. The goodneſs of their appetite and digeſtion expoſed them however to the inconvenience of reſtleſſneſs, and often diſturbed thoſe who wiſhed to ſleep after the fatigues of the day. On certain urgent occaſions they always required the attendance of their lovers; but as they were frequently refuſed, the decks were made to reſemble the paths in the iſlands. Every evening theſe women divided into different troops, which danced on the quarter-deck, the forecaſtle, and the main-deck. Their mirth was

1774. APRIL. often extravagant and noiſy; and ſometimes their ideas were ſo original as to give great amuſement. We had a very weak ſcorbutic patient when we arrived at Taheitee: this man being ſomewhat recovered by means of freſh vegetable food, and animated by the example of the crew, wooed a Taheitian girl; about duſk led her to his birth, and lighted a candle. She looked her lover in the face, and finding he had loſt one eye, ſhe took him by the hand, and conducted him upon deck again to a girl that was one-eyed likewiſe, giving him to underſtand, that that perſon was a fit partner for him, but that for her part ſhe did not chooſe to put up with a blind lover.

MAY. Sunday 1. Two days after, my father, being in ſome meaſure recovered from the fatigue of his late excurſion, and from the bruiſe which he had received, went on ſhore, and found there o-Rettee, the chief of o-Hiddea, a diſtrict and harbour where M. de Bougainville lay at anchor. This chief aſked captain Cook, whether, on his return to England, he ſhould ſee M. de Bougainville, whom he called Potavirree; and being anſwered in the negative, he put the ſame queſtion to my father. He replied, it was not impoſſible, though he lived in a different kingdom. "Then," ſaid o-Rettee, "tell him I am his friend, and long to ſee him again at o-Taheitee; and in order that you may remember it, I will give you a hog as ſoon as I return from my diſtrict, to which I am now going." With that he began to relate, that his friend

friend M. de Bougainville had had two ſhips, and that on board of one there was a woman, but that ſhe was ugly. He reſted a long while on this circumſtance, and ſeemed to think it extraordinary that a ſingle woman ſhould go on ſuch an expedition. He likewiſe confirmed the account of a viſit from a Spaniſh ſhip, which we had learned during our firſt ſtay at Taheitee; but he aſſured us that he and his countrymen had no great affection for them. O-Rettee was a fine grey-headed man, but very healthy and vigorous, as the old people of Taheitee in general ſeem to be; his countenance was the picture of a lively, chearful, and generous man. He told us he had been in many battles, and ſhewed us ſeveral wounds he had received, particularly a blow with a ſtone on his temple, which had left a deep ſcar. He had fought by Tootahah's ſide, on the day when that chief was killed. 1774. MAY.

The next morning Dr. Sparrman went with me up the valley of Matavaï, which the natives call TOOA-OOROO. This was the firſt excurſion of any length which I undertook after my illneſs: I was therefore highly delighted with the beautiful appearance of the vegetable creation, which had been revived by the late rainy ſeaſon; and ſurpriſed at the vaſt improvements which I ſaw throughout the whole diſtrict. Wherever I went, I ſaw new and extenſive plantations, in excellent order; I found numbers of new houſes built, and the natives at work upon new canoes in many Monday 2.

places.

1774. MAY. places. It was plain, during our former ſtay, that the war between the two peninſulas had been diſtreſsful to this part of the larger one; but at preſent there was not the leaſt trace of it remaining; the whole country was a ſcene of plenty, where numbers of hogs grazed around every houſe, which none of the natives attempted to conceal from us, as they had formerly done. I was much pleaſed to obſerve an alteration in the behaviour of the natives, who never once importuned us with begging for beads or nails, and who, inſtead of being backward to part with their ſtore, appeared eager to out-do each other in acts of benevolence and hoſpitality. We did not paſs a ſingle hut, where we were not invited to come in, and partake of ſome refreſhment; and we never accepted their invitation, without being made extremely happy by their unaffected kindneſs. About ten o'clock we reached the manſion of that hoſpitable man, who had entertained us ſo well during our former ſtay on the iſland, when we came from the hills exceſſively fatigued *. He treated us with a few coco-nuts, and we promiſed to come and dine with him on our return down the valley. He gave his directions accordingly, and accompanied us all the way. We found no habitations beyond his houſe, as the mountains on both ſides approached very cloſe together, and were exceſſively ſteep. Having ad-

* See vol. I. p. 351.

vanced

vanced about a mile, we came to a place where the hill on the eaſt ſide formed a perpendicular wall, not leſs than forty yards high, beyond which it had ſome inclination, and was crowned with ſhrubberies to a great height. A fine caſcade fell from this fringed part along the wall into the river, and made the ſcene more lively, which in itſelf was dark, wild, and romantic. When we came nearer, we obſerved that the perpendicular rock had many projecting longitudinal angles, and on wading through the water to it, we found it to conſiſt of real columns of black compact baſaltes, ſuch as the natives manufacture into tools. They ſtood upright, parallel, and joined to each other. Their diameter ſeemed not to exceed fifteen or eighteen inches, and only one or two angles of the ſame pillar projected or were viſible. As it is now generally ſuppoſed that baſaltes is a production of volcanoes, we have here another ſtrong proof that Taheitee has undergone great changes by ſuch ſubterraneous fires, where nature produces the moſt wonderful chymical operations, upon a very extenſive plan. Beyond theſe columns the vale, for the ſpace of two or three miles, is more and more confined by mountains, ſo that we found it difficult to proceed, having been obliged to croſs the river near fifty times. At laſt we came to the ſame place where Mr. Banks was obliged to ſtop in his excurſion *. 1774. MAY.

* See Hawkeſworth, vol. II. p. 173.

We

1774. MAY. We found it equally impoſſible to proceed; and being much fatigued by continually clambering over rocks and rugged ground, ſet out on our return. By the way we collected ſome plants which we had not yet ſeen; and after a walk of two hours, reached the dwelling of our hoſpitable friend. We dined heartily on vegetables, and rewarded our hoſt with red feathers to his heart's content; not forgetting to give him ſome iron-ware, which would prove uſeful to him when the feathers were loſt or deſtroyed. His daughter, whom we had ſeen on our former viſit, was now married to a man in a remote diſtrict, our preſents having made her a rich heireſs in this country. We came on board near ſunſet, having rambled very leiſurely through the plain of Matavaï, captivated by the beauty and fertility of the proſpect, and the additional luſtre which a fine evening ſpread over it.

Captain Cook, with my father and ſeveral officers, had been at Parre to viſit O-Too. They had been conducted to a place where a new war-canoe was building, which the king intended to call O-Taheitee. But captain Cook made him a preſent of an Engliſh jack *, a grapnel, and a grapnel-rope, and deſired that it might be called the Britannia. The king immediately conſented, the jack was hoiſted, and the people gave three cheers.

* An enſign or flag, commonly hoiſted on the bowſprit.

I re-

I recommended it to Mr. Hodges to viſit the caſcade which I had found in the valley; and accordingly the next day he went up with ſeveral gentlemen, and took a view of it, and of the baſalt-pillars under it. We ate of a large albecore (*ſcomber thynnus*, Linn.) that day, which gave us all a ſudden heat in the face, and a violent head-ache. Some had likewiſe a purging; and a ſervant who had entirely dined upon it, was violently affected with vomiting and purging. It is probable that the fiſh was caught by means of ſome intoxicating plant, which had perhaps communicated a noxious quality to the meat. 1774. MAY.

We learnt about this time that Mahine had married the daughter of Toperree, a chief of Matavaï. A midſhipman acquainted us that he had been preſent on the occaſion, and that he had ſeen a number of ceremonies performed: but being intreated to give the particulars, he ſaid, that though they were extremely curious, he could not remember one of them, and did not know how to relate them. By this means we loſt the opportunity of making a conſiderable diſcovery, in regard to the cuſtoms of theſe iſlanders. It is pity that no intelligent obſerver was preſent, who might at leaſt have related what he had ſeen. Mahine came on board with his bride, who was a very young girl, of a low ſtature, but not remarkable for beauty. She was very well ſkilled in the art of begging for preſents, and went through the whole ſhip collecting a vaſt number of beads,

1774. MAY. nails, ſhirts, and red feathers, for which ſhe was indebted to the friendſhip which every body felt for Mahine. This youth told us he had a great mind to ſettle at Taheitee, ſince his friends had offered him land, houſe, and property of all kinds there. He was received into an aree's family, eſteemed by the king himſelf, and reſpected by all the people; nay, one of his friends had given him an attendant, or towtow, a boy who conſtantly waited on him wherever he went; who punctually executed all his orders, and ſeemed to be but little different from a ſlave.

Though Mahine had laid aſide the idea of going to England, yet the lively boy, Noona, was very deſirous of viſiting that country, and ſpoke to my father and ſeveral other gentlemen, in the moſt urgent terms, to take him on board. As my father propoſed to take him entirely at his own expence, captain Cook conſented immediately to his reception. The boy was however told, that he muſt never expect to come back, ſince it was very doubtful whether another ſhip would be ſent to Taheitee again. Noona was too much bent upon going with us, to heſitate a moment even at this difficulty. He reſigned the hope of returning to his country, for the pleaſure of viſiting ours. In the evening however of the ſame day captain Cook declared he would not take him on board, and he was accordingly obliged to remain at Taheitee. As it was intended to teach him the rudiments of the arts of the carpenter and ſmith, he would

have

have returned to his country at leaſt as valuable a member of ſociety as O-Mai, who, after a ſtay of two years in England, will be able to amuſe his countrymen with the muſic of a hand-organ, and with the exhibition of a puppet-ſhow. 1774. MAY.

We paſſed ſeveral days in viſiting the plains of Matavaï, and the extenſive valley of Ahonnoo, which is one of the moſt fertile, and, at the ſame time, moſt pictureſque, in the whole iſland. On the 6th, in the afternoon, my father and Dr. Sparrman went up to the hills a ſecond time, and I accompanied them, in hopes of meeting with ſome new plants there, ſince we had entirely exhauſted the Flora of the plains. We paſſed the night again in Tahea's hut, with this difference, that we did not keep watch. Tahea was a merry humorous fellow; and it was his conſtant requeſt to us to call him *medua* (father), and his wife *o-pattèa* * (mother.) Friday 6.

We went up early the next day, but did not care to go quite to the ſummit. In the foreſt we collected a number of new plants, and ſhot a ſwallow. As we ſet out before ſunriſe, Tahea and his brother, who went up with us, caught ſome terns, which ſlept on the buſhes along the path. He told us that many aquatic-birds come to reſt on the moun-

* *Pattèa* is properly a word of endearment, equivalent to our *mamma*. This laſt the Taheitians likewiſe make uſe of in the identical ſenſe that we do.

1774. MAY. tains, after roaming all day over the ſea in queſt of food; and that the tropic-bird in particular has its neſt there. The long tail feathers, which it annually ſheds, are commonly found there, and much ſought after by the natives. We ſaw the clouds coming over the ſummit, and deſcending towards us; therefore, in order to keep our plants dry, we haſtened down, and at four o'clock reached the ſhip, where we found the whole royal family aſſembled, and among them Neehouraï, the eldeſt ſiſter of O-Too, married to T'-aree-Derre, the ſon of Ammo *. T'-aree-Watow, the king's next brother, ſtaid after they were all gone, and paſſed the night on board. To amuſe him we let off ſome falſe fires at the maſt-head, with which he was highly entertained. At ſupper, he enumerated to us all his relations, and gave us ſome account of the hiſtory of Taheitee, which o-Maï entirely confirmed to me, after my return to England. From his information we learned, that Ammo, Happaï, and Tootahah were three brothers, and that Ammo, being the eldeſt, was king of all Taheitee. He married o-Poorèa (Oberea) a princeſs of the royal family, and had by her t'-Aree-Derre, who was immediately ſtyled Aree-rahaï, or king of Taheitee. During the period of Ammo's reign, captain Wallis viſited the iſland, and found o-Poorèa (Oberea) inveſted with regal au-

* See vol. I. p. 358. Likewiſe Hawkeſworth, vol. II. p. 154.

thority,

thority. About a year after his departure, a war broke out between o-Ammo and his vaſſal Aheatua, the king of the leſſer peninſula. Aheatua landed at Paparra, where Ammo commonly reſided, and after routing his forces with great ſlaughter, deſtroyed the plantations and houſes by fire, and carried off all the hogs and poultry which he could find. Ammo and Poorea, with all their attendants, among whom o-Maï, according to his own account, was one, fled to the mountains in December 1768. At laſt the conqueror conſented to a peace, on condition that Ammo ſhould entirely reſign the government, and that the ſucceſſion ſhould be taken from his ſon, and conferred upon o-Too, the eldeſt ſon of his brother Happaï. This was agreed to, and Tootahah, the youngeſt brother of Ammo, was appointed regent. This revolution bears a great reſemblance to thoſe which happen too frequently in the deſpotic kingdoms of Aſia. It is but ſeldom that the conqueror dares to govern the country which he has ſubdued; in general he only plunders it, and appoints another ſovereign, whom he chooſes from among the royal family of the land. O-Poorea ſoon after quarrelled with her huſband, and frequently beat him; upon which they ſeparated; he took a very handſome young woman to his bed, and ſhe heaped her favours on Obadee and other lovers. Some infidelity on the part of Ammo ſeems to have been the foundation of this quarrel. Theſe accidents, which are not ſo frequent at Taheitee as in England,

1774. MAY.

1774. MAY. land, are however not abſolutely unuſual in that iſland, eſpecially when the lady has loſt the charms which rendered her amiable, and yet demands the ſame attention as before. An inſtance ſimilar to this happened on board. Polatehera, formerly the wife of Potatow, but now ſeparated from him, had taken a young huſband or lover in his ſtead, as ſoon as her firſt lord had provided himſelf with another partner. The young man had an affection for a Taheitian girl, and our ſhip was the place of their rendezvous. They did not however contrive their amours ſo well, as to remain undiſcovered. The maſculine Polatehera caught them one morning, gave her rival many hearty boxes on the ear, and humbled the guilty lover with a ſevere reprimand.

Captain Cook found the government of Taheitee in the hands of Tootahah, when he arrived in the Endeavour. After his departure Tootahah, being greatly enriched by the preſents he had obtained, perſuaded the chiefs of O-Taheitee-nue, or the Great Peninſula, to go againſt Aheatua, whom he could not forgive on account of the inſult ſhewn to his family. They equipped a fleet, and went to Tiarraboo, where Aheatua was prepared to receive them. He was an old man *, deſirous to end his days in peace; and therefore ſent to Tootahah, to aſſure him that he was his friend, and always intended to continue ſo; and

* See Hawkeſworth, vol. II. p. 158.

that

that he deſired him to return to his country, without attacking thoſe who had an affection for him. Tootahah was not diſſuaded from his purpoſe, but gave orders to engage. The loſs on both ſides was nearly equal, but Tootahah retired, in order to attack his enemy by land. Happaï, with all his family, diſapproved of this ſtep, and remained at o-Parre; but Tootahah took o-Too with him, and marched to the iſthmus between the two peninſulas. Here Aheatua met him, and a pitched battle enſued, which ended in the total diſperſion of Tootahah's army. Tootahah himſelf was killed. Some told us he had been taken priſoner, and was put to death afterwards; but others, and among them o-Maï, aſſerted that he had been ſlain in the heat of the engagement. O-Too retired precipitately to the mountains with a few choſen friends, whilſt Aheatua, with his victorious forces, immediately marched to Matavaï and o-Parre. At his arrival Happaï retired to the mountains, but Aheatua ſent to aſſure him that he had no quarrel with him or his family, and that his wiſh had always been for peace. Thoſe on the mountain enquired in their turn concerning the fate of Tootahah and o-Too; they heard that the former was killed, and that no body knew what was become of the other. Soon after o-Too arrived through many difficult paſſes, and over precipices, and coming down from the higheſt ſummits, joined his father, and all who were with him. A general peace was immediately concluded, after which

1774. MAY.

1774. MAY. which O-Too aſſumed the reins of government himſelf, and the vaſt improvements in the country, which we noticed in eight months time, ſeem to prove that he is a very intelligent man, who promotes the general good of his ſubjects. Aheatua died ſoon after; and his ſon of the ſame name, whom we found at Aitepeha in Auguſt 1773, ſucceeded him.

Te-aree-Watow farther acquainted us, that his father had eight children. 1. The eldeſt, Tedua (princeſs) Neehouraï, who ſeemed to be about thirty years old, and is married to the ſon of Ammo, called T'-aree-Derre. 2. The next Tedua (princeſs) Towraï, was unmarried, about ſeven and twenty, and appeared to have almoſt as great authority among the women, as the king her brother had in the whole iſland. 3. O-Too, aree-rahai, or king of Taheitee, is about twenty-ſix years of age; Aheatua is obliged to uncover his ſhoulders in his preſence, as before his rightful paramount. 4. Tedua (princeſs) Tehamaï, who was the next to him, died young. 5. T'-aree-Watow himſelf was the next in order, and appeared to be about ſixteen years of age; he told us he had another name, but which I have forgotten, from whence I conclude, that this which I have mentioned is only his title. 6. His next brother is Tubuaïteraï, likewiſe called Mayorro, a boy of ten or eleven years old. 7. Erreretua, a little girl of ſeven years; and 8. Tepaow, a boy of four or five, are the two youngeſt. A healthy,

healthy, but not corpulent habit of body, and a large bushy head of hair, were extremely characteristic of the whole family. Their features in general were pleasing, but their complexions rather brown, except that of Neehouraï and O-Too. The whole family appeared to be very much beloved among the nation, who in general are extremely fond of their chiefs. In return, their behaviour to every body was so affable and kind, that it commanded a general good-will. Tedua-Towraï commonly accompanied the king her brother when he came to visit us on board; and did not think she demeaned herself by going to trade for red feathers among the common sailors, in exchange for cloths and various curiosities. She happened once to be in the cabin with O-Too, captain Cook, and my father, looking over great heaps of iron ware, and other articles of trade; but the captain being called out, she whispered something to her brother, who immediately endeavoured to divert my father's attention by asking several questions. My father took the hint, and the princess believing she was not observed, concealed two large spike-nails in the folds of her garments. When captain Cook returned, my father acquainted him with this little stratagem; but they agreed that it was most politic not to take any notice of it. Before this time, she had frequently expressed a particular desire to carry away with her one or other article of our riches, and had never been refused; on the contrary, we had commonly 1774. MAY.

1774. MAY. given more than ſhe demanded. It was therefore extraordinary, that ſhe ſhould be tempted to ſteal that which might ſo eaſily have been obtained by fair means; it ſhould ſeem as if ſhe had a ſtrange predilection for things acquired by ſtealth, and for which ſhe was only indebted to her own ingenuity. Some of the women on board likewiſe accuſed her of admitting towtows, or men of the loweſt rank, to her bed at night privately, and unknown to her brother. In a country where the impulſes of nature are followed without reſtraint, it would be extraordinary if an exception ſhould be made, and ſtill more ſo, if it ſhould confine thoſe who are accuſtomed to have their will in moſt other reſpects. The paſſions of mankind are ſimilar every where; the ſame inſtincts are active in the ſlave and the prince; conſequently the hiſtory of their effects muſt ever be the ſame in every country.

Sunday 8. O-Too came to the tents on Point Venus very early in the morning, and acquainted the ſerjeant of marines that one of the natives had ſtolen a muſket from a centry, and was run off with it: he likewiſe diſpatched Tee, his meſſenger, on board to fetch his brother, who obeyed the ſummons, after breakfaſting with us. As ſoon as they returned on ſhore, O-Too, with all his family, fled to the weſtward, being apprehenſive that the muſket would be redemanded at their hands. Captain Cook ſeized ſeveral double travelling-canoes belonging to different chiefs, and particularly that

that of Maratata, who was accuſed of having ordered one of his attendants to commit the theft. This chief himſelf was in his canoe, and haſtened to convey it out of our reach; but the captain firing ſeveral muſkets at it, Maratata and all his rowers leaped into the ſea, and ſwam aſhore. About noon Tee came on board, and acquainted us that the thief was gone to the Leſſer Peninſula, or Tiarraboo; upon which all the canoes, except Maratata's were again reſtored to their owners. We kept quiet on board till the afternoon, having but few of the natives with us, among whom there was not one woman. Towards evening captain Cook went aſhore, and ſoon after ſome natives arrived in a moſt profuſe perſpiration, who brought not only the muſket, but alſo a bundle of cloaths and a two-hour-glaſs, which had been ſtolen about the ſame time. They related, that having overtaken the thief, they had beaten him moſt ſeverely, and obliged him to ſhew where he had concealed the ſtolen goods in the ſand. Notwithſtanding their appearance, we did not give much credit to their ſtory, eſpecially as one of them had been ſo lately ſeen about the tents, that it was impoſſible he could have run to any great diſtance. They received ſome preſents, however, to ſhew that we meant to reward their zeal in our ſervice. The next day there was no trade carried on; but Tee came on board again, deſiring the captain to viſit the king at Parré, who was *matòw*, an ambiguous court-phraſe, expreſſing not only that he was

1774. MAY.

1774. MAY. afraid, but that he wiſhed to be put into good humour with preſents. The captain and my father went to him, whilſt Dr. Sparrman and myſelf were put aſhore at the tents. We found the people a good deal terrified at the extraordinary ſteps which had been taken, on our part, to do juſtice to ourſelves. They had received ſtrict orders from the king not to ſell any proviſions, however they treated us with cocoanuts and other refreſhments with their uſual hoſpitality. At noon we came on board, and the captain returned ſoon after, having ratified the friendſhip with O-Too. No women came on board this night, the king having prohibited it, leſt they ſhould give occaſion to complaints, by ſtealing Tueſday 10. from our people. However the next day they were permitted to viſit our ſailors again; and with them came a number of canoes loaden with vegetable proviſions, and ſome with freſh fiſh. Captain Cook ſent Mahine with ſeveral preſents to Towhah, into Atahooroo, in return for ſeveral hogs which he had received. During his abſence, O-Poorea (Oberea) once the queen of Taheitee, came on board, and preſented two hogs to captain Cook. The fame of our red feathers had reached to the plains of Paparra, for ſhe told us ſhe was come to have ſome of them. She appeared to be between forty and fifty; her perſon was tall, large, and fat, and her features, which ſeemed once to have been more agreeable, were now rather maſculine. However ſomething of her former greatneſs remained; ſhe had "an eye

to

to threaten or command *," and a free and noble deportment. She did not ſtay long on board, probably becauſe ſhe felt herſelf of leſs conſequence in our eyes than formerly. After enquiring for her friends of the Endeavour, ſhe went aſhore in her canoe. O-Ammo likewiſe came to the ſhip about this time, but was ſtill leſs noticed than his late conſort; and being little known on board, was not permitted to come even into the captain's cabin. It was with difficulty that he could diſpoſe of his hogs, as we had now ſo many on board, that we did not care to croud the decks with more. Theſe two royal perſonages are living examamples of the inſtability of human grandeur. 1774. MAY.

We contrived ſeveral diverſions for O-Too on the 12th. We fired our guns with round and grape-ſhot acroſs the reef into the ſea, at which he and a croud of ſeveral thouſand ſpectators were highly delighted. In the evening we let off a few ſky-rockets, and ſome air-balloons, which heightened their raptures, and filled them with admiration. They looked upon us as extraordinary people, who had fires and ſtars at command, and gave our fire-works the name of *Heiva-Bretannee*, the Britiſh Feſtival. Thurſday 12.

All the next day a number of people ſurrounded the ſhip, who brought no proviſions, but great quantities of cloth and curioſities, having obſerved that we prepared to leave them.

* Shakeſpeare.

In

1774. MAY. In the afternoon we went to O-Parre with captain Cook, and found our worthy friend Towhah there with Mahine. Towhah had been dangerouſly ill of a diſorder ſimilar to the gout, and his legs were ſtill ſwelled, and exceſſively painful. He was however come to take leave of us, and promiſed to viſit us the next morning. O-Too likewiſe met us there, and ſpoke of ſending a ſupply of bread-fruit, which we valued more than hogs at preſent. Early the next morning we received the viſit of a great part of the nobility of the whole iſland. Among them was Happaï and all his children, except O-Too. Towhah and his wife likewiſe came about eight o'clock, and brought great loads of preſents of all ſorts to us. The good old admiral was ſo ill that he could not ſtand on his legs; he was very deſirous however to come upon deck; we therefore ſlung a chair in ropes, and hoiſted him up in it, to his great delight, and to the aſtoniſhment of all his countrymen. We diſcourſed on the ſubject of the intended expedition againſt Eimeo, which he ſtill aſſured us would take place ſoon after our departure. Notwithſtanding his illneſs, he was determined to command the fleet in perſon, ſaying it was of little conſequence if they killed an old man, who could no longer be uſeful. He was very chearful under his infirmities, and his way of thinking was nobly diſintereſted, and ſeemed to be animated by true heroiſm. He took leave of us with a degree of cordiality and emotion, which touched the heart, and might have reconciled

Saturday 14.

ciled a miſanthrope to the world. Mahine, who came on board with him, reſolved to go with us to Raietea, to viſit his relations and friends in the Society Iſlands, and then to return to Taheitee, as ſoon as he ſhould meet with an opportunity. He conſidered, that having poſſeſſions in ſeveral of thoſe iſlands, it was his intereſt to return thither, and to diſpoſe of them to the greateſt advantage. He introduced to captain Cook ſeveral natives of Borabora, one of which was his brother; they deſired a paſſage to the Society Iſlands, which captain Cook readily granted. With a degree of exultation, he imparted to us in confidence, that he had ſhared O-Poorea's bed the laſt night; this he eſteemed as a great honour and mark of eminence, and ſhewed us ſeveral pieces of the beſt cloth, which ſhe had preſented to him. O-Poorea was therefore not too old to reliſh ſenſual gratifications even in a warm climate, where the epocha of maturity ſeems to happen at a much earlier age than in colder countries, and where of courſe every ſtage of human life might be ſuppoſed to have only a proportionate duration. O-Too not being arrived on board, we went to viſit him once more, and to view ſome war-canoes which lay at Parre. We found only forty-four, all which belonged to Tittaha, the ſmalleſt diſtrict in the north-weſt peninſula of Taheitee. O-Too ordered ſome military evolutions to be made before us, which were performed with great dexterity. The chiefs were all dreſſed in their habits,

1774. MAY. Saturday 14.

1774. MAY. habits, and had targets, but no helmets. There were alſo ſome little boys, who wore the dreſſes, and parried the ſpears with as great agility as grown people. Their method was to reſt the point of a ſpear or long battle-axe on the ground before them, ſo that it made an angle of about 25 or 30 deg. with the ground. With the other end, which they held in their hand, they contrived to keep the ſpear always in the middle, right before the body. By this means the ſpear of the adverſary always ſlid off on one ſide or the other, without ever coming near the body. Some of the canoes likewiſe performed part of their manœuvre. They came ſingly one after another through the narrow entrance of the reef; but as ſoon as they were within, they formed in a line, and joined cloſe together. On the middlemoſt canoe there was a man placed behind the fighting ſtage, who gave ſignals with a green branch to the rowers, either to paddle to the right or left. The movement in conſequence of his command was in perfect tune, and ſo very regular, that it ſeemed as if all the paddles were parts of the ſame machine which moved ſome hundred arms at once. This man might be compared to the Κελευστης in the ſhips of the ancient Greeks: indeed, the view of the Taheitian fleet frequently brought to our mind an idea of the naval force which that nation employed in the firſt ages of its exiſtence, and induced us to compare them together. The Greeks were doubtleſs better armed,

having

having the uſe of metals; but it ſeemed plain, from the writings of Homer, in ſpight of poetical embelliſhment, that their mode of fighting was irregular, and their arms ſimple, like thoſe of Taheitee. The united efforts of Greece againſt Troy, in remote antiquity, could not be much more conſiderable than the armament of O-Too againſt the iſle of Eimeo; and the boaſted *mille carinæ*, were probably not more formidable than a fleet of large canoes, which require from fifty to an hundred and twenty men to paddle them. The navigation of the Greeks in thoſe days was not more extenſive than that which is practiſed by the Taheitians at preſent, being confined to ſhort paſſages from iſland to iſland; and as the ſtars at night directed the mariners through the Archipelago at that time, ſo they ſtill continue to guide others in the Pacific ocean. The Greeks were brave; but the numerous wounds of the Taheitian chiefs, are all proofs of their ſpirit and proweſs. It ſeems to be certain, that in their battles they rouze themſelves into a kind of phrenzy, and that their bravery is a violent fit of paſſion. From Homer's battles it is evident, that the heroiſm which produced the wonders he records, was exactly of the ſame nature. Let us for a moment be allowed to carry this compariſon ſtill farther. The heroes of Homer are repreſented to us as men of ſupernatural ſize and force. The Taheitian chiefs, compared to the common people, are ſo much ſuperior in ſtature and elegance of form, that 1774. MAY.

1774. MAY. they look like a different race *. It requires a more than ordinary quantity of food to ſatisfy ſtomachs of unuſual dimenſions. Accordingly we find, that the mighty men at the ſiege of Troy, and the chiefs of Taheitee, are both famous for eating; and it appears that pork was a diet no leſs admired by the Greeks, than it is by the Taheitians at this day. Simplicity of manners is obſervable in both nations; and their domeſtic character alike is hoſpitable, affectionate, and humane. There is even a ſimilarity in their political conſtitution. The chiefs of diſtricts at Taheitee are powerful princes, who have not more reſpect for O-Too, than the Greek heroes had for the "King of men;" and the common people are ſo little noticed in the Iliad, that they appear to have had no greater conſequence, than the towtows in the South Sea. In ſhort, I believe the ſimilitude might be traced in many other inſtances; but it was my intention only to hint at it, and not to abuſe the patience of my readers. What I have here ſaid is ſufficient to prove, that men in a ſimilar ſtate of civilization reſemble each other more than we are aware of, even in the moſt oppoſite extremes of the world. I ſhould be ſorry to have made theſe ſlight remarks, if they ſhould unfortunately lead ſome learned ſchemer on a wrong ſcent. The itch of tracing the pedigree

* M. de Bougainville has been led by this difference of appearance to aſſert, that they were really two different races. See his Voyage round the World, p. 249.

of

of nations has lately made ſuch havock in hiſtory, by endeavouring to combine the Egyptians and Chineſe, that the learned muſt ſincerely wiſh, it may never become a contagious diſtemper. 1774. MAY.

O-Too came on board, and dined with us for the laſt time. He propoſed to my father and Mr. Hodges to ſtay at Taheitee, and promiſed very ſeriouſly to make them arees or chiefs of the rich diſtricts of Parre and Matavaï. Whether he had any intereſted motives for this propoſal, or whether it came merely from the fullneſs of his heart, I cannot determine. As ſoon as the dinner was over we weighed our anchor, and ſet ſail. O-Too requeſted the captain to fire ſome cannon, and was the laſt Taheitian who ſtepped into his canoe, after cordially embracing us all. The noiſe of the cannon, by ſtunning our ears in ſome meaſure, diverted our thoughts from taking that melancholy turn which is natural on theſe occaſions. It prevented our giving a looſe to the ſoft feelings with which the worth of this ſimple and beneficent nation had inſpired us; but it was a favourable opportunity for one of our ſeamen to make his eſcape to the iſland. He was obſerved ſwimming towards the ſhore, and ſome canoes were ſeen paddling to his aſſiſtance, when we diſpatched a boat which brought him back, much againſt his inclinations. His frolic coſt him a fortnight's confinement in irons. There is great reaſon to ſuppoſe that a plan was concerted between him and

1774. MAY. the natives, who perhaps had promiſed themſelves as great advantages from retaining an European, as that European might expect by dwelling with them. If we fairly conſider the different ſituations of a common ſailor on board the Reſolution, and of a Taheitian on his iſland, we cannot blame the former, if he attempted to rid himſelf of the numberleſs diſcomforts of a voyage round the world, and preferred an eaſy life, free from cares, in the happieſt climate of the world, to the frequent viciſſitudes which are entailed upon the mariner. The moſt favourable proſpects of future ſucceſs in England, which he might form in idea, could never be ſo flattering to his ſenſes, as the lowly hope of living like the meaneſt Taheitian. It was highly probable, that immediately on his return to England, inſtead of indulging in repoſe thoſe limbs which had been toſſed from pole to pole, he would be placed in another ſhip, where the ſame fatigues, nocturnal watches, and unwholeſome food, would ſtill fall to his ſhare; or though he were allowed to ſolace himſelf for a few days, after a long ſeries of hardſhips, he muſt expect to be ſeized in the midſt of his enjoyments, and to be dragged an unwilling champion to the defence of his country: to be cut off in the flower of his age, or to remain miſerably crippled, with only half his limbs, might be the alternatives to which he would be reduced. But ſuppoſing he could eſcape theſe misfortunes, ſtill he muſt earn his ſubſiſtence in England,

at

at the expence of labour, and " in the ſweat of his brow," when this eldeſt curſe on mankind is ſcarcely felt at Taheitee. The drudgery of our country people is continual, and their exertion of ſtrength very violent. Before they can make the leaſt uſe of corn, they muſt undergo the various labours of ploughing, reaping, thraſhing, and grinding. They are obliged to cultivate an hundred times more than they can conſume, in order to ſupport a breed of animals, whoſe aſſiſtance in huſbandry is abſolutely neceſſary; and to pay for the liberty of tilling the ground, for the articles of dreſs indiſpenſable in a raw climate; for their tools, and a variety of things, which they might eaſily make with their own hands, if agriculture alone did not engroſs their time and attention. The tradeſman, the manufacturer, the artiſt, all are obliged to work with equal aſſiduity, in order to furniſh the goods, in return for which the farmer gives them bread. How different from this, how indolent is the life of the Taheitian! Two or three bread-fruit trees, which grow almoſt without any culture, and which flouriſh as long as he himſelf can expect to live, ſupply him with abundant food during three-fourths of the year. The ſuperfluity is fermented and preſerved, as a wholeſome, nouriſhing and palatable bread, for the remaining months. Thoſe plants which require the greateſt attendance at Taheitee, the cloth-trees and eddo-roots, are cultivated with much

1774. MAY.

1774. MAY. much leſs trouble than our cabbages and kitchen-herbs, though their uſes are infinitely more extenſive. The whole proceſs neceſſary to plant a bread-tree, is to break off a ſound branch, and ſtick it in the ground. The banana, whoſe rich cluſters ſeem too great a weight for the herbaceous ſtem, annually ſhoots afreſh from the root. The royal palm, at once the ornament of the plain, and a uſeful gift of nature to its inhabitants; the golden apple, whoſe ſalutary effects we have ſo ſtrongly experienced, and a number of other plants, all thrive with ſuch luxuriance, and require ſo little trouble, that I may venture to call them ſpontaneous. The manufacture of dreſs is an agreeable paſtime for the women, and the building of houſes and canoes, with the making of tools and arms, are occupations which become amuſing by being voluntary, and intended for the more immediate uſe of the artificers. Moſt of their days are therefore ſpent in a round of various enjoyments, in a country where nature has laviſhed many a pleaſing landſcape; where the temperature of the air is warm, but continually refreſhed by a wholeſome breeze from the ſea; and where the ſky is almoſt conſtantly ſerene. This climate, and its ſalubrious productions, contribute to the ſtrength and the elegance of their form. They are all well-proportioned, and ſome would have been ſelected by Phidias or Praxiteles, as models of maſculine beauty. Their features

features are ſweet, and unruffled by violent paſſions. Their large eyes, their arched eyebrows, and high forehead, give a noble air to their heads, which are adorned by ſtrong beards, and a comely growth of hair *. Theſe, as well as their beautiful teeth, are the proofs of vigour, and of a ſound habit of body. The ſex, the partners of their felicity, are likewiſe well-formed; their irregular charms win the heart of their countrymen, and their unaffected ſmiles, and a wiſh to pleaſe, inſure them mutual eſteem and love. A kind of happy uniformity runs through the whole life of the Taheitians. They riſe with the ſun, and haſten to rivers and fountains, to perform an ablution equally reviving and cleanly. They paſs the morning at work, or walk about till the heat of the day increaſes, when they retreat to their dwellings, or repoſe under ſome tufted tree. There they amuſe themſelves with ſmoothing their hair, and anoint it with fragrant oils; or they blow the flute, and ſing to it, or liſten to the ſongs of the birds. At the hour of noon, or a little later, they go to dinner. After their meals they reſume their domeſtic amuſements, during which the flame of mutual affection ſpreads in every heart, and unites the riſing generation with new and tender ties. The lively 1774. May.

* It has been ſaid by other navigators, that they eradicate the hair of the upper-lip, the breaſt and arm-pits; but this is by no means a general cuſtom. The chiefs in particular, and the king himſelf, preſerve their whiſkers.

jeſt,

1774. MAY. jeſt, without any ill-nature, the artleſs tale, the jocund dance and frugal ſupper, bring on the evening; and another viſit to the river concludes the actions of the day. Thus contented with their ſimple way of life, and placed in a delightful country, they are free from cares, and happy in their ignorance.

Ihr leben flieſſet verborgen,
Wie klare bäche durch blumen dahin. KLEIST.

It muſt be allowed, that theſe advantages are deciſive with thoſe, who have nothing ſo much at heart as the gratification of their ſenſes. No wonder then that a ſailor, perhaps leſs guided by reaſon than the reſt of his comrades, ſhould hurry on headlong after the pleaſures of the preſent moment. It is certain, at the ſame time, that being born and bred up in an active ſphere of life, acquainted with numberleſs ſubjects, utterly unknown to the Taheitians, and accuſtomed to extend his thoughts to paſt and future occurrences, he would ſhortly have been tired of an uninterrupted tranquility and continual ſameneſs, ſuited only to a people whoſe notions are ſimple and confined.

The ideas of happineſs are infinitely various in different nations, according to their manners, principles, and degrees of civilization. As the productions and apparent good qualities

lities of our globe, are either profuſely or ſparingly diſtri- 1774. MAY.
buted, on its different parts, the diverſity of human opini-
ons is a convincing proof of that paternal love, and uner-
ring wiſdom, which, in the plan of this world, has provided
for the good of mankind, alike in the torrid and the
frigid zone.

Fix'd to no ſpot is happineſs ſincere,
'Tis no where to be found, or ev'ry where. POPE.

1773. MAY.

CHAP. VII.

The ſecond ſtay at the Society Iſlands.

Saturday 14. A Briſk gale carried us ſwiftly from Taheitee. We were ſtill buſied in contemplating its beautiful ſcenery, when an unexpected object on our own decks attracted our attention. This was no other than one of the fineſt women whom we had ſeen in the country, and who had reſolved to go with us to Raietea (Ulietea), her native iſland. Her parents, from whom ſhe had eloped to Taheitee with a favoured lover ſome years ago, were ſtill alive, and the force of affection urged her irreſiſtibly to viſit them. She was by no means apprehenſive of their anger, but on the contrary expected a kind reception. The little youthful errors of the heart are eaſily forgiven, where intereſt and ambition have ſo little ſway. She had concealed herſelf on board during O-Too's laſt viſit, as he had expreſsly ordered that no woman ſhould go with us; but being ſafe at preſent, ſhe ventured to make her appearance. Mahine's brother, his ſervant, and two other natives of Borabora, likewiſe took a paſſage with us, confidently relying on a people who had ſo faithfully brought one of their countrymen back again, and who had endeavoured to ſhew him every kindneſs in their

their power. Their company gave life to our converſation, and ſhortened the day of our paſſage to Huahine. The girl was dreſſed in a ſuit of cloaths belonging to one of the officers, and was ſo much pleaſed with her new garments, that ſhe went aſhore in them as ſoon as ſhe arrived at that iſland. She dined with the officers, without the leaſt ſcruple, and laughed at the prejudices of her countrymen with all the good ſenſe of a citizen of the world. With a proper education ſhe might have ſhone as a woman of genius even in Europe; ſince, without the advantage of a cultivated underſtanding, her great vivacity joined to very polite manners, already were ſufficient to make her company ſupportable. 1774. MAY.

We ſailed on all night; and the next morning, at day break, the iſland of Huahine was in ſight. In the afternoon we came to an anchor in the northern branch of Wharre harbour, where we lay not more than fifty yards from the ſhore. We were viſited by ſome of the natives, who brought hogs to ſell, but demanded hatchets in return, which were now ſo ſcarce on board, that we reſerved them for great occaſions. Oree, the regent of the iſland, came to us before ſunſet in a ſmall canoe, and brought a hog and a target of war to captain Cook, for which he received a ſuitable preſent. He gave us ſome pepper-roots this time, but without any of the ceremonies obſerved at our former viſit Saturday 15.

1774. MAY. to the iſland *. In the evening we had a perfect calm, and were highly delighted with viewing and hearing the natives, who ſat in their houſes along the ſhore, around their candles, which are oily nuts ſtuck on a ſlender ſtick. One of the firſt who came on board the next day was Porea, the Taheitian youth, who had left that iſland with us eight months ago, but had withdrawn himſelf from us at Raietea. He told us, it was by no means with his conſent that he ſtaid behind. Having an amour with a pretty girl, ſhe had appointed a rendezvous, to which he had haſtened, after delivering the powder-horn to captain Cook. On his arriving at the place appointed with his fair miſtreſs, he had been attacked by her father, with ſome attendants, who had ſtripped him of his European cloaths, beaten him ſoundly, and confined him till after our departure. He had then taken the firſt opportunity of croſſing over to Huahine, where he had been ſupported by the hoſpitality of ſeveral friends, ſo that he was now in a very good plight. From his ſtory we may gather, that the people of theſe iſlands do not always permit their daughters to follow their own inclinations; though according to our ideas, Porea's attempt did not authoriſe the father to rob him of his cloaths.

We went on ſhore early, and rambled to the lagoons, which the ſea forms to the northward of the harbour.

* See vol. I. p. 376.

We

1774. MAY.

We found them ſurrounded by ſwamps, filled with variety of Eaſt Indian plants; and their ſhores conſiſted of a ſlimy mud, which, from its appearance, and fetid ſmell, we thought to be of the ſame nature and qualities with *hepar ſulphuris*. There were great flocks of ducks upon the lagoon; but we found it difficult to approach them, as we ſunk into the mud, whenever we ventured to walk through it. The proſpect which this piece of water forms, is however extremely pleaſing and pictureſque. The ſtinking effluvia of the lagoons are probably eſteemed unwholeſome, as we obſerved but very few houſes on their banks. On the ſea ſide they are incloſed by a narrow coral ledge covered with ſand, a little elevated, along which we found great number of coco-nut palms. The marſhes ſlope down from this immediately to the ſtagnant water. We were entertained by one of the natives with coco-nuts, which were at preſent very ſcarce upon the iſland. In returning home our ſervant, who carried a bag with plants, and another with iron tools, was knocked down a few yards behind us, and would have been robbed, if we had not turned back by chance; but at ſight of us the thieves ran off. This was the ſecond time that our people were thus boldly attacked by the natives of Huahine, who ſeem, upon the whole, to be more licentious under the infirm government of old Oree, than thoſe of Taheitee, and of the other Society Iſlands.

This

1774. MAY. This old chief appeared to be much more indolent at this time than at our firſt viſit, and his intellects ſeemed to be conſiderably impaired. His eyes were red and inflamed, and his whole body lean and ſcaly. We were not long at a loſs to account for this change, having obſerved that he was now much addicted to the intoxicating pepper-draught, of which he drank great quantities, prepared exceſſively ſtrong. Mahine had the honour of drinking with him for ſeveral nights together, and received ſuch a ſhare of his nauſeous beverage, that he commonly awoke the next morning with a violent head-ache.

We made another excurſion to the ſame place the next day, and brought back a number of corals, ſhells, and echini, which the natives had gathered for us on the ſea-ſhore. We received preſents of hogs and targets from different chiefs, who came on purpoſe to viſit their old acquaintances, and would not ſell or part with their goods, till they ſaw their friend for whom they were deſtined. The next day we took a walk up one of the hills, which is every where planted with bread-trees, pepper and mulberry-trees, yams and eddoes. The mulberry or cloth-trees were cultivated with particular attention; the ground between them was carefully weeded, and manured with broken decayed ſhells and coral, and the whole plantation ſurrounded with a deep furrow or channel, in order to drain it. In many places they had burnt away ferns and various

various ſhrubs, in order to prepare the ground for future plantations. At a conſiderable height upon the hill we found a houſe, the inhabitants of which, an old woman and her daughter, hoſpitably entertained us. We gave them ſeveral beads and nails, and ſome red feathers, which laſt were rather accepted as a curioſity, than as things of great value. This opinion was general among the people at Huahine; they wanted hatchets in exchange for their hogs, and ſmaller iron tools for other proviſions, and as we were well ſtocked with animals, we did not like their price, though it was the ſame which we had formerly given. Since red feathers have really no intrinſic value, and are only uſed for ornament, we have another convincing proof of the ſuperior affluence and luxury of the Taheitians, in the great eagerneſs which they expreſſed to purchaſe them. The difference is obviouſly owing to the excellence of their country, compared to Huahine, where the ambient plain is ſo narrow and inconſiderable, that the natives are obliged to cultivate the hills. 1774. MAY.

Several bold thefts were committed, during the following days, by the natives, for which it was not in our power to obtain redreſs. Some other attempts however were puniſhed. A party of petty officers were gone to take the diverſion of ſhooting on a hill, and had a marine with them, who carried ſome hatchets and nails in a bag. A native who attended them, ſeeing that their fowling-pieces miſſed fire

1774. MAY. fire ſeveral times, took his opportunity, when the marine had laid down his bundle, to ſnatch it up, and ran off with it. The day after the gentlemen went to ſee a heiva or public dance, and luckily found the thief among the ſpectators. He confeſſed his miſdemeanour, but promiſed, if they would pardon him, to bring them ſome targets in return, which were always reckoned equivalent to our hatchets. They were contented with his ſubmiſſion, and the man punctually kept his word the next day; which ſhews that he was by no means to be compared to our hardened ſinners, but was fully ſenſible of the generous treatment which he had met with. Another attempted to ſteal a powder-horn, but he was detected, and requited by blows. Even the poor girl, who came on board at Taheitee, tempted them by wearing an European dreſs. A number of natives ſet upon her in a houſe, when ſhe was leaſt aware of it, and began to ſtrip off her cloaths; when ſome of our people fortunately came by, who put the thieves to flight. This accident frightened her ſo much, that ſhe never ventured out of the ſhip alone for the future.

Thurſday 19. On the 19th we took a walk towards the long inlet, where Dr. Sparrman had been robbed about eight months before. The weather was rainy at firſt, and the ſhowers became ſo ſevere, that we retreated into a ſmall hut, to prevent our being wetted to the ſkin. We found here a friendly family, who immediately offered us ſome freſh bread-

bread-fruit and ſome fiſhes to eat, that being always the first mark of hoſpitality among the inhabitants of the South Sea. An elderly woman, of ſome note, had likewiſe taken ſhelter under the ſame roof, with one of her attendants, who led a hog to her home. As we ſet out together, when the ſhower was over, the good woman preſented the hog to us, and invited us to her houſe, which lay at a conſiderable diſtance. We croſſed the hill, and deſcended to the ſea ſhore on the oppoſite ſide of the iſland. Our way was extremely ſlippery; but we collected a number of plants which had novelty to recommend them. The weather changed before we reached the plain below, and became delightfully fair. We found a bay, with an extenſive ſhoal of coral, and a ſmall iſlet, where great flocks of wild-ducks, curlews, and ſnipes reſided. We received ſeveral refreſhments from the natives, which our friendly old lady endeavoured to procure. After we had amuſed ourſelves for ſome time with ſhooting, we croſſed the hills in another direction, and paſſing through a fine valley, well inhabited, and rich in all ſorts of plantations, we came to the woman's dwelling on the ſea ſhore. Here we found an old man, her huſband, and a large family, ſome of whom were grown up. She treated us with ſtewed fowls, bread-fruit, and coco-nuts, and then ſent us in her own canoe to the ſhip, which lay about five miles off by ſea, but at leaſt twice as far by land. There was a kind of aſſiduity to ſerve us

1774. MAY.

1774. MAY. in this good woman's behaviour, which I had not often experienced in thoſe numerous inſtances of hoſpitality, daily obvious to the ſtranger in the South Sea iſlands. It is a moſt convincing proof of the excellence of the human heart, in its ſimple ſtate, before ambition, luxury, and various other paſſions have corrupted it.

Friday 20. We ſtaid on board the next day till the afternoon, and then went aſhore with captain Cook to a long houſe, which was a common receptacle, or carvanſera, for many families, who travelled thither in ordered to be near us. We found ſeveral inferior chiefs there; but Oree was gone to a different part of the iſland. After converſing with them for ſome time, ſeveral natives arrived, who brought an account that our firſt and ſecond lieutenant, with one of the mates, had been ſtripped by ſeveral robbers. A great number of the inhabitants immediately fled, and all who remained expreſſed ſtrong marks of fear. We could not collect with certainty, from the information of different people, whether our officers had been beaten or killed; the Taheitian word, *matte*, expreſſing both theſe ideas. We were however ſoon relieved from this ſtate of ſuſpenſe, by the appearance of the gentlemen, perfectly ſafe, with their arms and cloaths. They informed us, that having been ſhooting near the lagoons, they had been attacked unawares by ſome of the natives, who, upon their refuſing to part with their fowling-pieces, had beaten them, and wreſted thoſe arms

out

out of their hands; that a chief happening to paſs by during the ſtruggle, had come to their aſſiſtance, and had effected the recovery of every article which had been taken from them. We returned on board together, and obſerved that the natives forſook the adjacent country. The next morning early, Mahine, who had ſlept on ſhore, brought a meſſage from Oree to captain Cook, importing that there were thirteen offenders, whom he could not puniſh without the captain's aſſiſtance: he requeſted him therefore to ſend twenty-two armed men, which he expreſſed by the ſame number of ſmall ſticks, and promiſed to join them with ſome of his own warriors, who ſhould go out to chaſtiſe the rebels. Captain Cook went on ſhore with Mahine, in order to be more fully aſſured of Oree's intention; but not underſtanding enough of the language, he received very little intelligence. As ſoon as he returned on board, he conſulted with the officers; and, on this occaſion, the ſecond lieutenant ingenuouſly confeſſed that they themſelves had been the aggreſſors, and had drawn upon them the ſevere revenge which the natives had taken. One of them having ſhot a couple of ducks in the lagoon, deſired a native, who attended him, to fetch them out of the water. The man, who had repeatedly done him this good office before, refuſed to ſerve as a ſpaniel any longer. Our officer beat him, however, till he went in, and worked himſelf through the mud with great agility, in a motion between

1774. MAY.

1774. MAY. ſwimming and walking. When he had reached the ducks, which lay at a conſiderable diſtance from the ſhore, he ſwam off with them to the oppoſite ſide of the lagoon, perhaps conſcious that he deſerved them for the trouble he had taken. As this did not agree with the ſeaman's intentions, he loaded his muſket with ball, and fired, but fortunately miſſed him. He was preparing to load again, when the croud about him, ſeeing the life of their countryman ſo wantonly ſported with, ſeized his arms. He called to his companions for help, but they were likewiſe ſurrounded; and though one of them fired a load of ſhot into the thighs of a native, this only exaſperated them the more; ſo that he was beaten and bruiſed without mercy. Mahine's attendant, or ſervant, a ſtout youth, of a very low ſtature, accompanied our gentlemen, and fought deſperately in their favour, but was overpowered by numbers. After this confeſſion, the caſe was greatly altered; however, the captain reſolved to queſtion Oree once more, and to that purpoſe deſired my father to accompany him to the ſhore, being convinced that no perſon on board was at this time ſo well verſed in the language of the country. They ſoon learnt from Oree, that he intended we ſhould march to the dwellings of the natives who had thus done themſelves juſtice, and who ſeemed to have withdrawn themſelves even from his power; and that he wiſhed to take all their goods and hogs, and give them to us. Captain Cook returned to the

ſhip,

ſhip, and ſelected a party of forty-ſeven Europeans, including the officers, Dr. Sparrman, my father, and myſelf; not indeed to reduce the rebellious ſubjects of Oree to their duty, who had ſo much reaſon to complain of injuſtice from our people, but perhaps to ſhew that he did not entirely approve of their conduct. We landed, and marched with Oree and a few of the natives towards the diſtrict where the robbery was committed. In proportion as we advanced, the croud at our heels encreaſed in number to ſeveral hundreds, and took up arms in the neighbouring houſes. Oree himſelf wielded a ſpear ten feet long, with a barbed tail of ſting-ray at the point. We halted at the diſtance of about two miles, and were now acquainted by Mahine that the natives had formed the plan of ſurrounding and cutting us off. Oree was deſirous to ſtay behind; but captain Cook perſuaded him and a few other chiefs to go with us, whilſt the reſt of the croud were ordered to proceed no further, under pretence, that in caſe of an engagement, we ſhould not be able to diſtinguiſh friends from foes. We marched about three miles to a place where the path divided; we choſe that which led acroſs a very ſteep rock, in preference to another at the foot of it. Steps were cut in the rock on the oppoſite ſide, where we deſcended again on the plain. This paſs was ſo dangerous, that captain Cook propoſed to leave a detachment of his petty army here; but ſeeing that the croud advanced ſlowly after him, in ſpite of Oree's or-

1774. MAY.

ders,

1774. May. ders, he reſolved to return, and declared to the natives that the enemy was too far off to be purſued. We came back to a ſpacious houſe, about halfway to the ſhip, where Oree regaled us with coco-nuts. Whilſt we remained there, ſome of the natives brought ſeveral banana-ſtalks, two dogs, and a pig. They preſented them to the captain, holding a long ſpeech on the occaſion, which was moſtly unintelligible, but ſeemed to relate to the affair that had brought us into the field. A large hog was ſhewn to us at the ſame time, but inſtead of being preſented, it was led off again. From hence we reached the ſea-ſhore oppoſite the ſhip about noon, and then fired our muſkets in platoons over the ſea. This manœuvre ſurpriſed the natives prodigiouſly, as it convinced them that we could keep up a conſtant fire, of which they had no idea before, and ſhewed them to what vaſt diſtances our balls could be projected. Thus ended our warlike expedition, to the wiſh of a few individuals amongſt us, who had too great an affection for all their brethren, to deſire their deſtruction. It was not ſo ſatisfactory to others, who, inured to the horrid ſcenes of war and bloodſhed, had acquired, by force of habit, a deteſtable eagerneſs to try their ſkill in ſhooting at men, rather than at a mark!

We ſaw but few natives about the ſhip all the next afternoon; ſome fruit was however exchanged for ſmall nails. Our friends viſited us the next morning, with many preſents of different ſorts. One of them, a chief, named Mo-

rurua,

rurua, had ſingled out my father as his friend, and came with his wife and family to ſee us. Several articles were diſtributed to them, in return for thoſe which the chief had brought; but he thought our preſent ſo much more valuable than his, that he ſeemed quite enchanted, and his eyes with peculiar eloquence expreſſed a lively ſenſe of gratitude. He returned therefore to us again the next morning, when we were getting under ſail, and after loading us with new preſents, diſſolved in tears at parting. 1774. MAY. Monday 23.

We left the three friends of Mahine on this iſland, but had taken on board another native, who was ſent from Oree with a meſſage to O-Poonee, the king of Borabora. This ambaſſador appeared to be a very ſtupid fellow; we could not however dive into the ſecret of his miſſion, nor were any of us ſolicitous about it. His name was Hurree-hurree, which, in its Engliſh acceptation, ſeemed to be remarkably well choſen for a meſſenger.

The next day before noon we anchored in the entrance of Hamaneno harbour, on the iſland of Raietea, and ſpent the reſt of the day, till after ſun-ſet, in warping the ſhip into the baſon. The chief O-Rea came on board, and ſeemed highly delighted with our return. The appearance of Mahine and Hurree doubtleſs ſtrengthened his good opinion of us, and inſpired all his people with confidence. We went on ſhore to his houſe with captain Cook the next morning, and were met by his wife and his daughter Poyadua. The wife Tueſday 24. Wedneſd. 25.

1774. MAY. wife cut her head with a ſhark's tooth, and received the blood on a bit of cloth; and both wept and ſobbed aloud together for ſome time. However when they had concluded this ceremony, they were as merry as if nothing had happened. We were confined to his houſe by heavy ſhowers of rain till noon, when we returned to the ſhip, which was now brought into a narrow creek, where ſhe lay cloſe to the ſhore, for the convenience of watering.

We walked along this creek in the afternoon, as far as the intermittent ſhowers would permit. The ſhore was lined with innumerable canoes, whilſt every houſe and ſhed was crouded with people, many of whom were preparing large and luxurious dinners, from heaps of proviſions which were every where accumulated. We were told that a peculiar ſociety or order of perſons of both ſexes, named Arreoy, exiſted in theſe iſlands; and that they aſſembled at times from all parts, and travelled through all the iſlands, feaſting and carouſing to exceſs. During the time we lay at Huahine, we had obſerved no leſs than ſeventy canoes, with more than ſeven hundred of theſe arreoys on board, croſſing over to Raietea in one morning. We were told that they had ſpent a few days on the eaſt ſide of the iſland, and were arrived on its weſtern ſhore only a day or two before us. We took notice that they were all perſons of ſome conſequence, and of the race of chiefs. Some of the men were punctured in large broad blotches; and Mahine aſſured us, theſe

theſe were the moſt eminent members of the ſociety, and that the more they were covered with punctures, the higher was their rank. They were in general ſtout and well made, and all profeſſed themſelves warriors. Mahine had a very high veneration for this ſociety, and told us he himſelf was a member. They are united by the ties of reciprocal friendſhip, and exerciſe hoſpitality towards each other in its greateſt latitude. As ſoon as an arreoy viſits another, though he were unknown to him, he is ſure to have his wants ſupplied, and his deſires gratified; he is introduced to other members of the order, and they vie with each other in loading him with careſſes and preſents. It was to this principle that Mahine aſcribed all the pleaſures which he had enjoyed at Taheitee. The firſt people who ſaw him on board were arreoys according to his account, and in that quality made him a preſent of their garments, ſince he had no other than European cloaths. It appears, that one or more perſons of each little family of chiefs enter into this community, of which the invariable and fundamental character is, that none of its members are permitted to have any children. From the accounts of the moſt intelligent among the natives, we have great room to ſuppoſe, that the original inſtitution required their living in perpetual celibacy. As this law was too repugnant to the impulſes of nature, which muſt be uncommonly ſtrong in their climate, they ſoon tranſgreſſed it; but preſerved the intention of the

1774. MAY.

1774. MAY. preſcribed abſtinence, by ſuffocating their unfortunate offſpring immediately after birth.

The arreoys enjoy ſeveral privileges, and are greatly reſpected throughout the Society Iſlands and Taheitee; nay, they claim a great ſhare of honour from the very circumſtance of being childleſs. Tupaya, when he heard that the king of England had a numerous offspring, declared he thought himſelf much greater, becauſe he belonged to the arreoys*. In moſt other countries the name of a parent gives honour and reſpect; but when an arreoy, at Taheitee, emphatically beſtows it, it is meant as a term of contempt and reproach. The arreoys keep great meetings at ſtated times, travelling from one iſland to another. They feaſt on the choiceſt vegetables, and on plenty of pork, dog's fleſh, fiſh, and poultry, which is liberally furniſhed by the towtows, or lower claſs, for their entertainment. The pepper-root drink is prepared and ſwallowed in ſurpriſing quantities on theſe occaſions. Wherever they go, the train of ſenſual pleaſure waits upon them. They are amuſed with muſic and dances, which are ſaid to be particularly laſcivious at night, when no other ſpectators beſides themſelves are admitted.

In a country ſo far emerged from barbariſm as Taheitee, it cannot be ſuppoſed that a ſociety would have maintained

* This anecdote I have heard from captain Cook in converſation.

itſelf

itſelf to the preſent time, which appears ſo injurious to the reſt of the nation, unleſs its advantages were ſo conſiderable, as to require its continuance. Two reaſons ſeem to favour the exiſtence of arreoys, and both are in ſome meaſure connected together. The firſt appears to be the neceſſity of entertaining a body of warriors, to defend their fellow-citizens from the invaſions and depredations of enemies. This is confirmed by the circumſtance, that all the arreoys are warriors; but as love might be ſuppoſed to enervate them, they were reſtrained to that celibacy, which they have ſince found it too difficult to obſerve. The ſecond reaſon for the aſſociation of the arreoys, ſeems to be to prevent the too rapid propagation of the race of chiefs. An intelligent man, who perhaps was once the law-giver of Taheitee, might foreſee, that the common people would at length groan under the yoke of this numerous and ever-multiplying breed of petty-tyrants *. To oblige a part of them to a ſingle life, was the ſhorteſt means of obtaining this end; but certain glaring advantages were to be held out, to make them ſubmit without reluctance to ſuch a reſtraint. From hence we may derive that high eſteem with which the whole nation honours the order of arreoy; and likewiſe account for their authority, and for their gluttony in eating, which has been the privilege of warriors in every country,

1774. MAY.

* See vol. I. p. 367.

1774. MAY. before they became the tools of tyranny. When the arreoys had once ſo far departed from the laws of their firſt inſtitution, as to admit the commerce with the ſex, it is eaſy to conceive, that, by inſenſible degrees, they have almoſt wholly loſt the original chaſte and ſober ſpirit of the order. They are at preſent, without doubt, the moſt luxurious ſet of people in the iſland; though I have not found the leaſt reaſon to charge them with a refinement in voluptuouſneſs, which is at once improbable, and inconſiſtent with the tenderneſs of the whole people. We have been told a wanton tale of promiſcuous embraces, where every woman is common to every man: but when we enquired for a confirmation of this ſtory from the natives, we were ſoon convinced that it muſt, like many others, be conſidered as the groundleſs invention of a traveller's gay fancy.

Some arreoys are married to a woman, in the ſame manner as Mahine was to the daughter of Toperree *; but others keep a temporary miſtreſs. Many may perhaps revel in the arms of ſeveral proſtitutes, which are to be met with in all the iſlands. This diſſolute pleaſure is however much more frequent in every civilized country of Europe; but I apprehend it would not authoriſe an aſſertion, that in Europe there exiſts a ſociety of men and women, who prac-

* See page 89.

tiſe

tiſe a particular refinement of ſenſuality *. When we conſider the whole character of the Taheitians; when we recollect their gentleneſs, their generoſity, their affectionate friendſhip, their tenderneſs, their pity, we cannot reconcile theſe qualities to the murder of their own offspring. We ſhudder at the ſtern inhumanity of the father, but much more ſo at the obdurate heart of the mother, where the voice of nature, and of powerful inſtinct, ſhould cry aloud for mercy and protection. The paths of virtue are but too eaſily forſaken; ſtill we are at a loſs to conceive, how a people ſo much left to nature, could arrive at ſuch a deteſtable pitch of depravity: but cuſtom, 1774. MAY.

> That monſter cuſtom, who all ſenſe doth eat
> Of habits evil———— SHAKESPEARE.

gradually blunts every feeling, and overcomes the ſtings of remorſe. We had no ſooner learnt that ſuch an unnatural and barbarous practice ſtigmatized the ſociety of arreoy, than we reprehended our young friend Mahine for valuing himſelf on being a member of ſuch a deteſtable body. We endeavoured to point out the immorality and cruelty of this practice, and made uſe of every argument which our reflections could furniſh, or our words expreſs. We eaſily ſucceeded in convincing him, and obtained a promiſe that he would not kill his children, but ſeparate from the ſociety

* See Hawkeſworth, vol. II. p. 207, &c.

1774. MAY. ciety as ſoon as he ſhould receive the glorious name of father. To our great ſatisfaction he aſſured us, that the inſtances of arreoys having children were extremely rare. It ſeems that they chooſe their wives and miſtreſſes among the proſtitutes; and from this circumſtance, as well as from their great voluptuouſneſs, they have ſeldom reaſon to dread the intruſion of an unfortunate infant. The anſwers of O-Maï, whom I conſulted on this ſubject after my return to England, gave me ſtill greater pleaſure, as they ſoftened the tranſgreſſion at leaſt of one part, and entirely freed the bulk of the nation from that ſhare of guilt, which the ſimple acquieſcence in ſuch a heinous crime might throw upon them. He aſſured me, that the invariable laws of the community of arreoy required the extinction of their offspring; that the pre-eminence and advantages which a man enjoyed as arreoy were ſo valuable, as to urge him on againſt his own feelings; that the mother was never willing to conſent to the horrid murder, but that her huſband and other arreoys perſuaded her to yield up the child; and that when entreaties were not ſufficient, force was ſometimes employed. But above all, he added, that this act was always performed in ſecret, and ſo that none of the people, not even the towtows or attendants of the houſe, were preſent; becauſe, if it were ſeen, the murderers muſt be put to death. This being the caſe, we may comfort ourſelves with the reflection, that criminal individuals are not more numerous

in

in the Society Iſlands, than among other people; and that the votaries of vice have no reaſon to triumph, in ſuppoſing a whole nation accuſtomed to commit unnatural murders, without a ſenſe of wrong *. 1774. MAY.

The arreoys were no leſs hoſpitable than luxurious, and it was not for want of invitation that we did not partake of their refreſhments. We rambled in the country till ſunſet, and then returned to the ſhip, which Mahine, the woman, and the other Indian paſſengers had now left. The next morning a great number of natives came to the ſhip in their canoes, among whom were many women, who remained with the ſailors. At Huahine the commerce of this kind had been very inconſiderable, and chiefly confined to women who were only on a viſit to that iſland; it was therefore reſumed here with the greateſt eagerneſs by our crew. We paſſed the day on an excurſion to the northward, where we ſhot ſeveral wild ducks, and met with a hoſpitable reception in different cottages. Thurſday 26.

The next was a fine day, delightfully tempered by a ſtrong eaſterly gale. We received the viſits of Orea and all

* Depravity is much more at home in our poliſhed climate, and I muſt here mention an inſtance which ſtains ſociety with indelible diſhonour. In the metropolis of England there are wretches, who publicly declare their ſkill, and offer their ſervices, to procure abortion. (See an advertiſement to that effect in a public paper, No. 1322, for Wedneſday, January 15, 1777.) They are ſuffered with impunity to make a trade of deſtroying human beings in the womb. Such is the ſalutary conſequence of lenity towards the murderers of innocent babes!

his

1773. MAY. his family, of Boba, the viceroy of the iſland of O-Tahà, and of Teïna, the fair dancing-woman, whoſe picture Mr. Hodges had formerly attempted to draw *. Boba was a tall, handſome young man, a native of Borabora, related to Poonee, the king of that iſland, and conqueror of Raietea and Tahà. Mahine has frequently told us, that he is deſtined to be the ſucceſſor of O-Poone, whoſe only daughter Maïwherua, ſaid to be a young beautiful princeſs, twelve years old, he is to marry. Boba was at preſent an arreoy, and kept the lively Teïna as his miſtreſs, who was with child in conſequence. We entered into converſation with her on the cuſtom of killing the offspring of an arreoy. The ſhort dialogue which paſſed between us was couched in the moſt ſimple expreſſions, becauſe we had not ſufficient knowledge of the language to diſcourſe of abſtract ideas. For the ſame reaſon all our rhetoric was exhauſted in a few moments, and had no other effect, than to draw the following conceſſion from Teïna-maï: "that our eatua (deity) in England might perhaps be offended by the practice of the arreoys; but that her's was not diſpleaſed with it. She promiſed, however, if we would come from England to fetch her child, ſhe might perhaps keep it alive, provided we gave her a hatchet, a ſhirt, and ſome red feathers." This was ſaid in ſuch a laughing tone, that we

* See vol. I. p. 402. and the plate in captain Cook's account of this voyage, which is engraved from Mr. Hodges's drawing.

had

had not the leaſt room to believe her in earneſt. It was in vain to attempt to continue the converſation, ſince a variety of objects diverted her attention: it was a wonder indeed that ſhe had lent an ear to our queſtions ſo long. 1774. MAY.

In the afternoon we went aſhore, to ſee a dramatic dance performed by Orea's daughter Poyadua, and found a great number of inhabitants aſſembled at the play-houſe; this diverſion being admired by all ranks of the people. Poyadua diſplayed her agility as uſual, and received great applauſe from the European ſpectators. The interludes performed by the men were ſomething different from thoſe we had ſeen before. We could plainly underſtand the name of captain Cook, and of ſeveral of our ſhipmates, mentioned in their ſongs, and they ſeemed to repreſent a theft committed by their people. Another of the interludes was the invaſion of the Borabora men, which they expreſſed by beating one another with a thong or whip, which made a very loud ſmack. But ſtill another was more curious than all the reſt: it repreſented a woman in labour, and provoked immoderate peals of laughter from the multitude. The man who acted this part went through the geſtures, which the Greeks were wont to admire in the groves of Venus-Ariadne, near Amathus, where the ſame ceremony was acted on the ſecond day of the month Gorpiœus, in memory of Ariadne, who died in child-bed *. Thus it ap-

* Vide Plutarch. in Theſeo.

1774. MAY. pears, that there is ſcarcely a practice, though ever ſo ridiculous, exiſting in any corner of the world, that has not been hit upon by the extravagant fancy of men in ſome other region. A tall ſtout fellow, dreſſed in cloth, perſonated the new born infant in ſuch a ludicrous ſtyle, that we could not refuſe joining in the plaudits which his countrymen beſtowed upon him. Anatomiſts and midwives would have been ſurpriſed to obſerve, that this overgrown babe had every neceſſary character of a child newly born; but the natives were particularly delighted with his running about the ſtage, whilſt the reſt of the dancers endeavoured to catch him. The ladies were much pleaſed with this ſcene, which, according to the ſimplicity of their ideas, had not the leaſt indecency; they looked on, therefore, unconcernedly, and were not obliged, like ſome European dames, to peep through their fans.

Saturday 28. The next morning we travelled along the ſhore to the ſouthward, and met with a very fertile country, and hoſpitable people. We came early to a large building of ſtone, which was called Maraï no Parua, Parua's burying-place. I have already mentioned that this name was likewiſe given to Tupaya, who went in the Endeavour; but I am doubtful whether the burying-place relates to Tupaya, ſince it generally bears the appellation of ſome living chief. Indeed it is not improbable that another Parua might be alive on the iſland, after whom the maraï was named, eſpecially

pecially as all the natives in the neighbourhood ſtrenuouſly afſerted, that this Parua was an aree, which was not always allowed of Tupaya. This monument was ſixty yards long, and five wide; the walls were made of large ſtones, and about ſix or eight feet high. We climbed over, and found the ſpace within covered with a heap of ſmall coral ſtones. 1774. MAY.

From thence we walked on ſeveral miles, till we arrived at a ſpacious bay, where three little iſlands lie within the reef. The country round this bay was ſwampy, and well ſtocked with ducks. Here we paſſed ſome time in ſhooting, and then embarked in two ſmall canoes, and were ſafely landed at one of the little iſlands. We found a few coco palms and ſhrubs, but no fruit-trees upon it; and there was only a ſingle fiſherman's hut, containing ſome nets, and other fiſhing-tackle. We returned very ſoon to the main ſhore, having found no ſhells, though the hope of meeting with ſome had principally induced us to croſs the water. We dined with a native who had invited us, and returned to the ſhip in a canoe about ſun-ſet. The chief Orea had dined on board with captain Cook during our abſence, and had drank about a bottle of wine, without appearing in the leaſt intoxicated. He had however, as uſual, been extremely facetious, and had converſed chiefly of the countries which we had lately viſited, and of which he had received an account from his countryman Mahine. After being ſatisfied in regard to many particulars, he ſaid, that

1774. MAY. though we had ſeen a great deal, he would tell us of an iſland which we had not met with in our voyages. "It lies," ſaid he, "but a few days ſail from hence, but it is inhabited by a monſtrous race of giants, as tall as the main-maſt, and as thick about the middle as the drum-head of the capſtan. They are very good-natured people, but if they are ever incenſed againſt any body, they take him up, and throw him as far into the ſea as I would throw a ſtone. If you ſhould happen to come there with your ſhip, they would perhaps wade up to it, and carry it aſhore on their backs." He added ſeveral other ludicrous circumſtances, and concluded with telling us the name of the iſland, Mirro-mirro, in order to give greater weight to his aſſertion. It appeared evidently to us, that his whole ſtory was a fine piece of irony, directed againſt thoſe parts of our narrative which he did not believe, and of which he could have no conception. We admired the witty humour which was ſo conſpicuous in this little flight of fancy, and with M. de Bougainville looked up to its great ſource, the affluence of the country, which produces contentment and pleaſure *.

Sunday 29. During the next night ſome of the natives ſtole the rudders, grapnels, and boat-hooks belonging to our boats, which were faſtened to the buoy. As ſoon as this theft was diſcovered in the morning, the captain acquainted Orea

* See his Voyage round the World, Engliſh ed. p. 257.

with

with it, who immediately embarked with him in a boat, and rowed ſeveral miles to the ſouthward. In about an hour's time they landed, and almoſt all the ſtolen articles being returned to our people, they came back to the ſhip entirely ſatisfied. I had been on ſhore in the creek during this time, and ſaw a heeva, or dance, performed by two little girls; but their dreſs was not ſo grand, and their action much inferior to that of Poyadua. The tamow, or head-dreſs of plaited hair, was not laid like a turban, but formed ſeveral large locks, which had a pretty effect, and reſembled in ſome meaſure the high heads of our modern ladies. 1774. MAY.

In the afternoon Poyadua performed a dance; and as if ſhe meant to outſhine the other actreſſes, ſhe had ornamented her dreſs more than uſual, and wore a great quantity of various ſorts of European beads. Her wonderful agility, the graceful motion of her arms, and the quick vibration of her fingers, were as much admired there by the natives, as we applaud them in our dancers; and ſince all theſe accompliſhments are taught in the South Sea iſlands by nature only, it muſt be confeſſed that Poyadua deſerved the encomiums which all the ſpectators beſtowed upon her. The inhabitants were particularly delighted with the extraordinary contortions into which ſhe ſcrewed her mouth; though we were ſo little of their mind, that we could not help thinking them horridly frightful.

The

1774. MAY. The meeting of the arreoys gave riſe to theſe frequent dramatic entertainments; their preſence ſeemed to enliven the whole country, and to inſpire all the people with extraordinary cheerfulneſs. They frequently ſhifted their garments, made of their beſt kinds of cloth; they paſſed their time in luxurious idleneſs, perfuming their hair with fragrant oils, ſinging and playing on the flute, and paſſing from one entertainment to another; in ſhort, they enjoyed the bleſſings of their iſlands in the utmoſt extent; and ſo much reſembled the happy indolent people whom Ulyſſes found in Phæacia, that they could apply the poet's lines to themſelves with peculiar propriety:

> To dreſs, to dance, to ſing, our ſole delight,
> The feaſt or bath by day, and love by night. POPE'S Homer.

Our friend Mahine was perhaps the only perſon among the nobility who did not enjoy that great degree of happineſs which ſo viſibly reigned among the reſt. He was not received with thoſe diſtinguiſhing marks of favour which had been laviſhed upon him at Taheitee; for it ſeems, even in the South Seas, a man is no where leſs eſteemed than in his own country. All his relations, who were extremely numerous, expected preſents as their due; whilſt at Taheitee his liberality made him friends, and procured him great advantages. As long as the generous youth had ſome of thoſe riches left, which he had collected at the peril

peril of his life, on our dangerous and diſmal cruize, he was perpetually importuned to ſhare them out; and though he freely diſtributed all he had, ſome of his acquaintances complained that he was niggardly. He was ſoon reduced to beg a ſupply of European wares from his friends on board, having only ſaved a few red feathers, and ſome other curioſities, as a preſent for O-Poonee, the king of Borabora, to whom he was related. Under theſe diſagreeable circumſtances, he longed to return to Taheitee, and told us he was reſolved to ſettle there, as ſoon as he ſhould have viſited Poonee, and his other relations at Borabora. He would willingly have embarked with us again for England, if we had given him the leaſt hope of returning to the South Sea; but captain Cook having told him, that no ſhip would ever be ſent to his iſlands again, he deprived himſelf of the pleaſure of ſeeing our country, rather than part for ever from his native groves. When we reflect on the fate of his countryman, O-Maï, we have ſome reaſon to think this determination fortunate for his heart and morals. The ſplendour of England remains unknown to him; but at the ſame time he has no idea of thoſe enormities which diſgrace the opulent capitals of the world. 1774. MAY.

After the dance was over, Mahine invited us to the diſtrict in which his lands were ſituated. He had frequently told us, that he had poſſeſſions in this iſland; but as ſome of our people had doubted of his veracity, he was glad to take

1774. MAY. Monday 30.

take an opportunity of juſtifying himſelf. The next morning therefore, at day break, we ſet off in two boats, and taking on board Orea and all his family, we arrived, after two hours ſail, at Wharai-te-Vah, a diſtrict at the north-eaſt end of the iſland. We were welcomed by Mahine and two of his elder brothers, and conducted to a ſpacious houſe. A fire was immediately made in a hole in the ground, and ſome large ſtones heated. With the ſame preparations, which are already deſcribed by captain Cook in his former voyage *, a large hog was killed, cleaned, wrapped in freſh leaves, and put into the hole or oven, and covered with hot ſtones and a heap of earth. Whilſt it continued to be ſtewed there, with a quantity of fruit, my father, with Dr. Sparrman and myſelf, went up the neighbouring hills, where we found nothing new, though we were at leaſt ſeven or eight miles from our ſhip. After a walk of two hours we returned, and in a ſhort time our dinner was ſerved up on green leaves. The fat of the entrails, together with the blood, had been wrapped up ſeparately in a few leaves, and the fatteſt chiefs and arreoys in company immediately ſeized upon, and ſwallowed them by handfuls. The reſt dined with an uncommon degree of voracity; whilſt a great croud of towtows, with their greedy looks, devoured the feaſt, of which they did not taſte

* See Hawkeſworth, vol. II. p. 152.

a ſingle

a ſingle morſel. Some ſhare of the pork was given to Orea's wife and daughter, who carefully wrapped it up, in order to eat it apart. Thus it ſeems, that though the hog was wholly dreſſed, prepared, and diſtributed by men, yet this did not make it improper for the women to partake of it. At other times, it appears, that different perſons cannot eat what has been touched by one or other of the ſame family*; we are therefore unable to conceive by what rule their cuſtom of eating ſeparately is conducted. The Taheitians are not the only people who do not eat with their women; ſeveral nations of negroes, and even the natives of Labrador, have adopted the ſame idea. From the general conduct of theſe African and Eſkimaux tribes, an unnatural contempt for the ſex appears to be their motive for this unſociable cuſtom. But as the Taheitian women are very kindly treated, and highly eſteemed by the men, the cuſtom muſt have ſome other origin among them, which a connected ſeries of accurate obſervations may perhaps in time lead us to diſcover. 1774. MAY.

The captain had taken with him a few bottles of brandy, which, mixed with water, makes the favourite liquor of ſailors, called grog. The arreoys and ſome other chiefs, finding it ſtrong, and almoſt as nauſeous as their pepper-root drink, drank very freely of it, and afterwards took

* See Hawkeſworth, vol. II.

1774. MAY. ſome ſmall cups of pure brandy, which they reliſhed ſo well, and repeated ſo often, that they were ſoon obliged to lie down to ſleep. We returned to the ſhip about five o'clock in the afternoon; and the day being remarkably warm, we went aſhore to bathe in a beautiful fountain, which we had conſtantly made uſe of for that purpoſe during our ſtay. A fragrant ſhrubbery hung round it, ſcreening from the ſun the water, which was temperately cool, and perfectly limpid. We found the uſe of this bath extremely refreſhing; and the natives had probably experienced the ſame effect, as they conſtantly reſorted to it every morning and evening. Such pleaſing ſpots are frequent in theſe iſlands; they contribute greatly to their embelliſhment, and without doubt, are inſtrumental in preſerving the health of the inhabitants.

We paſſed the next days in various excurſions towards the hills, where we collected a few plants, which we had not met with before. Theſe hills exactly reſembled thoſe of Taheitee, but were ſomewhat lower. We found a romantic valley between them, ſurrounded by a foreſt of various trees and ſhrubs, and furniſhed with a beautiful rivulet, which fell in many caſcades over broken rocks and precipices.

JUNE. Thurſday 2. On our returning from our laſt walk, we received a very intereſting piece of intelligence from the natives. One of them, juſt arrived from the iſland Huahine, told us that two

two ſhips lay at anchor there, one of them conſiderably larger than ours, but the other about the ſame ſize. Captain Cook called the man into his cabin, where he repeated the ſame ſtory to us, and confirmed it, by aſſerting that he had been on board the leſſer ſhip, and had been made drunk there. We enquired for the names of the captains, and he tolds that of the greater ſhip was Tabane, and the other Tonno. Theſe were the names by which the natives deſigned Mr. Banks and captain Furneaux. Captain Cook was therefore ſurpriſed to hear them named, and enquired of what ſtature theſe perſons were. The native very readily told us, that the one whom he called Tabane was a tall man, but the other conſiderably leſs. This anſwer correſponded extremely well with truth; but as it was very improbable that captain Furneaux would remain at Huahine, after hearing that his ſenior officer lay ſo near him, we concluded that the ſhips muſt belong to ſome other nation. At our return to the Cape of Good Hope, we heard that captain Furneaux had ſailed from that ſettlement long before the time when he was ſuppoſed to be at Huahine, and that Mr. Banks had not left Europe. We have ſince learnt that M. St. Denis, a French navigator, has been in the South Seas at the time in queſtion with two ſhips. 1774. JUNE.

The chief, O-Rea, at firſt confirmed this news, but afterwards ſuſpecting that it might haſten our departure, he

1774. JUNE. was unwilling to give his opinion, and ſeeming to doubt of the truth of the report, always abruptly changed the ſubject of converſation, with all the art of an European politician.

The next day the natives came in great numbers to the ſhip with abundance of proviſions, which they ſold very Friday 3. cheap, as captain Cook propoſed to ſail the next day. His ſtore of hatchets and knives had been expended long ago; our armourer was therefore ſet to work to make new ones, which were ill-ſhapen, and of very little worth, particularly the knives, which were made of pieces of iron hoops. The natives were contented with them, not knowing how to diſtinguiſh the good from the bad by the eye. They ſometimes picked our pockets, or ſtole what we did not ſufficiently look after; but their ſimplicity now gave room for a ſevere retaliation.

Among the natives of the Society Iſlands there are a few men who preſerve the national traditions, together with all their ideas of mythology and aſtronomy. Mahine, whilſt we were at ſea, had frequently ſpoken of them as the moſt learned of his countrymen, and named them Tata-o-Rerro, which we would expreſs by *teachers*. After much enquiry, we found a chief, named Tootavaï, in the diſtrict of Hamaneno, who was diſtinguiſhed by this epithet. As our departure was ſo near at hand, we regretted that we had not known

known him ſooner; but my father determined to employ his remaining time in making enquiries on a ſubject ſo intereſting as the hiſtory of religious opinions. 1774. JUNE.

Tootavaï was pleaſed with an opportunity of diſplaying his knowledge; he was flattered with the attention which we paid to his words, and therefore continued to converſe on the ſame ſubject with much greater patience and perſeverance, than we could have expected from a lively inhabitant of theſe iſlands. The religion of the iſlanders appears to be as ſingular a ſyſtem of polytheiſm as ever was invented. Few nations are ſo wretched, and ſo wholly occupied with the means of preſerving their exiſtence, as to lay aſide all ideas of a creator. Theſe ideas rather ſeem to have remained traditionally among mankind, ever ſince the firſt ages, when the Deity revealed himſelf. Agreeably to this opinion, the people of Taheitee and the Society Iſlands have preſerved this ſpark of divine inſtruction, and believe the exiſtence of a Supreme Being, the maker and progenitor of all things, viſible and inviſible. It has been the fate of moſt nations to inveſtigate more or leſs the qualities of this univerſal and incomprehenſible ſpirit, and to adopt abſurdities, by overſtepping the bounds preſcribed by the Creator himſelf to our ſenſes and mental faculties. The different attributes of the Deity were ſoon perſonified by narrow minds, which could not contain the vaſt idea of

ſu-

1774. JUNE. ſupreme perfection. Gods and goddeſſes then became innumerable, and one error ſtill gave birth to many more. Man, in the courſe of education, received from his father the knowledge of a God; and a ſpontaneous principle within him cheriſhed this idea. Population encreaſed, the diſtinctions of ranks took place, and proportionately influenced the gratification of the ſenſes. In every ſociety, ſome individual or other took advantage of the general propenſity to adore, endeavoured to captivate the judgment of the multitude, and by miſrepreſenting and ſeparating the qualities of the Almighty, converted the filial affection of mankind towards their benefactor into a jealous dread of his anger. At the Society Iſlands I apprehend this to be the caſe: they adore divinities of all ſorts and qualities; but what is moſt ſingular, every iſland has a ſeparate theogony. This will appear more clearly by comparing the following account with the obſervations on their religion in captain Cook's firſt voyage *. Tootavài began with telling us, that in every iſland of this group, they gave the ſupreme God, creator of earth and ſkies, a different name; or, to expreſs it more clearly, that in every iſland they believe a different deity, though always one of thoſe which are known to them all, to hold the firſt rank. Thus at Taheitee and Eimeo, they ſay the Supreme Being is O-Rooa-

* See Hawkeſworth, vol. II. p. 237, &c.

hattoo;

hattoo; at Huahine they maintain that it is Tanè; at Raietea, O Roò; at O-Tahà, Orra; at Bolabola, Taoòtoo; at Mowrua, O-Too; and at Tabbooa-mannoo (Sir Charles Saunders's Iſland) Taròä. Thirteen divinities preſide over the ſea, and govern it; viz. 1. Ooroohàddoo. 2. Tama-ooee-3. Ta-apèe. 4. O-Tooareeònoo. 5. Tanèea. 6. Tahoumeònna. 7. Otà-mauwe. 8. O-Whaï. 9. O-Whàtta. 10. Tahòoa. 11. Te-ootya. 12. O-Mahooroo. 13. O-Whàddoo. But notwithſtanding all theſe governors, a different divinity, Oo-marrèo, is ſaid to have created the ſea. The ſame caſe exiſts with regard to the ſun, which was created by O-Maùwee, a powerful god, who cauſes earthquakes. The divinity which reſides in, and governs the ſun, is called Tootòomo-hororìrree. They have ventured to attribute to this deity a beautiful human form, whoſe hair deſcends down to his feet. They aſſert, that the deceaſed go thither to dwell with him, and are continually feaſted there with bread-fruit and pork, which need no preparation from the fire. They believe every man to have a ſeparate being within him, named Tee, which acts in conſequence of the impreſſion of the ſenſes, and combines ideas into thoughts *. This being, which we would call the ſoul, exiſts after death, and lodges in the wooden images, which are placed round the burying-places, and

1774. JUNE.

* The natives call thoughts *paroù no te oboo*, which literally ſignify *words in the belly*.

which

1774. JUNE. which are called by the ſame name, tee. Thus the belief of a future exiſtence, and that of the combination of matter and ſpirit, have reached the remoteſt iſlands of the earth. Whether they have any idea of rewards and puniſhments in a future ſtate, we could not learn; but it is moſt reaſonable to ſuppoſe that ſuch ideas have occurred to a nation ſo far advanced as the Taheitians. The moon was created by a female divinity, named O-Heenna, who likewiſe governs that planet, and reſides in its black ſpot or cloud. The women ſing a ſhort couplet, which ſeems to be an act of adoration paid to that divinity, perhaps becauſe they ſuppoſe her to have ſome influence upon their phyſical œconomy.

Te-Oòwa no te Màlama,
Te-òowa te heenàrro.

The cloud within the moon,
That cloud I love!———

We may venture to ſuppoſe, that the Taheitian goddeſs of the moon is not the chaſte Diana of the ancients, but rather the Phœnician Aſtarte. The ſtars were created by a goddeſs called Tettoo-mataròu, and the winds are governed by the god Orree-òrree.

Beſides theſe greater divinities, they have a conſiderable number of inferior orders, ſome of whom are ſaid to be miſchievous, and to kill men in their ſleep. They are worſhipped publicly at the principal maraïs, or monuments of

of ſtone, by the Tahowa-rahaï, or high-prieſt of the iſland. 1774. JUNE.
The beneficent gods are addreſſed in prayers, which are not pronounced aloud, but are diſtinguiſhed and made known only by the motion of the lips. The prieſt looks up to the ſkies, and the eatua, or god, is ſuppoſed to come down and hold converſe with him, unſeen by all the people, and heard by none but the prieſt himſelf. Surely this is an evident mark of the influence of prieſtcraft, whoſe great aim is ever to veil religion in myſtery. From a principle directly oppoſite to this, the Chriſtian doctrine derives one of thoſe inconteſtible characters of a divine origin, which diſtinguiſh it from all the deceitful inventions of human underſtanding, and carry perſuaſion to the mind. This religion does not wear the myſterious cloak, which can only ſerve to cover darkneſs, but appears to us diveſted of all kinds of trappings, and throws a pure and ſteady light around. It admits of no myſtery, and its true and venerable miniſters have at all times aſſured and convinced us, that they reſerved no private knowledge for themſelves, which was not communicated to the meaneſt of thoſe who bow the knee to their pure and divine Creator; "for all ſhall know him, from the leaſt to the greateſt." Hebr. viii. 11.

Offerings are made to the gods, of hogs and poultry roaſted, and of all kinds of eatables; but the inferior, and particularly the malevolent ſpirits, are only revered by a kind of hiſſing. Some of theſe ſpirits are ſaid to come into the houſes of the

1774. JUNE. natives at night, and to kill them; others are ſaid to inhabit a certain deſerted iſland named Mannua, where they are viſible in the ſhape of ſtrong, tall men, with fiery eyes, and devour thoſe who happen to approach their coaſt: but this rather alludes to the anthropophagy, which, as I have before obſerved, ſeems to have exiſted at theſe iſlands, previous to their preſent ſtate of civilization. A number of plants are particularly ſacred to the deities. The caſuarina, the coco-palm, and the banana, are frequently planted near maraïs, or public places of worſhip. A ſpecies of *cratæva*, a ſort of pepper, the *hibiſcus populneus*, the *dracæna terminalis*, and the *calophyllum*, are all found in the ſame places, and are alike conſidered as ſigns of peace and friendſhip. Some birds, ſuch as a ſpecies of heron, king's-fiſher, and cuckoo, are alſo conſecrated to the deity; but I have already mentioned, that they are not held in equal veneration by all the people; and it is alſo to be obſerved, that different iſlands protect different birds.

The prieſts of theſe iſlands continue in office during their life, and their dignity is hereditary. The high-prieſt of every iſland is always an aree, who has the higheſt rank after the king. They are conſulted upon many important occaſions, partake largely of the good things of the country, and in ſhort have found means to make themſelves neceſſary. Beſides the prieſts, there is alſo in every diſtrict one or two teachers, or tata-o-rerro, like Tootavaï, who are ſkilled in theogony

theogony and coſmogony, and at certain times inſtruct the people in theſe things. The ſame perſons likewiſe preſerve the knowledge of geography, together with their ideas of aſtronomy and the diviſion of time. They have the names of fourteen lunar months, in the following order: 1. O-Pororo-moòa. 2. O-Pororo-mooree. 3. Moorehàh. 4. Oohee-eiya. 5. O-Whirre-ammà. 6. Taòwa. 7. O-Whirre-erre-erre. 8. O-Tearree. 9. Ote-tàï. 10. Wàrehoo. 11. Wàhou. 12. Pippirree. 13. E-Oonoònoo. 14. Oomannoo. The firſt ſeven months collectively are called Ooroo, or a bread-fruit ſeaſon; but in what manner they arrange theſe months, in order to effect a complete cycle or a year, is a myſtery to us at preſent. It ſhould ſeem that ſome of the months, eſpecially the ſecond and ſeventh, are intercalary, from the reſemblance of their names to thoſe of the firſt and fifth, and that they are inſerted in different years. Each of the lunations conſiſts of twenty-nine days. During the two laſt days of the lunation, they ſay the moon is dead, becauſe it does not appear; it is therefore plain that they begin to count from the moon's firſt appearance, and not from the real time of the conjunction. The twenty-fifth day of the thirteenth moon, E-Oonoonoo, was our third of June, when we obtained this information. 1774. JUNE.

The name of tahowa, which the Taheitians apply to prieſts, is not entirely confined to them, but is alſo given to thoſe perſons who know the virtues of a few plants,

1774. which are uſed as remedies againſt different diſorders. Their medicines are few, and very ſimple, but their diſeaſes are not manifold and complicated.

As ſoon as we had obtained theſe accounts from Tootavaï, the ſhip unmoored, on the fourth of June, about ten in the morning. The king of Raietea, Oo-ooroo, to whom the conqueror O-Poonee had left the title and honour of royalty, viſited us with ſome of his relations, juſt before our departure. O-Rea with his family was likewiſe on board, and Mahine with his relations came to take their leave. The parting ſcene was extremely affecting; all our friends ſhed tears plentifully, but poor Mahine's heart ſeemed torn to pieces by the violence of his grief. He ran from cabin to cabin, and embraced every one of us, without being able to ſpeak a ſingle word. His tears, his ſighs and looks were eloquent beyond deſcription. At laſt the ſhip ſet ſail; he got into his canoe, and continued ſtanding upright, whilſt all his countrymen were ſeated. He looked at us, then hung down his head, and hid it in his garments. When we had cleared the reefs, we ſtill perceived him to wave his extended arms; and he continued his addreſſes till we could no longer diſcern him.

Thus we left an amiable nation, who, with all their imperfections, are perhaps more innocent and pure of heart, than thoſe who are more refined and better inſtructed. Without quoting the example of Mahine, we have often been

been witneſſes to reciprocal acts of kindneſs, which convinced us, that the ſocial virtues are frequently exerciſed amongſt themſelves. I have ſeen a ſingle bread-fruit, or a few coco-nuts ſhared between a number of people, ſo that every one partook of them. I have obſerved them parting with their cloaths, and doing ſeveral charitable actions to each other, with the ſame good-will which they expreſſed towards us. We ſhould indeed be ungrateful, if we did not acknowledge the kindneſs with which they always treated us; they were ready to carry us on their backs in and out of our boats, to prevent the ſurf from wetting our feet; they often loaded themſelves with the curioſities which we had purchaſed; and rarely refuſed to go into the water in queſt of any bird which we had ſhot. If the rain caught us on our excurſions, or the heat of the ſun and the fatigue of the journey oppreſſed us, we were invited to repoſe in their dwellings, and feaſted on their beſt proviſions; our friendly hoſt ſtood at a diſtance, and never taſted any thing till we entreated him; whilſt ſome of the family were employed in fanning us with a leaf, or the bough of a tree. Before we left the houſe we were commonly adopted, according to our different ages, in the quality of fathers, brothers, or ſons. This circumſtance was owing to an opinion that we were all related. The chiefs in all the Society Iſlands are deſcended from the ſame family; our officers, therefore, and all thoſe who dined or meſſed together,

1774. JUNE.

1774. JUNE. gether, were by them conſidered as relations. They ſuppoſed that captain Cook and my father were brothers, purely from this reaſon; for, with all their good heart, they are but indifferent phyſiognomiſts. Their hoſpitality towards us was frequently quite diſintereſted; and gave us a right to form the moſt flattering concluſions in regard to their conduct towards each other. They are hoſpitable without ſeeming to know it; and leave to ſtrangers who viſit them, the pleaſing and grateful taſk of recording their virtues.

CHAP.

1774. JUNE.

CHAP. VIII.

Run from the Society to the Friendly Iſlands.

WE fired a ſalute of ſeveral guns on leaving the iſland of Raietea, in honour of his majeſty's birth day; Saturday 4. and this diſcharge of our artillery afforded no ſmall entertainment to the inhabitants. During the ſix weeks which we had ſpent at Taheitee and the Society Iſlands, we had been well refreſhed, and were perfectly recovered from our bilious and ſcorbutic complaints: a venereal diſorder was, however, the reward of thoſe, that

——with unbaſhful forehead, woo'd
The means of ſickneſs and debility. SHAKESPEARE.

Nearly one half of our crew were afflicted with this nauſeous and ſhameful diſeaſe; though it was in general leſs virulent that in Europe. Our converſations with Mahine on its ravages, gave us the greateſt reaſon to be convinced, that it exiſted at Taheitee and the Society Iſlands previous to captain Wallis's voyage in 1768. Mahine frequently aſſured us, that ſeveral years before that period, his mother died of this diſeaſe at Borabora. Its appearance has therefore been attributed to a wrong cauſe in various parts

1774. JUNE. parts of the world. For the ſpace of near three centuries the Spaniards have been accuſed by phyſicians, and deteſted by moraliſts, for bringing the infection from America, which is now incontrovertibly proved to have begun in Europe, previous to the diſcovery of America *. The Engliſh and French navigators have charged each other with the introduction of this deteſtable diſorder among the harmleſs and hoſpitable Taheitians; though they have long been acquainted with it, and are not ignorant of the art of curing it †. Nay, it ſeems that their ſimple diet, the ſalubrity of their climate, and a long ſpace of time, have abated the acrimony of the *virus*, and brought it to that inactive ſtate to which it is now reduced in South America. I am far from ſuppoſing, that the venereal complaint has been carried to America from Europe; no, the ſame cauſes which could give birth to it in one part of the world, are ſufficient to produce it every where elſe. The commerce of our crews with the women of Tonga Tabboo, and the Marqueſas; nay, their remarkable connections with the ſalacious females of Eaſter Iſland, had no ſiniſter conſequences. It may be inferred from thence, that the infection has not yet broke out at thoſe iſlands, though ſuch inferences are ſometimes

* See Petr. Martyr. ab Angleria Decad. American.—Diſſertation ſur l'Origine de la Maladie Venerienne, par M. Sanchez. Paris, 1752.—Examen hiſtorique ſur l'Apparition de la Maladie Venerienne en Europe. Liſbonne, 1774.—Dr. Hunter, in the Phil. Tranſ. and others.

† See Hawkeſworth, vol. II. p. 233.

fal-

fallacious*; for captain Wallis left Taheitee without having a ſingle venereal patient, though the diſtemper is now proved to have exiſted there before his arrival. It is alſo beyond a doubt, that the New Zeelanders† were afflicted with this diſorder before any Europeans had an intercourſe with them. 1774. JUNE.

We paſſed the iſland of Mowrua in the afternoon, and ſtood to the weſtward with a favourable trade-wind. On the 6th, at eleven in the morning, we deſcried an iſland, which captain Wallis named after lord Howe. It is very low, conſiſting of coral ledges, which encloſe a lagoon; and by its direction, it appears to be the ſame which the natives of the Society Iſlands call Mopeehàh. We found it ſituated in 16° 46′ S. lat. and 154° 8′ W. Several birds, called boobies, were ſeen in the neighbourhood of this little iſle, which was to appearance uninhabited.

The next day at noon the wind ſhifted, and became contrary. During the whole afternoon it thundered and lightned, and we had ſeveral ſmart ſhowers. The night was calm; but we fixed the electric chain at the maſt-head, on account of the ſtrong lightning which ſtill continued. We had ſo faint a breeze, with intervening calms, during the next three days, that we made but ſlow advances. Tropic-birds and noddies viſited us during this time; and Tueſday 7.

* See vol. I. p. 369. † Ibid. p. 239.

1774. JUNE. our crew had the mortification of loſing a great ſhark, after they had hooked and ſhot him with three bullets.

On the 11th, in the morning, the wind freſhened again, and puſhed us on to the W. S. W. for two days, at the expiration of which we had calms and foul winds to cope with, and ſaw frequent flaſhes of lightning at night. Sea-fowl of different ſorts, and fiſhes, ſuch as bonitos, dolphins, ſharks, and grampuſſes, appeared about us at different times.

Thurſday 16. On the 16th, in the morning, at eight o'clock, we diſcovered another low iſland. We were cloſe to it about three in the afternoon, and ſailed round it, without finding a landing place or harbour. It conſiſted of eight different iſles, connected by reefs, and covered with trees, particularly coco-palms, which made it look remarkably pleaſant. Vaſt flocks of aquatic birds appeared about it, from whence we concluded, that it was likewiſe uninhabited. In ſome parts there were extenſive ſandy beaches, where turtles probably reſort to lay their eggs. The ſea was alſo full of good fiſh, of different ſorts, about us. This pretty little ſpot was named Palmerſton Iſland, and lies in 18° 4′ S. lat. and 163° 10′ W.

Monday 20. We continued ſteering to the W. S. W. till the 20th, when we ſaw an iſland in the afternoon, of ſome elevation, on which, before ſunſet, we could diſcern the trees. We tacked all night to windward, and at the return of day-light

light ſtood towards it. Having approached within about two miles, we ran along the ſhore, which now appeared ſteep and rocky, with here and there a narrow ſandy beach at the foot of the rock. It was nearly level every where, and its greateſt height ſeemed not to exceed forty feet; but it was covered with woods and ſhrubberies along the ſummit. About ten o'clock, we perceived ſeven or eight people running cloſe to the water's edge. They ſeemed to be of a blackiſh colour, and were naked; ſomething white was wrapped about their heads and loins, and each had a ſpear, a club, or a paddle in his hand. In ſeveral chaſms between the rocks, we obſerved a few ſmall canoes hauled upon the ſhore. We now likewiſe took notice of ſome coco-nut trees, of no great height, which ſtood on the ſlope of the rocks. Two boats were hoiſted out, armed and manned, in which the captain, accompanied by Dr. Sparrman, Mr. Hodges, my father, and myſelf, went aſhore. A reef of coral ſurrounds the whoſe coaſt at a ſhort diſtance; but having found an opening, where the ſurf was not dangerous, we landed, and climbed up one of the adjacent rocks, where we poſted ſome of our ſailors and marines. It conſiſted entirely of ſharp and craggy coral, and was covered with a variety of ſmall ſhrubby plants, common to the low iſlands. Beſides theſe, we found ſome new ſpecies, all which grew between the crevices of the coral, without the leaſt atom of ſoil. Some curlews, ſnipes, and herons, of the ſame ſort

1774. JUNE.

1774. JUNE. which we had obſerved at Taheitee, likewiſe appeared on this iſland. Having walked among the buſhes, at the diſtance of about fifty yards from the water, we heard a loud halloo, upon which we retired to the rock, where our people had taken poſt. We now learnt that captain Cook, having walked up a long deep gulley, which lay before us, had entered the woods at a little diſtance from us. He had not proceeded far, when he heard ſomebody tumbling down from a tree. He ſuppoſed it was one of us, and called out to us, but was preſently undeceived by the ſhouts of the Indian. We now called to the natives in thoſe South Sea dialects which we were acquainted with, that we were friends, and deſired them to come down to us. They were heard talking and ſhouting to each other for ſome time; and preſently one of them appeared at the entrance of the gulley. His body was blackened as far as the waiſt; his head was ornamented with feathers placed upright, and in his hand he held a ſpear. Behind him we heard many voices in the chaſm, though the trees prevented our ſeeing the people. At laſt a young man, to all appearance without a beard, ſtepped forward, and joined the firſt. He was like him blackened, and had a long bow, like thoſe of Tonga-Tabboo, in his right hand. With the left he inſtantly flung a very large ſtone, with ſo much accuracy, as to hit Dr. Sparrman's arm a violent blow, at the diſtance of forty yards. The pain which it occaſioned irritated my friend

friend ſo much, that he let fly at his enemy; but it did not appear that the ſmall ſhot had any effect. Both the natives retired ſoon after; and though we ſtaid here for ſome time, performing the idle ceremony of taking poſſeſſion, we ſaw nothing more of the inhabitants. After we had reſumed our courſe along ſhore in the boats, we ſaw the people coming to the water's ſide at the place which we had left. The appearance of the coaſt was ſtill the ſame as we advanced. We landed at the hazard of our necks in another place, which we left as ſoon as the boat's crew called out, that they perceived the natives above us. We continued till we came to a conſiderable chaſm in the rock, before which a flat reef, full of holes and cavities, extended about fifty yards off ſhore. We drew up a line of ſailors on the reef, and the captain with us walked into the chaſm, where we found four canoes. They were very nearly of the ſame ſtructure with thoſe of Tonga-Tabboo, and had ſome carving, but were not ſo neatly wrought. They were ſingle, and had ſtrong out-riggers. Some were covered with coarſe mats, and contained fiſhing-lines, ſpears, and pieces of wood, which appeared to have ſerved as matches for fiſhing at night. The captain laid a ſmall preſent of beads, nails, and medals on each canoe; but whilſt he was ſo employed, I perceived a troop of natives coming down the chaſm, and inſtantly acquainting our company of it, we all retired a few ſteps. Two of the natives, dreſſed with feathers, and blackened

1774. JUNE.

1774. JUNE. blackened as the other before mentioned, advanced towards us with furious ſhouts, and ſpears in their hands. We called in friendly terms to them; but to no purpoſe. The captain endeavoured to diſcharge his muſket, but it miſſed fire. He deſired us to fire in our own defence, and the ſame thing happened to us all. The natives threw two ſpears: captain Cook narrowly eſcaped one of them by ſtooping; the other ſlid along my thigh, marking my cloaths with the black colour with which it was daubed. We tried to fire again, and at laſt my piece, loaded with ſmall ſhot, went off, and Mr. Hodges fired a ball, which did no execution. At the ſame time a regular firing began behind us from our party, who having obſerved our retreat, had likewiſe viewed another troop of the natives coming down by a different path to cut us off. The effect of the ſmall ſhot fortunately ſtopped the natives from ruſhing upon us, and gave us time to retreat to our men, who continued to fire with great eagerneſs, while any of the natives remained in ſight. Two of theſe in particular, ſtanding among the buſhes, brandiſhed their weapons in defiance a conſiderable while, but at laſt retired, one of them appearing to be wounded, by the diſmal howl which we heard preſently after. We now embarked, and reſolved to abandon a ſet of people, whom no entreaties could prevail upon to become our friends. The nature of their country, which is almoſt inacceſſible, ſeems to have contributed to make their tem-

pers

pers ſo unſociable. The whole iſland is purely a coral-rock, like that of the low iſlands, on which we ſaw very few coco-palms, and no uſeful trees. I have therefore formed a conjecture, that the interior parts are not ſo barren, but fit for the culture of nutritive vegetables. The general reſemblance of this iſland to a coral ledge raiſed out of the water, almoſt leads me to ſuſpect that it includes a fertile plain, which was once a lagoon. Whether a convulſion of the globe, or any other cauſe, lifted ſuch a large piece of coral-rock forty feet above water, is a point which muſt be left to future philoſophers to determine. The boats and arms of the natives reſembled thoſe of Tonga-Tabboo, and it is therefore probable that the people have the ſame origin; but their numbers are inconſiderable, and their civilization little advanced, ſince they are ſavage, and go naked. Their iſland ſeems to be about three leagues long, and was called Savage Iſland. It is ſituated in 19° 1′ S. and 169° 37′ W. 1774. JUNE.

Having reached the ſhip, the boats were hoiſted in, and the next morning we continued our courſe to the weſtward. A large high-finned whale, which was ſeen near the ſhip, ſpouted up the water, and ſeveral birds and fiſh attended us as uſual.

On the twenty-fourth at night we lay to, as we expected to be very near A Namoka, or Rotterdam Iſland, one of the Friendly Iſles diſcovered by Taſman in 1643. Breakers were

1774. JUNE. were heard a-head at two o'clock, and the land appeared at
Saturday 25. day-break. We ſtood for it, and ſoon found it to conſiſt of ſeveral low iſlands, connected by a vaſt reef. Another great reef lay to the northward, and we paſſed between them. At noon a canoe came off towards us, though the neareſt land was above a league diſtant. We diſcerned two men in it, who ſtood on a long while, but at laſt, ſeeing that the ſhip gained upon them, they put about and returned. We could not help admiring the difference between this race, and the ſavages whom we had ſo lately left, and agreed that the name Friendly was very juſtly given to them. The wind ſlackened all the afternoon, and died away to a perfect calm during night. We approached ſo near one of the reefs by this means, that we ran great riſk of being wrecked; but a breeze ſpringing up in the morning, we were out of danger in a ſhort time.

Sunday 26. The next morning we ſailed between reefs and ſmall iſlands, which made the water ſmooth. The iſlands had a little more elevation than the common coral iſlands; they were covered with groves and tufts of trees, which gave them a moſt enchanting appearance. The houſes were ſeen in great numbers among the trees on the beach, and the iſlands had an air of happineſs and affluence. One of theſe little gardens roſe at its eaſt end into a white perpendicular cliff, with ſomething like horizontal ſtrata. At our diſtance it looked like the baſtion of a ruined fort, and being fringed with

with woods and palms, formed altogether a romantic view. Towards noon the wind ſlackened, and canoes put off from different iſlands to viſit us, though they were above a league diſtant. Some of them worked ſo hard, that they were near us in leſs than an hour; and when they were about a muſket-ſhot off, they began to call to us from time to time, ſtill continuing to paddle towards us. Three perſons were in the canoe, exactly like the natives of Eä-oowhe and Tonga-Tabboo, whom we had ſeen in October, 1773. When they were along-ſide, a few beads and nails were preſented to them, for which they immediately ſent a bunch of bananas, and ſome delicious ſhaddocks *(citrus decumanus)* on the deck, beſides a bunch of the red fruits of the palm-nut tree or pandang *(athrodactylis)* which is a ſign of friendſhip. This being done, they ſold us all the ſhaddocks and fruit which they had, and came on board. In the mean while the other canoes arrived, and acted without the leaſt caution, as if we had been long acquainted. They taught us the names of all the iſlands in the neighbourhood; that with the high cliff they called Terrefetchéä; the other, which we admired ſo much for its beauty, Tonooméa: both theſe lay to the eaſtward of us. Mango-nooe (great) and Mango-eetee (little) were two iſlands to the weſt of us; and to the S. W. beyond them lay Namoka-nooee and Namoka-eetee; the firſt of which Taſman has called Rotterdam Iſland, or Anamocka.

1774. JUNE.

1774. JUNE. After dinner the breeze freſhened, and we ſailed towards Namoka, which was the largeſt iſland of this group. The number of canoes encreaſed about us; they came from all the neighbouring iſlands with fruit, fiſh, and pigs, all which they diſpoſed of for nails and rags.

We had ſoundings all the day between theſe iſlands, at firſt in forty and fifty, and afterwards, when we came nearer, in nine, twelve, fourteen, and twenty fathom. About four o'clock, having hauled round the ſouth end of Namoka, we came to, on the lee or weſt ſide of it, where Taſman formerly lay. Our diſtance from the ſhore was about a mile. The coaſt of the iſland roſe fifteen or twenty feet nearly perpendicular, after which it appeared almoſt level, having only a ſingle hillock near the middle. This ſteep ſhore had ſome reſemblance to the coaſt of Savage Iſland, which we had lately left, but the richneſs of its woods was infinitely greater. Innumerable coco-nut palms out-topped the woods, and ornamented the iſland on all ſides.

Whilſt we were coming to an anchor, one of the natives caught the lead, and tore the line which one of our people was heaving. He was deſired to return it, but took no notice of the captain who ſpoke to him. A muſket with ball was fired through his canoe; upon which he calmly removed to the other ſide of the ſhip. Our demand was repeated, and proving ineffectual again, was enforced by a load of ſmall-ſhot, which made him ſmart. He inſtantly paddled

paddled to the head of the ſhip, where a rope hung over-board, to which he tied the line and lead. His countrymen were not ſatisfied with this reſtitution; they turned him out of his canoe, and made him ſwim on ſhore, whilſt they continued to trade with us. They ſold us coco-nuts, excellent yams, bread fruit, bananas, ſhaddocks, and other fruit. They alſo brought purple water-hens alive, and a fine well-taſted *ſparus* ready dreſſed in leaves; alſo a curious ſtringy root baked, which contained a very nouriſhing pulp, of ſuch a ſweetneſs, as if it had been boiled in ſugar. All theſe things were eagerly bought for nails, which were eſteemed according to their ſize, and for pieces of our cloth. Their canoes, their perſons, dreſs, cuſtoms and language ſo entirely reſembled thoſe of Tonga-Tabboo, that we could perceive no difference. As this iſland is at a ſhort diſtance from Namoka, it is not improbable that the inhabitants of the latter might have heard of our arrival there in October, 1773. 1774. JUNE.

The next morning captain Cook landed early in a ſandy cove, which is accurately deſcribed by Taſman. It is encloſed by a reef, and has a narrow entrance for boats at the ſouth end. It is ſo ſhallow, that our boats could only come in at high water. The captain purchaſed a pig, and was conducted to a pond of freſh water at a ſhort diſtance from the beach, the ſame where Taſman had ſupplied his ſhips with water. The hoſpitality of the natives was exerciſed Monday 27.

1774. JUNE. in its utmoſt extent, and one of the handſomeſt ladies of the iſland complimented the captain with an offer, which was not accepted. Having examined the watering-place, he returned on board to breakfaſt, and gave ſtrict orders, that no perſons infected with or lately cured of venereal complaints ſhould be ſuffered to go on ſhore, and that no woman ſhould be admitted in the ſhip. A number of ladies came off in ſeveral canoes, and ſeemed very deſirous of making acquaintance with our ſailors; but after paddling about the ſhip for ſome time, they were obliged to return to the ſhore, very much diſcontented. Immediately after breakfaſt, Dr. Sparrman, my father and myſelf accompanied captain Cook to the ſhore, where a trade commenced for ſhaddocks and yams, which the natives ſold us in prodigious quantities. Bananas and coco-nuts were ſcarce in proportion, and bread-fruit ſtill more rare, though the trees of theſe ſorts were very numerous. All the men went nearly naked, a ſlight covering on the loins excepted; a few of them, however, and moſt of the women, were dreſt from the waiſt to the ancles, in a piece of ſtiff painted cloth made of bark, wrapped ſeveral times round them, or in mats.

As ſoon as our boats reached the ſhore, the clamours of all thoſe who had ſomething to ſell became ſo exceſſively loud, that we haſtened into the country, whoſe aſpect was very inviting. A conſiderable variety of plants covered the ground

ground in wild luxuriance; and the great number of plantations of all ſorts, made the whole iſland reſemble a beautiful garden. The fences which had confined the view at Tonga-Tabboo, were here much leſs frequent, and only encloſed one ſide of the path, leaving the other open to the eye. The ground was not perfectly level in the interior parts, but roſe in ſeveral little hillocks lined with hedges and buſhes, which formed a moſt agreeable proſpect. The path which we met with, ſometimes went under long rows of lofty trees, planted at conſiderable diſtances, between which the ground was covered with the richeſt verdure; ſometimes a thick and impenetrable arbour of fragrant ſhrubberies vaulted over it for a conſiderable ſpace, and hid it entirely from the ſun; ſometimes plantations, and ſometimes wilds appeared on both ſides. The houſes of the natives were of a ſingular ſtructure: their height was about eight or nine feet; but the walls, which were not perpendicular, but converged towards the bottom, were not above three or four feet from the ground, and very neatly made of reeds. The roof converged into a ridge at the top; ſo that the ſection of the houſe reſembled a pentagon. It was thatched, and the roof projected beyond the ſloping walls of the houſe. In one of the long ſides there was always an opening about two feet ſquare, and eighteen inches from the ground, which ſerved inſtead of a door. The length of the houſe never exceeded thirty feet, and the breadth was commonly

1774. JUNE.

1774. JUNE. commonly eight or nine. The inſide of theſe houſes was always filled with large roots of yams, which ſeem to be the chief ſupport of the natives. To ſleep upon them muſt be extremely uncomfortable; and yet a few mats are only ſpread over them at night, which cuſtom has made acceptable to theſe people. Thoſe narrow little ſtools, on which the Taheitians reſt the head, are extremely frequent here, and ſerve the ſame purpoſe. We alſo obſerved ſeveral open ſheds, on a few poſts, like ſome which we had ſeen at Tonga-Tabboo. Theſe were laid out with mats, and ſeemed to be intended for their abode in the day-time. In our ramble we paſſed by a number of theſe habitations, but ſaw very few inhabitants, they being moſtly at the trading place. Thoſe whom we met were always very civil, and bowed their heads, ſaying, *leleï* (good), *woä* (friend), or ſome ſuch word, to mark their good temper and diſpoſition. They were our conductors; they brought us flowers from the higheſt trees, and birds out of the water; they often pointed out the fineſt plants to us, and taught us their names; we needed only to ſhew them a plant, of which we wiſhed to have ſpecimens, and they would go to any diſtance to procure it. Coco-nuts and ſhaddocks they readily offered to us; and willingly carried great loads for us; a nail, a bead, or even a ſmall rag of cloth, being conſidered as a valuable preſent in return. In a word, they were on all occaſions ready to oblige us.

In

In the courſe of our walk we found a large lake or lagoon of ſalt-water, at the north end of the iſland, which at one place reached within a few yards of the ſea. It was about three miles long, and one wide. Three little iſlands full of trees, arranged in the moſt pictureſque manner, ſerved to ornament this fine piece of water, of which the ſhores alſo captivated the eye by their variety and beauty. The inverted landſcape on the water, rendered this ſcene ſtill more beautiful, eſpecially as our point of view was an eminence, where many tall trees and thick ſhrubberies ſcreened us from the ſun. 1774. JUNE.

No iſland, which we had hitherto viſited, had offered ſo great variety of views to us in ſo ſmall a ſpace; nay, we had no where found ſuch abundance of beautiful flowers, ſo agreeably contraſting their various tints, and mingling their ſweet ſcents to perfume the air. The lake was full of wild-ducks, and the woods and ſhores abounded with pigeons, parroquets, rails, and ſmall birds, which the natives brought for ſale.

At noon we returned to the trading place, where captain Cook had purchaſed a great quantity of fruit and roots, a few fowls, and one or two ſmall pigs. When we arrived on board, we found they had been equally ſucceſsful there in the purchaſe of proviſions. The whole poop was loaded with ſhaddocks, which we found a moſt delicious fruit, of excellent flavour; and of yams we had laid in ſuch a quantity,

1774. JUNE. tity, that we eat of them every day for ſeveral weeks afterwards inſtead of biſcuit. Arms and utenſils, the uſual articles of trade of theſe iſlanders, had likewiſe been plentifully ſold, eſpecially by ſeveral people who came in large double ſailing canoes from the neighbouring iſlands. While we were at dinner, one of our ſhipmates was obſerved on ſhore, ſurrounded by a great croud of natives; but no further notice was taken of him, though he made ſignals for a boat. One of our trading boats, which was ſent aſhore as ſoon as the crew had dined, came near the place where he was ſtationed, and took him on board. It proved to be our ſurgeon, Mr. Patton, who had been in the moſt imminent danger of loſing his life, by being careleſsly left upon the iſland without ſupport. From his account it is very plain, that even among theſe kind and well-diſpoſed people, there were ſome villains who greatly reſembled the wretches that infeſt our civilized countries. He had left the landing place, and engaging a ſingle native in his ſervice for a few beads, had rambled over great part of the iſland. His ſucceſs in ſhooting was conſiderable; the native carried eleven ducks, with which he returned to the ſandy cove. The boats having already left that place, he was ſomething diſconcerted, and the croud preſſed about him, conſcious that he was in their power. He walked therefore to the rocky ſhore, juſt abreaſt of the ſhip, where our people ſaw him. In going thither, the man who carried the

the ducks endeavoured to drop ſome of them; but Mr. Patton luckily turning about at that moment, he picked them up again. The croud now preſſed cloſe about him, and ſeveral of the men threatened him with jagged ſpears, whilſt nothing but the appearance of his fowling-piece kept them in awe. Several women were ſet on by the men, to draw him off his guard, by a thouſand laſcivious geſtures and attitudes; but his ſituation was of too ſerious a nature to permit him to attend to them. After ſome time a canoe arrived from the ſhip, and Mr. Patton agreed with the owner to carry him aboard for a nail, the laſt which he had left. Juſt as he was ſtepping into the canoe, they ſnatched his fowling-piece from him, took all his ducks except three, and ſent away the canoe. He was greatly aſtoniſhed and alarmed, and reſolved to return to the top of the rock, where he expected to be more eaſily diſtinguiſhed from the ſhip, from whence he hoped for aſſiſtance. The natives now laid aſide all reſerve, and began to pluck at his cloaths. He readily ſuffered them to ſnatch his cravat and handkerchief; but they alſo ſeized his coat, and reſumed their threatening geſtures with ſuch violence, that he expected every moment would be his laſt. His anxiety and agony cannot well be painted. He put his hands in all his pockets to ſearch for ſome inſtrument, a knife or the like, with which to defend himſelf; he found nothing but a wretched tooth-pick-caſe; he opened it, and held it out

1774. JUNE.

1774. JUNE. upon the croud, who perceiving it hollow, inſtantly flew back to the diſtance of two or three yards: he continued to point this formidable weapon againſt the enemy, whoſe ſpears were ſtill lifted againſt him. The meridian ſun ſhone burning hot upon him; he had walked the whole day, was ſpent with fatigue, and began to deſpair of ſaving his life, when a handſome young woman, remarkable for her flowing curls, which hung down on her boſom, took pity on his wretched condition. She ſtepped forward from the croud, with the greateſt humanity and compaſſion expreſſed in her eye; innocence and goodneſs were ſo ſtrongly marked in her countenance, that it was impoſſible to diſtruſt her. She approached, and offered him a piece of ſhaddock, which was eagerly and thankfully accepted; and gradually ſupplied him with more, till he had conſumed the whole fruit. At laſt the boats put off from the ſhip, at ſight of which the whole croud diſperſed; only his generous benefactreſs, and an old man, who was her father, remained ſitting near Mr. Patton, with that unconcern which a noble and virtuous conduct inſpires. She enquired for the name of her friend; he told her that which the Taheitians had given him, Pateenee; and ſhe immediately adopted it, changing it into Patſeenee. On ſtepping into the boat, he gave her father and her a few preſents, which he borrowed from the crew, and with theſe they returned to their groves highly pleaſed. When Mr. Patton

eame

came on board, he acquainted captain Cook with the danger to which he had been expoſed; but though he had only followed the example of many of his ſhipmates, by repoſing confidence in the natives, yet the loſs of his fowling-piece was conſidered as a proper puniſhment for his imprudence. The afternoon was ſpent in different rambles on ſhore. My father, with a ſingle ſailor, walked over a conſiderable part of the iſland, without the leaſt moleſtation from the inhabitants, and brought on board a number of new plants. No other complaints aroſe againſt the natives this day, except ſome petty thefts, at which they were expert like their brethren of Tonga-Tabboo and the Society Iſlands. 1774. JUNE.

The next morning early we diſcovered ſeveral iſlands to the N. W. of us, which a haze in that quarter had hitherto ſcreened from our ſight. The two weſtermoſt were high, one peaked, but the other more extenſive. A thick ſmoke aroſe from the laſt, on which, during the night, we had obſerved a fire. The natives who came on board acquainted us that this fire was conſtant, ſo that we concluded it to proceed from a volcano. They called this iſland Tofooa *, and the peak cloſe to it e-Ghao †. To the northward of theſe two we diſcerned thirteen low iſlands, each of which the natives named to us. Tueſday 28.

* Taſman calls it Ama-Tofoa in his map. *Ama* or *kama* probably ſignifies a mountain.

† Taſman calls it Kaybay in his map.

1774. JUNE. We haſtened aſhore after breakfaſt, to reſume our enquiries. We ſoon left the beach, where the natives were again aſſembled in great numbers of both ſexes. A moſt beautiful kind of lily *(crinum aſiaticum)* was the firſt plant which we met with; and ſeveral others, not leſs valuable, were collected ſoon after. We came to the watering-place, which was a pond about a hundred or a hundred and fifty yards long, and fifty broad; it contained ſtagnant water, which was ſomewhat tainted with a brackiſh taſte, and might perhaps have ſubterraneous communications with the ſalt lagoon, which in one place adjoined to it. Lieutenant Clerke, who ſuperintended the waters, told us that his muſket had been nimbly ſnatched away by one of the natives, who inſtantly ran off with it. We advanced to the ſalt lagoon, and botanized among the ſpacious mangroves which ſurrounded it. Theſe trees occupy a vaſt ſpace of ground, and grow more and more intricate by age. Their ſeeds do not drop off, but ſhoot down from the top of the tree, till they reach the ground, where they take root, and ſpread new branches. Whilſt we were here, we heard three great guns fired; but the ſound being broken by many intervening objects, we ſuſpected that they were only muſkets overcharged as uſual, by ſome young gentlemen on a ſhooting party. We left the lake ſoon after, and paſſed through a plantation, where the natives bowed to us very kindly, and invited us to ſit down amongſt them.

We

We were deſirous of making the moſt of our time, and therefore ſoon left them, and returned to the freſh-water pond. Having fired a muſket at ſome wild-ducks, which were in great plenty, we were called to by Mr. Gilbert, the maſter, who told us that a volley of ſmall arms, and three cannon had been fired to alarm and bring us back, becauſe a fray had happened between the natives and our people. We joined him in a few minutes, and found with him the captain, and a file of marines, together with two natives, who ſat on their hams, and from time to time pronounced the word *wòa*, which ſignifies "friend." We ſuppoſed that the theft of Mr. Clerke's muſket had given occaſion to this diſturbance; but this was too trifling a circumſtance to be reſented. The cooper, in mending the water-caſk, was not ſufficiently attentive to his adze, and one of the natives had ſnatched it up, and conveyed it away. The captain, in order to recover this valuable inſtrument, of which however there were no leſs than a dozen in the ſhip, ordered his people to ſeize ſeveral large double canoes, which had probably arrived from different adjacent iſlands. They performed his command, and Mr. Clerke's gun was brought back by the aſtoniſhed natives. But this was not ſufficient, and another canoe was ſeized. A native, who ſtood upon it, defended his property, which he had forfeited by no offence, and took up a ſpear, which he ſeemed reſolved to employ with good effect. Captain Cook levelled his muſket at him, and bid him lay down

1774. JUNE.

1774. JUNE. down his arms. He refuſed, and received a load of ſhot through his wriſt and thigh, at the diſtance of eight or nine yards, which immediately brought him to the ground. The volley was now fired, and a boat ſent off to the ſhip, where three canon, directed againſt the higheſt point of the iſland, were fired off one after another. It was thought that the natives would now have left us; but a great part ſtill remained on the beach conſcious of their innocence, and ſome canoes continued to ply about the ſhip. The behaviour of one of the natives upon this occaſion was ſo remarkably ſtoical, that our people could not help taking notice of it. He had a ſmall canoe in which he always met the other canoes before they reached the ſhip, took out what he liked, and paid their owners, a certain ſmall price in European goods, which he had before obtained by barter. With his new cargo he returned to the ſhip, and always made a conſiderable profit upon his bargain. As he never failed to viſit each canoe, our ſailors called him a Cuſtom-houſe officer. He was lying cloſe to the ſhip, baling the water out of his canoe, when the guns were diſcharged not two yards over his head. Notwithſtanding the extraordinary concuſſion at ſo ſhort a diſtance, he never once looked up, but continued to bale, and afterwards to trade as if nothing had happened.

We had not long rejoined the captain and his party, when the unlucky adze was brought back, which had been

been the occaſion of ſo much miſchief. A middle-aged woman, who ſeemed to have great authority, had diſpatched ſome of the people after it, and they returned at the ſame time a cartridge-box, and Mr. Patton's fowling-piece, which appeared to have been concealed under water. The wounded man was brought to us on a piece of wood carried by men. He ſeemed almoſt without ſenſation; and was ſet on the ground, whilſt the natives gradually returned, and began to take courage. The women in particular, were very deſirous of reſtoring the general tranquility, and their timid looks ſeemed to charge the behaviour of the ſtrangers with cruelty. They ſeated themſelves on a fine green turf, in a group of fifty or more together, and invited ſeveral of us to ſit by them. Each of them had ſome ſhaddocks, which they broke in pieces, and diſtributed to us with every mark of kindneſs and peace. Mr. Patton's friend was one of the foremoſt, and indeed claimed the firſt rank among the beauties of thoſe iſlands. Her ſtature was graceful, and her form exquiſitely proportioned. Her features were more regular than any I had ever ſeen in theſe iſles, full of ſweetneſs and the charms of youth. Her large dark eyes ſparkled with fire, and her ebon curls floated on her neck. She was of a lighter colour than the common people, and wore a brown cloth which cloſely embracing the body immediately under the breaſt, but being ſomewhat wider towards

1774. JUNE.

1774. JUNE. towards the feet, perhaps ſuited her better than the moſt elegant European dreſs.

Mr. Patton having been ſent for, arrived with proper inſtruments, and dreſſed the wounds of the poor native, whoſe countrymen brought many banana leaves, which were laid on over the dreſſing. A bottle of brandy was given them, with directions to waſh the wounds with the liquor from time to time. The wound was not dangerous, as it happened in a fleſhy part; but as the diſtance was ſo ſhort, the ſhot had torn the fleſh very much, and made the wound very painful to the poor man. After this we diſtributed ſome beads, and departed making various ſigns of friendſhip. The natives like thoſe of Tonga-Tabboo, were ſtrangers to reſentment, and continued to trade with our ſhip as before. They ſeemed to poſſeſs a truly mercantile ſpirit, and ſpared no trouble to obtain ſome of our goods or curioſities. Among the reſt, they were much delighted with a great number of young puppies which we had taken on board at the Society Iſlands, on purpoſe to ſtock ſuch iſlands as were not provided with them. We left two couple on Namoka, of which the natives promiſed to take particular care. Theſe people managed their canoes with ſurpriſing agility, and ſwam with the greateſt eaſe. Their common trading canoes were neatly made, and poliſhed like thoſe which I have already deſcribed. But thoſe of the neighbouring iſlands were of a great ſize, and ſome

of

of them contained upwards of fifty people. They always 1774. JUNE. conſiſted of two large canoes, faſtened by a tranverſe platform of planks, in the midſt of which they had erected a hut, where they placed their goods, their arms, and utenſils, and where they paſſed great part of their time. There were likewiſe holes, which gave admittance into the body of each canoe. Their maſts were ſtout poles which could be ſtruck at pleaſure, and their ſails were very large and triangular, but not very proper to ſail by the wind. All their cordage was excellent, and they had alſo contrived a very good ground tackle, conſiſting of a ſtrong rope with large ſtones at the end, by means of which they came to an anchor.

We went on ſhore again after dinner, as captain Cook propoſed leaving this iſland the next day. We paſſed through ſeveral fields and wild ſhrubberies, and collected a number of valuable plants. We alſo made a purchaſe of ſeveral arms, ſuch as clubs, and ſpears, and of ſome utenſils, viz. ſmall ſtools, large wooden diſhes and bowls, in which the people prepare their victuals, and ſome earthern pots which ſeemed to have been long in uſe. The great abundance of their arms, does not agree with their good-nature and hoſpitable diſpoſition, unleſs they quarrel with their next neighbours, like the people of Taheitee and the Society Iſlands. But they ſeemed to have ſpent too much time

1774. JUNE. in ornamenting their clubs, to have frequent occaſion to uſe them.

At day-break the next morning we unmoored and ſet ſail, ſtanding towards the iſland of Tofooa, on which we had again obſerved the volcano burning during night. A whole fleet of canoes followed us ſeveral miles, trading with a variety of articles, particularly their dreſſes, utenſils, and ornaments. Some of them likewiſe brought fiſh of different ſorts, which we had found very well-taſted.

The iſland of Namoka, which we left after a ſtay of two days only, was not above fifteen miles in circuit, but ſeemed to be remarkably populous. It lies in 20° 17′ S. and 174° 32′ W. In the group of iſlands which appeared around it, its ſize was the moſt conſiderable; but all ſeemed to be well inhabited, and very rich in vegetable productions. They are ſituated on a kind of bank, on which there is from nine to ſixty and ſeventy fathom water, and the ſoil is probably the ſame in every iſland. Namoka conſiſts, like Tonga-Tabboo, of a coral-rock, covered with a rich mould on which all ſorts of vegetables thrive. We had no time to examine the hillock in its centre, which ſeems to have had a different origin, and may perhaps be volcanic. At preſent it is wholly covered with the richeſt groves, like the reſt of the iſland. The abundance of freſh water in the pond, is an advantage which the people of Namoka enjoy

in

in preference to thoſe of Tonga-Tabboo; but it does not appear that they bathe ſo regularly as the Taheitians, perhaps becauſe the ſtagnant water is not very inviting. Its advantage is however ſo much felt, that the natives brought it to the ſhip in calabaſhes, and did the ſame to Taſman, which implies that it is looked upon as a valuable article among them. The abundance of water, and the richneſs of the ſoil likewiſe ſeems to be the reaſon, that bread-fruit and ſhaddock trees are much more frequent, and all vegetation infinitely more luxuriant than on Tonga-Tabboo. The fences on that account are not laid out, and kept up with that extreme regularity, though they are ſtill preſerved in part. The long walks of fruit-trees, and the delightful green turf under them, were rather to be compared to the richeſt ſpots on Ea-oowhe, or Middleburg Iſland. The tufted arbours which vaulted over the paths, are hung with beautiful flowers of all kinds, many of which filled the air with fragrance. The variety of ſcenes formed by many little riſings, and different groups of houſes and trees, together with the lagoons, conſpire to adorn this iſland. The fowls and hogs which we ſaw in the neighbourhood of every dwelling, the prodigious number of ſhaddocks which lay under every tree, hardly noticed by the natives, and the quantities of yams which filled their houſes, gave a picture of abundance and affluence which delighted the eye and comforted the heart. At ſight of a plenteous proſpect, 1774. JUNE.

1774. JUNE. human nature feels an inſtinctive ſatisfaction, and good humour and joy are ſoon revived in the moſt dejected breaſt. Amidſt the diſmal ſcenes of our voyage, theſe intervening moments are remarkably contraſted, and therefore had a great effect upon us. It is ſo natural to dwell upon pleaſing ſubjects, that I hope, I need not apologize for my frequent deſcriptions; and I muſt refer the reader to Mr. Hodges's view in the interior parts of Namoka, which will give an idea of a farm in that iſland. It is engraved and inſerted in captain Cook's account of this voyage.

The natives, who were happy enough to call theſe fertile groves their own, did not appear to me to differ in any reſpect from thoſe of Tonga-Tabboo, and Ea-oowhe. Their ſtature was middle-ſized, their colour a bright cheſnut brown, and their whole body well-proportioned, without being corpulent. Their punctures, their dreſs, the cuſtoms of clipping the beard, and powdering the hair, their arms, utenſils, and canoes, their language and manners were exactly ſuch as we had noticed at Tonga-Tabboo. But in the ſhort time which we ſtaid on their iſland, we could not obſerve any ſubordination among them, though this had ſtrongly characteriſed the natives of Tonga-Tabboo, who ſeemed to deſcend even to ſervility in their obeiſance to their king. At Namoka we could not diſtinguiſh any perſons of ſuperior rank or authority, unleſs we except the man, whom our ſailors called a Cuſtom-houſe officer, and who inſpected all the

the canoes which came to the ſhip. The woman who ſent for the ſtolen things, appeared alſo to have ſome ſway among them; and ſince there is reaſon to ſuppoſe, that women whoſe hair are allowed to grow long, have ſome prerogatives above the reſt in the South Sea *, Mr. Patton's friendly benefactreſs ſeems to have been a lady of a ſuperior claſs, which her whole deportment confirmed. She was the only woman with long hair whom we ſaw on the iſland. I am far from concluding that the people of Namoka have no fixed government; on the contrary, their vicinity and ſimilarity to other iſlanders, amongſt whom a monarchical government takes place, and the example of all the other iſlanders of the South Sea which former navigators have examined, give the greateſt room to ſuppoſe the ſame exiſting there. The general coincidence of their manners with thoſe of Tonga-Tabboo, ſtrongly prove that they have the ſame origin, and probably the ſame religious notions; but notwithſtanding this agreement, I never found a *fayetooka* or burying-place, during my rambles upon Namoka, nor did any one of our ſhipmates meet with a place in any wiſe reſembling the burying-places which we found at Tonga-Tabboo. 1774. JUNE.

It appears, from the accounts of former voyagers, that between the meridians of 170° eaſt from Greenwich, and

* See vol. I. p. 327.

180°

1774. JUNE. 180°, there is a great number of iſlands, from the 10th to the 22d degree of latitude; all which, as far as they are known, ſeem to be inhabited by one race of people, who ſpeak the ſame dialect of the South Sea tongue, and have the ſame ſocial and mercantile diſpoſition. All theſe then might be added to the Friendly Iſlands. They are in general remarkably well inhabited, particularly thoſe which we viſited. Tonga-Tabboo is almoſt one continual garden, and Eaoowe, Namoka, and the adjacent iſlands, are ſome of the moſt fertile ſpots in the Pacific Ocean. We ſhall therefore be extremely moderate in our calculation, if we ſuppoſe the number of inhabitants in all theſe iſlands does not exceed 200,000 perſons. Their healthy climate, and its excellent productions, keep them free from thoſe numerous diſeaſes, to which we fall an eaſy prey, and, according to their plain and ſimple notions, ſatisfy all their wants. Their progreſs in the arts, beyond other nations in the South Sea, and particularly their refinement in muſic, ſerve to paſs away their time agreeably, and give them taſte to acknowledge and diſcern the beauties of their own exquiſite forms, from whence one of the ſtrongeſt ties of ſociety is derived. Their general turn is active and induſtrious, but their behaviour to ſtrangers more polite than cordial. Their peculiar propenſity to trade ſeems to have ſubſtituted this inſincere civility, in the room of real friendſhip, from thoſe intereſted and mercenary principles which commerce inſpires. Both

theſe

theſe characters are in direct oppoſition to thoſe of the Taheitians, who delight in an indolent life, and are too hearty in their affections to confine them to outward ſhew and ſpecious appearances. However there are many luxurious individuals (arreoys) at the Society Iſlands, whoſe moral character appears to be ſomewhat depraved; whilſt the people of the Friendly Iſlands ſeem to be ignorant of vices, which can only have ariſen from a ſuperior degree of opulence. 1774. JUNE.

The canoes which accompanied us from Namoka returned at noon to ſeveral low iſlands, all which ſeemed to be well inhabited and fertile, like ſo many beautiful gardens. After dinner the wind became contrary, and abated, ſo that we rather loſt than gained ground. A few canoes came up with us again, for the natives ſpared no labour to obtain our nails and rags of cloth. Towards evening we were ſurrounded by a little fleet, and the trade was very briſk, chiefly for the utenſils and arms of the iſlanders, which are made with remarkable neatneſs.

The canoes returned once more to us the next morning, putting off at day-break from all the little iſlands in ſight. Their appearance and their ſailing afforded us much entertainment. Before the wind they go extremely ſwift, being well contrived for that purpoſe, and their broad triangular ſail gives them a very pictureſque form at a diſtance. We left them in a ſhort time, when the breeze freſhened, and Thurſday 30.

ſailed

1774. JUNE. ſailed towards the two high iſlands, which we had diſcovered whilſt we lay at anchor. In the afternoon three canoes came up with us again; and one of them, with 50 men on board, traded with us juſt as we were in the narrow paſſage between both iſlands. The larger, to the ſouthward, which is called Tofoòa, appeared to be inhabited. Some of the natives on board our ſhip told us it had freſh water, together with coco-nut, banana, and bread-fruit trees. We ſaw indeed a number of palms, and a great quantity of the club-wood. The whole iſland, though ſteep, was in ſome places covered with verdure or ſhrubbery. Towards the ſea, and eſpecially towards the other iſland, the rocks ſeemed burnt, and black ſand covered the ſhore. We approached within a cable's length of it, but found a depth of eighty fathom, which prevented our coming to an anchor. The rocks towards the paſſage, which was not above a mile acroſs, were cavernous, and in ſome places had a rude columnar ſhape. The day was ſomewhat hazy, and the top of the iſland was therefore covered with clouds. The ſmoke however rolled up with impetuoſity, and ſeemed, before we had paſſed the ſtrait, to iſſue from the other ſide of the mountain. As ſoon as we had paſſed it, it appeared to ariſe from the ſide which we had juſt left. This deception proves, that the top of the mountain was hollow, or formed a crater, from whence the vapour was thrown up. There was a ſpot on the N. W. ſide of the iſland, ſomewhat below the

the place where we ſaw the ſmoke come out, which had the appearance of being lately burnt: it was deſtitute of verdure, though the mountain on both ſides of it was covered with various plants. When we came exactly into the line in which the ſmoke was carried by the wind, we had a ſmall ſhower of rain, and many of us felt it very biting and ſharp, when it dropped into our eyes. It is probable from thence, that it carried down with it ſome particles which the volcano had ejected. The wind being at S. S. E. and freſhening, we left this iſland, without being able to make any farther obſervations upon it; though it well deſerved the attention of the learned, who make the revolutions which our globe has undergone, the object of their uſeful and curious enquiries. 1774. JULY.

We ſailed to the W. S. W. and continued the ſame courſe all the next day. The following day, very near noon, we diſcovered land, which, from the direction of our track, had never been ſeen by other navigators. We ran toward it, and before night approached pretty near it; but found breakers before us, which obliged us to tack all night, for fear of an accident. Several lights which appeared on ſhore as ſoon as it was dark, announced to us that the iſland was inhabited. Friday 1.

The next morning we bore down upon it again, and came round its eaſt end. It appeared to be about ſeven miles long, and had two ſmall hills of very gentle aſcent, Sunday 3.

1774. JULY. wholly covered with woods, like the reſt of the iſland. One end ſloped into a flat point, on which we obſerved fine groves of coco-palms, and fruit-trees, together with houſes in their ſhade. A fine ſandy beach ſurrounded the ſhore, and at the diſtance of half a mile, a coral reef encompaſſed the eaſt ſide of the iſland, which at the points projected near two miles from the ſhore. On this reef we ſoon perceived five blackiſh-brown men, with clubs in their hands, looking at us very attentively. We hoiſted a boat out, and ſent the maſter to ſound an opening between the reefs which we ſaw before us. He went on through the entrance towards the ſhore, where we obſerved upwards of thirty inhabitants ſitting. Amongſt them ten or twelve were armed with ſpears; but as ſoon as our boat came near, they hauled a canoe into the woods, which had brought their five men to and from the reef, and all ran off when the maſter landed. He laid ſome nails, a knife, and a few medals on the ſandy beach, and returned on board, to acquaint the captain that there was no bottom in the entrance of the reef, and not ſufficient depth within it. He had obſerved a dozen or more large turtles ſwimming in the harbour; but being deſtitute of harpoons, or other inſtruments, could not ſtrike any of them. Our boat was hoiſted in again, and the hopes of botanizing on this iſland were entirely fruſtrated. We continued ſtanding along its reef, on which we obſerved ſo me large ſingle rocks of coral, near fifteen feet above the ſurface

ſurface of the water, narrow at the baſe, and ſpreading out at the top. Whether an earthquake had raiſed them ſo high out of the ſea, in which they muſt have been formed, or whether ſome other cauſe ought to be aſſigned for this curious fact, remains to be determined. 1774. JULY.

A few miles to the weſtward of the iſland we found a great circular reef of coral, including a lagoon. It was ſuſpected that this lagoon might be the abode of turtles, and two boats were hoiſted out in the afternoon to go in queſt of them. The fiſhery proved very unſucceſsful, not a ſingle turtle being ſeen, and the crew hoiſted the boats in again before ſunſet. We then left this new diſcovery, which was named Turtle Iſland, and is ſituated in 19° 48′ S. and 178° 2′ W.

We ran to the W. S. W. with a freſh trade-wind by day, but tacked every night. No birds attended us on this courſe, except now and then a white booby, or a man of war bird. The fair weather, the yams of Namoka, and the hope of making new diſcoveries in this part of the Pacific Ocean, which had never been viſited before, kept us all in very good ſpirits.

On the 9th of July, having reached nearly 176° E. and being in 20° S. we changed our courſe to the N. W. Our freſh gale continued without any change till the 13th, when it was ſomewhat abated, and a few drops of rain fell both at night and in the morning. The ſecond anniverſary Saturday 9. Wedneſd. 13.

1774. JULY. of our departure from England, which happened on this day, was celebrated by the ſailors with their uſual mirth. They drank plentifully, having ſaved a part of their daily allowance, for this ſolemn occaſion, and drowned every gloomy idea in grog, the mariner's Lethe. One of them, of a fanatical turn, compoſed a hymn on the occaſion, as he had done the firſt year; and after ſeriouſly exhorting his fellows to repentance, ſat down and hugged the bottle heartily; but like all the reſt, he proved unequal to the conflict, and ſunk under the powerful influence of his adverſary.

The wind freſhened very much the two following days, and on the third the weather became hazy, with ſhowers of rain. A calabaſh, which we obſerved drifting paſt the ſhip, ſeemed to indicate the near approach of land; and indeed a few hours after, about two o'clock in the afternoon, on the Saturday 16. 16th, we made it at a little diſtance before us, being high, and of conſiderable extent. The gale encreaſed towards night, and the ſhip rolled very much; the rains were inceſſant at the ſame time, and coming through the decks into our cabins, thoroughly ſoaked our books, cloaths, and beds, depriving us of reſt. The ſame heavy gales, with bad weather, continued all the next day, and ſo involved the land in clouds, that we could ſcarce diſcern it, but were forced to ſtand off and on. This weather was the more diſagreeable, as it was unexpected in a ſea, which has always been termed Pacific. It proves, that no entire reliance

may

may be had upon general denominations; and, that though ſtorms and hurricanes are perhaps very ſeldom felt in this ocean, yet it is not wholly free from them. Its weſtern part is particularly known for ſtrong gales. When captain Pedro Fernandez de Quiros left his Tierra del Eſpiritù Santo; when M. de Bougainville was on the coaſt of the Louiſiade; and when captain Cook, in the Endeavour, explored the eaſtern coaſt of New Holland, each of them met with ſtormy weather. Perhaps it may be owing to the large lands which are ſituated in this part of the ocean; at leaſt it is known, that the ſtated winds of the torrid zone become variable in the neighbourhood of high and extenſive coaſts. 1774. JULY

The weather was a little clearer the next morning, ſo that we could venture to run in ſhore. We diſtinguiſhed two iſlands, which were the Whitſun and Aurora Iſlands, of M. de Bougainville, and ran for the northern extremity of the latter.

Thus, after ſpending two years in viſiting the diſcoveries of former voyagers, in rectifying their miſtakes, and in combating vulgar errors, we began the third, by inveſtigating a group of iſlands which the French navigator, preſſed by neceſſity, and ill fitted out, had left with precipitation. It was reſerved for this laſt year to teem in new diſcoveries, and to make amends for the two firſt. We had, it is true, no reaſon to complain, ſince moſt of the countries Monday 18.

we

1774. JULY. we had viſited, were ſcarcely known to the world, from the vague and unphiloſophical accounts of the diſcoverers. We had room to make a variety of obſervations on men and manners, which, though they ought to be the firſt objects of travellers, have ſtill been poſtponed, even by thoſe who have aimed at being looked upon by the world as the moſt enlightened. But, as mankind are ever captivated by the charms of novelty, the hiſtory of our tranſactions, during the enſuing months, will have that advantage at leaſt to recommend it to their attention.

END OF THE SECOND BOOK.

A VOYAGE

A

VOYAGE

ROUND THE

WORLD.

BOOK III.

CHAP. I.

An account of our ſtay at Mallicollo, and diſcovery of the New Hebrides.

WE reached the north-point of Aurora iſland at eight in the morning, on the 18th of July, and paſſing very cloſe to it, obſerved vaſt numbers of coco-nut-palms on all parts of it, not excepting the high ridges of the iſland. The whole, as far as a thick haze permitted us to ſee, was clad in thick foreſts which had a pleaſing, but wild appearance. My father had a momentaneous glimpſe of a ſmall rocky peak to the northward, which M. Bougainville calls Pic de l'Etoile, or Pic d'Averdi; but the clouds which moved with great velocity ſoon involved it. By the help of glaſſes ſome natives were ſeen on Aurora, and as we

1774. JULY. Monday 18.

1774. JULY. we approached nearer, we heard them calling to one another. Having paſſed the north end of Aurora, we ſtood to the ſouthward along its weſtern coaſt, as far as the wind would permit, which blew more ſoutherly than eaſterly. We had only this advantage, that being ſheltered by the land on all ſides, the water was remarkably ſmooth, though the gale continued. The iſland which M. de Bougainville named the Iſle of Lepers, was right a-head of us, and we paſſed the day in tacking between it and Aurora. At four o'clock in the afternoon, we approached within a mile and a half of the former, and in ſpite of the clouds which reſted on its heights, ſaw ſo much of the lower grounds, that we had reaſon to think it a very fertile iſland. The place where we approached it was very ſteep, nor could we find bottom with one hundred and twenty fathoms. However, the north eaſt point was lower, and covered with all ſorts of trees. The palms in particular were innumerable, and to our ſurprize grew on the hills, where we had never ſeen them in other iſlands. Several conſiderable caſcades ruſhed down the precipices into the ſea, amidſt ſhrubberies which formed as rich an ornament as in the landſcapes of Duſky Bay. Having put about, we obſerved a turtle ſleeping on the water, which the violence of the wind did not ſeem to affect. We tacked all night in order to gain to the ſouthward, being deſirous of paſſing between the Iſle of Lepers and Aurora. We came cloſe under the former again at eight

eight in the morning. Having put about, a ſmall canoe ventured out with a ſingle man in it. We made a ſhort trip, and returned towards the ſhore, where three men in another canoe were preparing to come to us. Several people ſat on the rocks and projecting bluff points. Some were blackened from the head downwards, as far as the breaſt; they had ſomething white on their heads, but went naked, with a rope about the waiſt. Only one of them had a cloth acroſs one ſhoulder, which came under the oppoſite arm like a ſcarf, and then round his loins; it ſeemed to be of a dirty white with a reddiſh border. All theſe people were of a dark brown colour, and armed with bows and long arrows. Thoſe who came off in canoes, came very near us, talking loud and unintelligibly for ſome time, but conſtantly refuſed to come on board. Having been obliged to put about the ſhip, they left us, and returned to their countrymen on ſhore. In ſeveral places we obſerved reeds like hurdles, ſtanding up between the rocks, which ſeemed to be ſo placed in order to catch fiſh. 1774. JULY. Tueſday 19.

We now approached the iſle of Aurora, where we obſerved a fine beach, and the moſt luxuriant vegetation that can be conceived. The whole country was woody; numberleſs climbers ran up the higheſt trees, and forming garlands and feſtoons between them, embelliſhed the ſcene. A neat plantation fenced with reeds, ſtood on the ſlope of the hill, and a beautiful caſcade poured down through the

1774. JULY. adjacent foreſt. About two o'clock three canoes came off from the iſland of Aurora, when we were cloſe in ſhore, but as we could not ſtay for them, they returned like thoſe of Lepers Iſland. The iſland of Aurora is about twelve leagues long, but not above five miles broad in any part, lying nearly north and ſouth. The middle is in 15° 6′ S. and 168° 24′ E. Its mountain or ridge is ſharp, and of conſiderable height. Whitſun Iſland, which lies about four miles to the ſouth of it, runs in the ſame direction, and is of the ſame length, but appears to be ſomewhat broader at its northern extremity. Its middle lies in 15° 45′ S. and in 168° 28′ eaſt longitude. The Iſle of Lepers is almoſt as large as Aurora, but of greater breadth, and its ſituation is nearly eaſt and weſt; the middle lies in 15° 20′ ſouth, and 168° 3′ eaſt.

Whitſun Iſland, as well as the Iſle of Lepers, having more ſloping expoſures than Aurora, appear to be better inhabited, and to contain more plantations. At night we obſerved many fires on them, particularly the firſt, where they extended to the tops of the hills. This circumſtance ſeems to prove, that they live in great meaſure on agriculture; and ſince they have but few canoes, and their ſhores very ſteep, fiſhing does not ſeem to employ them ſo much as other iſlanders.

Wedneſd. 20. The iſland which M. de Bougainville has placed to the ſouthward of Whitſun Iſland, came in ſight the next morning,

morning, but was ſtill ſo much involved in clouds, that we could not diſtinguiſh its form or height. We paſſed all that day in working to windward, which we performed with better ſucceſs, as the gale had a little abated. 1774. JULY.

The next morning we had moderate and fair weather, and ſaw M. de Bougainville's ſouthern iſland very diſtinctly. There was a paſſage between it and the ſouth end of Whitſun Iſland, about ſix miles in breadth. A long low point extended from this ſouthern iſland to the eaſtward; and all its north ſide, though ſteep towards the ſea, roſe from thence with a gentle and gradual aſcent to the higheſt mountains in the centre. In the mountains, which were ſtill covered with clouds, we obſerved ſome volumes, as it appeared, of ſmoke, which indicated a volcano. This iſland is about ſeven leagues in length, and its middle lies in 16° 15′ S. and 168° 20′ E. Thurſday 21.

Later in the day we diſcovered land to the weſtward, which proved to be the ſouth-weſternmoſt land ſeen by M. de Bougainville. We advanced towards it, overjoyed with the variety of new iſlands which preſented themſelves to our view. Having reached the N. W. end of the former iſland, on which we ſuſpected a volcano, we were convinced of its exiſtence, by columns of white ſmoke, which rolled up with great violence from the ſummit of an inland mountain. The whole ſouth-weſt coaſt of this iſland ſloped into a very fine and extenſive plain, on which innumerable ſmokes aroſe, between the richeſt groves which our eyes had be-

1774. JULY. held ſince our departure from Taheitee. The populouſneſs of the country was ſtrongly evinced by its fertile appearance, and by the number of fires. We opened two other iſlands to the ſouth-eaſtward, after paſſing the weſt end of this land, one of which was a very high peak, which looked like a volcanic mountain. Another iſland, with three high hills, alſo appeared to the ſouth, at a great diſtance. The weſtern land, towards which we ſailed, was not leſs beautiful than that which we left. Its groves had the richeſt tints of verdure, and coco-palms were ſcattered between them in vaſt numbers. The mountains roſe far inland, and before them lay ſeveral lower grounds, all covered with woods, and bounded by a fine beach. At noon we came cloſe in ſhore, and ſaw many natives wading into the water to the waiſt, having clubs in their hands, but waving green boughs, the univerſal ſigns of peace. One of them had a ſpear, and another a bow and arrows. Contrary to their expectations, and perhaps their wiſhes, we put about again. However after dinner two boats were hoiſted out, and ſent to ſound in a little harbour, which we obſerved from the ſhip. The whole ſouth point of this little bay, which was bounded by a coral reef, was lined by ſeveral hundred inhabitants, of whom a few ventured out in their canoes towards the ſhip and the boats. They did not approach near the ſhip whilſt ſhe ſtaid out at ſea; but the boats having made the ſignal for good anchorage, we came in after them, into a narrow harbour, with reefs at the entrance, but which

which ſeemed to go inland to a conſiderable diſtance. Our boats returned on board, and the officer acquainted the captain, that the natives had come within a few yards in their canoes, but had not offered the leaſt inſult; on the contrary, they had waved green boughs, and dipping their hands into ſalt water, had poured it on their heads. This compliment our officer returned, much to their ſatisfaction, it being probably a ſign of friendſhip. They now approached the ſhip in their canoes, waving green plants, particularly the leaves of the *dracæna terminalis*, and of a beautiful *croton variegatum*, and repeating the word Tomarr or Tomarro continually, which ſeemed to be an expreſſion equivalent to the Taheitian Tayo (friend.) The greater part of them were however armed with bows and arrows, and a few with ſpears; being thus prepared, at all events, both for peace and war. By degrees they ventured near the ſhip, and received a few pieces of Taheitee cloth, which they eagerly accepted. Preſently they handed up ſome of their arrows in exchange; at firſt ſuch as were pointed with wood only, but ſoon after even ſuch as were armed with points of bone, and daubed with a black gummy ſtuff, on which account we ſuſpected them to be poiſoned. A young Taheitian puppy was therefore wounded in the leg with one of theſe arrows, to try its effect; but we perceived no dangerous ſymptoms. 1774. JULY.

The language of theſe people was ſo utterly different from

1774. JULY. from all the South Sea dialects which we had hitherto heard, that we could not understand a single word of it. It was much harsher than any of them, and the *r*, *s*, *ch*, and other consonants abounded in it. The people themselves differed from any that we had hitherto seen. They were all remarkably slender, and in general did not exceed five feet four inches in height. Their limbs were often indifferently proportioned, their legs and arms long and slim, their colour a blackish brown, and their hair black, frizzled and woolly. Their features were more extraordinary than all the rest. They had the flat broad nose and projecting cheek-bones of a Negroe, and a very short forehead, which had sometimes an unusual direction, being something more depressed than in well-formed men. Many of them were besides this painted with a black colour in the face and over the breast, which disfigured them more than their natural uglinefs. A few had a small cap on the head, made of matted work, but all went stark naked, and tied a rope so fast round their belly, that it made a deep notch. Most other nations invent some kind of covering, from motives of shame; but here a roll of cloth continually fastened to the belt, rather displays than conceals, and is the very opposite of modesty.

They continued about the ship, talking with great vociferation, but at the same time in such a good-humoured manner, that we were much entertained. We had no sooner

ſooner looked at one of them, that he began to chatter without reſerve, and grinned almoſt like Milton's Death. This circumſtance, together with their ſlender form, their ugly features, and their black colour, often provoked us to make an ill-natured compariſon between them and monkies. We ſhould be ſorry, however, to ſupply Rouſſeau, or the ſuperficial philoſophers who re-echo his maxims, with the ſhadow of an argument in favour of the Orang-outang ſyſtem. We rather pity than deſpiſe theſe men, who can ſo far forget and abuſe their own intellectual faculties, as to degrade themſelves to the rank of baboons. 1774. JULY.

When it was dark the natives returned on ſhore, where they made a number of fires, and were heard ſpeaking as loud among themſelves as they had done to us. About eight, however, they all returned to the ſhip in their canoes, with burning firebrands, in order to have another converſation. On their part they carried it on with ſurpriſing ſpirit, but we did not reply with equal volubility. The evening was very fine and calm, and the moon ſhone out at times. Seeing that we were not ſo talkative as themſelves, they offered to ſell us their arrows and other trifles; but captain Cook prohibited the trade, in order to get rid of them. We were ſurpriſed with their behaviour, it being unuſual to ſee any Indians awake and active about the ſhip after ſunſet. Some thought they only came as ſpies, to ſee whether we were upon our guard; but their inoffenſive behaviour

1774. JULY. haviour ſeemed to free them from this ſuſpicion. When they found us reſolved not to barter with them, they retreated to the ſhore towards midnight. We heard them ſinging and beating their drums all night, and could obſerve them ſometimes dancing; ſo that we concluded they were of a very chearful diſpoſition.

Friday 22. They gave us very little reſpite in the morning. At day-break they came off in their canoes, and began to call to us, frequently intermixing the word Tomarr in their noiſy ſpeeches. Four or five of them came on board the ſhip without any arms: they ſoon became familiar, and with the greateſt eaſe climbed up the ſhrouds to the maſt-head. When they came down again, the captain took them into his cabin, and gave them preſents of medals, ribbons, nails, and pieces of red baize. They were the moſt intelligent people we had ever met with in the South Seas; they underſtood our ſigns and geſtures, as if they had been long acquainted with them, and in a few minutes taught us a great number of their words. Their language was really as we had immediately ſuſpected, wholly diſtinct from that general language, of which ſeveral dialects are ſpoken at the Society Iſles, the Marqueſas, the Friendly Iſles, the Low Iſlands, Eaſter Iſland, and New Zeeland. It was not difficult to pronounce, but contained more conſonants than any of the dialects here mentioned. The moſt ſingular ſound was a ſhaking or vibration of *hrrr* together. Thus, for inſtance,

ſtance, one of our friends was called Mambrrùm, and the other Bonombrrooàï. Whatever they ſaw, they coveted; but they never repined at a refuſal. The looking-glaſſes which we gave them were particularly admired, and they took great pleaſure in looking at themſelves; ſo that theſe ugly people ſeemed to have more ſelf-conceit, than the beautiful nation at Taheitee and the Society Iſlands. They had perforated ears, and a hole in the *ſeptum narium*, into which they put a bit of ſtick, or two little pieces of white ſelenite or alabaſter, which are tied together in an obtuſe angle. On the upper arm they wore bracelets, very neatly wrought, of ſmall pieces of black and white ſhells. Theſe bracelets fitted ſo cloſely, that it was plain they had been put on whilſt their owners were young; for at preſent it was quite impoſſible to draw them over the elbow. Their ſkins were very ſoft and ſmooth, and of a ſooty or blackiſh-brown colour, which was heightened by black paint in the face. Their hair was frizzled, and woolly to the touch, though not of the ſofteſt. Their beards were frizzled, but not woolly, and well furniſhed with hair. They had no punctures on their body, but indeed they could not have been ſeen on their black ſkin at any conſiderable diſtance. Mr. Hodges took an opportunity of drawing their portraits, one of which has been engraved for captain Cook's account of the voyage. It is very characteriſtic of the nation; but we muſt lament, that a defect in the drawing, has made it ne- 1774. JULY.

1774. JULY. ceſſary to infringe the *coſtume*, and to throw a drapery over the ſhoulder, though theſe people have no kind of cloathing. They were eaſily perſuaded to ſit for their portraits, and ſeemed to have an idea of the repreſentations.

We were deeply engaged in converſation with them, and they ſeemed happy beyond meaſure, when the firſt lieutenant came into the cabin. He acquainted captain Cook that one of the natives having been denied admittance into the ſhip, which was by this time crouded with them, had pointed his arrow at the ſailor in our boat, who puſhed back his canoe. Before he had done ſpeaking, our acute natives gueſſed his errand, and having before obſerved the windows open, one of them inſtantly jumped out, and ſwam to his outrageous countryman to hold his hands. The captain went upon deck preſently, and took up a muſket, which he pointed at the native, who perſiſted in his attitude in ſpite of his fellows. Seeing that captain Cook had levelled at him, he alſo pointed his arrows at him. At this moment, the reſt of the natives around the ſhip called to thoſe in the cabin; theſe fearing the worſt conſequences from the violence of their countryman, hurried out of the windows, notwithſtanding all our endeavours to quiet their apprehenſions. We heard a muſket fired off the inſtant after, and repairing on deck, ſaw the native who had received ſome ſmall ſhot, very deliberately laying by his arrow, which was only pointed with wood, and ſelecting one

one of thoſe which we believed to be poiſoned. As ſoon as he had taken aim, the third lieutenant fired at him again; the ſmall ſhot which he received in his face, obliged him to give up all thoughts of fighting, and he paddled quickly towards the ſhore. At the ſame moment an arrow was ſhot off from the other ſide of the ſhip, which fell in the mizen ſhrouds. A ball was fired after the native who ſent it to us, but luckily without effect. Every canoe now moved gradually towards the ſhore, and all who were on board ſlung themſelves into the ſea; one in particular, who was at the maſt-head when the fray began, not thinking of any harm, came down with the greateſt precipitation when the muſkets went off. To terrify theſe people, and to give them a ſpecimen of our power, a cannon was fired over their heads among the trees on ſhore. This accelerated their retreat; the neareſt to us jumped out of their canoes in a fright, and all reached the ſhore in great confuſion. Preſently their drums began to beat in different parts, to give the alarm, and the poor fellows were ſeen running along ſhore, and huddling under the buſhes together, in cloſe conſultation on this alarming criſis of their affairs. In the mean while we went quietly to breakfaſt. 1774. JULY.

At nine o'clock ſome canoes again made their appearance, rowing round the ſhip, and very cautiouſly coming nearer. We waved to them with a branch of the *dracæna terminalis*, which we had before received; and after they had

1774. JULY. dipped their hands in the ſea, and put them on their heads, they received a few preſents which captain Cook gave them, and went away to the ſhore. Two of our boats were now manned, and a party of marines embarked with the captain, my father, Dr. Sparrman, myſelf, and ſeveral others. A reef bounded the ſhore at the diſtance of thirty yards or more. It was ſo ſhallow, that we were forced to ſtep out, and wade to the beach, where our marines formed without oppoſition. We were received by a croud of no leſs than three hundred perſons, all armed, but very friendly and inoffenſive in their behaviour towards us. A middle-aged man, rather ſtronger than the generality of the people, gave away his bow and quiver to another, and came unarmed to ſhake hands with us, in ſign of peace and amity; he was perhaps a chief among them. A pig was brought at the ſame time, and preſented to the captain, apparently as a kind of expiation for their countryman's ill behaviour; but perhaps it was only a ratification of the peace which we had concluded. This interview is repreſented in a fine plate, deſigned by Mr. Hodges, and engraved for captain Cook's account of this voyage. After we had received the pig, we expreſſed by ſigns that we wanted wood, and they immediately pointed out ſome trees which grew cloſe to the beach, which we cut down, and ſawed in pieces. The beach did not exceed fifteen yards in breadth; and our ſituation was very precarious in caſe of an attack. The marines

marines therefore drew a line before them, which the natives were deſire not to tranſgreſs. They readily complied with this regulation; but their numbers encreaſed from all parts continually. They were all armed with bows ready ſtrung, made of a tough dark-brown wood, finer than mahogany; and with arrows, which they held in a cylindrical quiver, formed of leaves. All theſe arrows were made of reeds about two feet long; thoſe of the common ſort had a point about a foot or fifteen inches long, conſiſting of a poliſhed jetty black wood, like ebony, but exceſſively brittle; the reſt, which were kept in quivers, were all pointed with a ſhort bit of bone, two or three inches long. This was inſerted in a notch of the reed, which was again curiouſly and firmly united together by means of ſingle coco-nut fibres, wound acroſs each other, ſo as to form little rhomboidal compartments, about $\frac{1}{10}$ of an inch ſquare, which were filled up with minute attention, alternately with a reddiſh, green, and white earthy colour. The point of bone itſelf was very ſharp, and ſmeared with a black reſinous ſubſtance. 1774. JULY.

We left our lines, and walked over amongſt the natives, who converſed with us, and with great good-will ſat down on the ſtump of a tree to teach us their language. They were ſurpriſed at our readineſs to remember, and ſeemed to ſpend ſome time in pondering how it was poſſible to preſerve the ſound by ſuch means as pencil and paper. They were not only aſſiduous in teaching, but had curioſity enough to learn

1774. JULY. learn our language, which they pronounced with ſuch accuracy, that we had reaſon to admire their extenſive faculties and quick apprehenſion. Obſerving their organs of ſpeech to be ſo flexible, we tried the moſt difficult ſounds in the European languages; nay, we had recourſe to the compound Ruſſian *ſhtch*, all which they pronounced at the firſt hearing, without the leaſt difficulty. We preſently taught them our numerals, which they repeated rapidly on their fingers; in ſhort, what they wanted in perſonal attraction, was amply made up in acuteneſs of underſtanding. We began to trade with them for their arms, but they were at firſt very loth to exchange them; however, a handkerchief, or piece of Taheitee cloth, or Engliſh frieze, was of ſome value among them. They began to ſell their common arrows, and afterwards thoſe which were poiſoned; but adviſed us not to try the points againſt our fingers, making us underſtand, by the plaineſt ſigns, that with a common arrow, a man might be ſhot through the arm without dying, but that the ſlighteſt ſcratch with one of the other ſort was mortal. If notwithſtanding this information, we attempted to bring the point on our fingers, they caught hold of our arm, with the moſt friendly geſture, to ſave us, as it were, from imminent danger. Beſides bows and arrows, they wore a club of the caſuarina-wood, which hung on their right ſhoulder, from a thick rope, made of a kind of graſs. This club

club was commonly knobbed at one end, and very well poliſhed, like all their manufactures. It did not exceed two feet and a half in length, and appeared to be reſerved for cloſe engagement, after emptying the quiver. On the left wriſt, they wore a circular wooden plate neatly covered, and joined with ſtraw, about five inches in diameter, upon which they broke the violence of the recoiling bow-ſtring, and prevented it from hurting their arms. This kind of ruffle, and their ornaments, ſuch as the bracelets above mentioned, pieces of ſhell cut in form of large rings, which were alſo worn on the arm, the ſtone in their noſe, and the ſhell which hung on their breaſt, ſuſpended by a ſtring round the neck, they at this time refuſed to ſell. 1774. JULY.

We obſerved no new plants on the borders of the beach where our people cut down trees; but the country within looked very tempting, being one great foreſt. Dr. Sparrman, and myſelf, obſerving a path which aſcended into the wood behind ſome buſhes, went in unnoticed, and advanced about twenty yards, where we fortunately found two fine new plants. But we had ſcarcely made this valuable acquiſition, when ſome of the natives appeared coming from the country, who at ſight of us ſtopped, and made repeated ſigns to us to return to the beach. We beckoned to them, and ſhewed them the plants which we had collected, intimating as well as our geſtures could expreſs it, that we had come for no other purpoſe. This pretence availed us

nothing;

1774. JULY. nothing; and as they continued to call us out of the wood, we complied for fear of raiſing a new diſturbance. The wood which we had thus ſuddenly quitted, was very dark and interſperſed with buſhes. However, a broad maſs of light in the interior parts, ſeemed to indicate a plantation, which we ſhould have reached, if we had not been too early interrupted. The various voices of women and children, which iſſued from that ſpot confirmed our conjecture. The trees which grew in the wood, were in general of well known ſorts; but among the under-woods there appeared ſeveral ſorts hitherto unnoticed. From the ſhip however, we had perceived vaſt numbers of coco-palms, ſome bananas, bread-fruit, and other valuable cultivated trees, of which the natives had given us the names.

Captain Cook having in the mean while, aſked for freſh water, the perſon whom we ſuppoſed to be a chief, ſent for a calabaſh full, which was very pure, and alſo preſented the captain with a coco-nut; but in ſpite of all our enquiries, we could not prevail upon the natives to bring us any more. A few of them wore a ſmall bunch of greens on their arm, which we knew to be part of an odoriferous plant of a new genus, named *euodia* (Forſt. Nov. Gen.) Some ſuffered us to take and examine it, but others took it out of our hands and threw it away, with an angry expreſſion, as if it was either noxious or ominous. We had frequently eaten the ſeeds of this plant, which are finely aromatic, without

without ſuffering the leaſt inconvenience, and were well convinced, that the whole plant was very harmleſs; but whether it might not be a ſign of enmity or defiance, in the ſame manner as many others are eſteemed emblems of friendſhip, muſt remain in doubt. 1774. JULY.

The tide was now ſo low, that the reef remained quite dry behind us, and a great number of the natives had walked over it to our boats, where they traded with the crew. Being in ſome meaſure ſurrounded by theſe people, the marines were placed alternately towards the ſhore and the ſea, in order to preſent a front both ways; though it did not appear that the natives had the leaſt intention of quarrelling with us. We converſed very freely with them, and their tongues ran on with ſuch unremitted volubility, that we compared the noiſe about us, to the confuſed uproar in a great fair. Our aſtoniſhment therefore, may ſooner be conceived than deſcribed, when this chattering ceaſed all at once, and a dead ſilence ſucceeded.—We looked at each other, we threw our eyes wildly about, and joined the wings of our *corps de garde*. The natives ſeemed to ſtand in expectation of ſome miſchance; but by degrees ſeeing us quiet, they began to talk again, and in a few minutes, mutual confidence was reſtored. The circumſtance which had given riſe to this alarm was trifling in itſelf, but expreſſed the good diſpoſition of the natives towards us. One of our boat's crew, had deſired a native to ſhoot an arrow

1774. JULY. into the air as high as he could. The man very readily complied, and had drawn his bow, when ſome of his countrymen, recollecting that we might look upon this as an infringement of the peace, called out to him to ſtop, and alarmed all the people on the beach, by pronouncing a few words, which immediately produced univerſal ſilence, expreſſing extreme jealouſy in a moſt dreadful manner, and affording a proper ſubject to exerciſe the talents of painters and poets. Affrighted countenances, full of anxiety and horrid ſuſpenſe; many a wild ſtare, many a gloomy, miſchievous look, and ſome undaunted ſteady glances; an infinite variety of attitudes; a characteriſtic difference in the manner of handling the arms; the ſcene, the groups of inhabitants, &c. all conſpired to furniſh the proper requiſites for a good picture.

As ſoon as this alarm was over, our wood-cutters reſumed their occupations, and the natives admired their ſkill. A few women now likewiſe came to our lines, but remained at ſome diſtance. They were of ſmall ſtature, and had the moſt diſagreeable features which we had obſerved in the South Sea. Thoſe who were grown up, and probably married, had ſhort pieces of a kind of cloth, or rather matting round their waiſts, reaching nearly to the knees; the reſt had only a ſtring round the middle with a whiſp of ſtraw; and the younger ones, from infancy to the age of ten years, went ſtark naked, like the boys of the ſame age. Some of

theſe

1774. JULY.

theſe women had covered their heads with the orange powder of turmeric-root; ſome had daubed their face, and others their whole body with this colour, which on their dark ſkins had a moſt filthy effect. But with their countrymen it is probably eſteemed an ornament, as the taſte of mankind is aſtoniſhingly various. We did not obſerve, that theſe women had any finery in their ears, round their neck, or arms; for it ſeems it is faſhionable in the iſland, only for the men to adorn themſelves. Wherever that is the caſe, the ſex is commonly oppreſſed, deſpiſed, and in a deplorable ſituation. They were ſeen with bundles on their backs, which contained their children, and had a moſt miſerable appearance. The men ſeemed to have no kind of regard for them, would not permit them to come nearer; and as oft as we went towards them, the women ran away.

About noon a great part of the croud diſperſed, probably to take their dinner. Captain Cook received an invitation from the chief, to accompany him to his dwelling in the woods, but declined it; and having continued on ſhore till one o'clock, we all re-imbarked in the beſt order, without any moleſtation from the natives, who remained on the beach till we were on board. M. de Bougainville had not been ſo fortunate at the Iſle of Lepers; the natives were very friendly to appearance, till all his men were embarked; but a flight of arrows was then ſent after them, and re-

1774. JULY. venged by a volley of muſketry, which killed ſeveral natives. As theſe iſlanders live in ſight of each other, and M. de Bougainville's viſit was ſo recent, the natives with whom we had to deal, were probably appriſed of the power of Europeans, and therefore acted with caution.

Immediately after dinner, captain Cook and my father went aſhore on the north ſide of the harbour, in queſt of our buoy, which the natives had conveyed thither, and which we ſaw on the beach by the help of our glaſſes. In the mean time the ſouthern ſhore, on which we had landed in the morning, was entirely clear of the natives; but in the woods we heard the frequent ſqueaking of pigs, from whence it may be concluded that the natives poſſeſs great numbers of theſe animals. Soon after our boat's departure, ſeveral natives in their canoes came alongſide to trade with us. They readily ſold us their bows and arrows, clubs and ſpears, for old rags and other trifles, plying between the ſhip and the ſhore all the evening. Their canoes were ſmall, not exceeding twenty feet in length, of indifferent workmanſhip, and without ornament, but provided with an outrigger. The number which came to the ſhip never amounted to more than fourteen, which ſeems to confirm that theſe people are no great fiſhermen.

Our boat returned before ſunſet, with the buoy which they had taken as ſoon as they landed, without any oppoſition on the part of the natives. Some trifling appendages

to

to it were loſt, but theſe could eaſily be replaced. The inhabitants of that part traded with the captain and his company, ſelling their arms and ornaments for various trifles of no intrinſic worth. An old woman parted with two ſemi-tranſparent bits of ſelenites, cut into a conical ſhape, and connected at the pointed ends, by means of a ribbon made of leaves. The diameter of the broad end was about half an inch, and the length of each bit three quarters of an inch. She took it out of the hole in the cartilage of her noſe, which was very broad, ugly, and ſmeared with black paint. Our people took great pains to obtain refreſhments from the natives; but notwithſtanding all their ſigns, they did not bring a ſingle article of food. Our goods, no doubt, did not ſeem valuable enough in their eyes, to be conſidered as an equivalent to eatables, which are always the real riches of mankind. Upon this plain principle the people of the South Sea always acted; and from the value which they put on our goods, after they were acquainted with their uſes, we can with a degree of certainty judge of their opulence, or the fertility of their country. From hence they ſtill proceeded northward, towards the exterior point of the harbour. Here they found ſome bananas, bread-fruit trees, coco-palms, and other plants, ſeparated by an encloſure; and near them ſome dwellings of the natives, wretched hovels, of an inconſiderable ſize, and ſo low that they could hardly ſtand upright in them. They conſiſted of a roof

1774. JULY.

thatched

1774. JULY. thatched with palm-leaves, reſting on a few poſts. Here however they obſerved a great many hogs, and ſome common poultry. The natives ſeemed to be convinced that our people had no ſiniſter intentions, and expreſſed much leſs curioſity than in the morning. Their numbers were inconſiderable in this place; and though they did not entirely approve of captain Cook's viſit to their houſes, they did not oppoſe it with perſeverance. From hence our gentlemen proceeded farther towards the point, till they came in ſight of the three iſlands to the eaſtward, of which they learnt the names. The largeſt, on which we had obſerved the volcano, was called Ambrrym, the high peek Pa-oòm, and the ſouthernmoſt Apèe. This good ſucceſs encouraged them to point to the land on which they ſtood, and to enquire of the natives by what name that was diſtinguiſhed. The name of Mallicollo, which they immediately received in anſwer, was ſo ſtrikingly ſimilar to Manicolo, which captain Quiros had received and preſerved above 160 years ago, that they rejoiced to obtain ſuch indiſputable proof of his veracity. It appears from Quiros's account, that he never viſited Mallicollo himſelf, but only received intelligence of it from the natives; however, that his Tierra del Eſpiritù Santo is a part of this group of iſlands, ſeemed at preſent to be very clear. Having obtained this information, they returned to their boats; but in their way one of them picked up an orange on the ſhore, which he ſhewed to the natives.

They

1774. JULY.

They told him the name which it bears in their country, and thus gave another proof that the accounts of Quiros, relative to the productions of the lands diſcovered by him, are not void of foundation. We had found ſhaddocks in the Friendly Iſlands, but never met with oranges in any iſland of the Pacific Ocean before. The ideas of the natural riches of the iſland of Mallicollo were conſiderably raiſed after this confirmation of Quiros's reports. Our people rowed into the harbour near two miles, and found its bottom filled with mangroves, but could not meet with freſh water. A river probably flowed into the ſea among theſe mangroves, but it was in vain to attempt a paſſage through the cloſe tiſſue of their branches, which multiply out of every ſeed, without forming a ſeparate tree. The evening was very hot, and they returned on board heartily tired. As they rowed along the ſhore, they heard the drums beating, and ſaw the natives dancing to the ſound by their fires. Their muſic, and that which they made the preceding night, was not remarkable either for harmony or variety, but ſeemed to be of a more lively turn than that of the Friendly Iſlands.

During night ſeveral of our people tried to fiſh, and ſome of them were ſucceſsful. One caught a ſhark nine feet long, which was now very acceptable, all our freſh proviſions being entirely conſumed, excepting a few yams, which were eaten inſtead of bread. Another took an Indian

1774. JULY. dian ſucking-fiſh *(echeneis naucrates)* near two feet long; and a third made prize of two large red fiſhes of the ſea-bream kind (probably the *ſparus erythrinus*, Linn.) one of which he kept for his meſſmates, and the other he preſented to the lieutenants. The captain received a ſhare of the ſhark, on which we feaſted the next day, when the whole ſhip's company regaled themſelves with a freſh meal. Sharks do not afford a very palatable food, but it was at all times preferable to ſalt proviſions, and neceſſity taught us to reliſh it. This ſevere teacher reconciles the Greenlander to whale-blubber, and the Hottentot to filthy inteſtines; and time makes theſe indelicate viands acceptable and delicious to their taſte. This ſhark, when cut open, was found to have the bone-point of a poiſoned arrow ſticking in his head, having been ſhot quite through the ſkull. The wound was healed ſo perfectly, that not the ſmalleſt veſtige of it appeared on the outſide. A piece of the wood ſtill remained ſticking to the bony point, as well as a few fibres with which it had been tied on; but both the wood and the fibres were ſo rotten, as to crumble into duſt at the touch. Fiſhes therefore are not affected by theſe arrows, which we ſuppoſed to be poiſoned.

The next morning we weighed the anchor and ſet ſail, having ſcarcely had time ſufficient to ſketch a plan of the harbour, which was honoured with the title of Port Sandwich. Its ſituation, deduced from aſtronomical obſervations,

tions, is in 16° 28′ ſouth lat. and 167° 56′ eaſt long. We were becalmed before we could clear the reefs, and obliged to ſend our boats ahead to tow us out, which they performed very ſlowly and with great difficulty. In the mean time the natives came to us with all their fourteen canoes, and ſold us great numbers of arrows of all kinds and ſome clubs. They made ſeveral trips between the ſhip and the ſhore, as they had done the preceding day, and ſeemed to be very eager to part with their arms for Taheitee cloth. We repeated our demand for proviſions; but they would not liſten to it, and only parted with what they could more eaſily ſpare or replace. Towards noon we got clear of the harbour, and left Mallicollo with the ſea-breeze, which then freſhened, ſtanding over to Ambrrym, or the Iſland of Volcanoes. Whether we might have obtained ſome refreſhments by ſtaying a few days longer and improving our acquaintance with the natives, is very uncertain; for ſince they ſet no value on our iron-ware, we could offer no equivalent for their proviſions. 1774. JULY.

The iſland of Mallicollo is about twenty leagues long from north to ſouth, and the port which we had left lies in its ſouth-eaſt extremity. Its inland mountains are very high, clad with foreſts, and without doubt contain many fine ſprings, though we could not trace them between the trees. The ſoil, as far as we were able to examine it, is a rich and fertile mould, like that which covers the plains of

1774. JULY. the Society Iſlands; and the vicinity of the volcano at Ambrrym gave us great room to ſuppoſe that Mallicollo is no ſtranger to the proceſſes carried on in theſe natural laboratories. Its vegetable productions ſeem to be luxuriant and in great variety, and the uſeful plants not leſs numerous than in the iſlands we had before viſited. Coco-nuts, bread-fruit, bananas, ſugar-canes, yams, eddoes, turmerick, and oranges were ſeen on the iſland, and enumerated by the natives. Hogs and common poultry are their domeſtic animals; to which we have added dogs, by ſelling them a pair of puppies brought from the Society Iſlands. They received them with ſtrong ſigns of extreme ſatisfaction; but as they called them hogs, *(brooàs,)* we were convinced that they were entirely new to them. We did not find any other quadruped during our ſhort ſtay, nor is it probable that, on an iſland ſo far remote from continents, there ſhould be any wild animals of that claſs. In the courſe of one day, and confined to a barren beach, it is not likely that we could form a more adequate idea of the animals than of the vegetables of this country. We ſaw enough, however, to be convinced, that the woods are inhabited by many ſpecies of birds, among which there are doubtleſs ſome which have as yet eſcaped the attention of naturaliſts.

The productions of Mallicollo are, however, leſs remarkable and ſtriking at firſt ſight than the race of its inhabitants. To judge of their numbers from the croud we ſaw

at

at Port Sandwich, I ſhould conclude, that they are far from inconſiderable; but conſidering the great ſize of the iſland, I cannot ſuppoſe it to be very populous. Fifty thouſand is, I think, the greateſt number we can admit; and theſe are not confined to the ſkirts of the hills, as at Taheitee, but diſperſed over the whole extent of more than ſix hundred ſquare miles. We ought to figure their country to ourſelves as one extenſive foreſt: they have only begun to clear and plant a few inſulated ſpots, which are loſt in it, like ſmall iſlands in the vaſt Pacific Ocean. Perhaps if we could ever penetrate through the darkneſs which involves the hiſtory of this nation, we might find that they have arrived in the South Sea much later than the natives of the Friendly and Society Iſlands. So much at leaſt is certain, that they appear to be of a race totally diſtinct from theſe. Their form, their language, and their manners ſtrongly and completely mark the difference. The natives on ſome parts of New Guinea and Papua ſeem to correſpond in many particulars with what we have obſerved among the Mallicolleſe. The black colour and woolly hair in particular are characteriſtics common to both nations. If the influence of climate be admitted, which is ſo ſtrongly defended by count Buffon, it offers another proof that Mallicollo has been but lately peopled *, ſince the interval of time has not been ſufficient to work a change in the colour and hair of the inhabitants. 1774. JULY.

* The reader will perceive that we only uſe this expreſſion comparatively.

1774. JULY. But I am far from being convinced of this general and powerful influence of climates. I have only ventured out into the great field of probabilities, and am ready to quit my opinion as ſoon as another more juſt and more rational is offered. New Guinea and the iſlands adjacent, the only countries from whence we can expect ſome light on this ſubject, ſtill remain unknown to us, not only in regard to their geographical ſituation, but more eſpecially as to their inhabitants. From the voyagers who have viſited that part of the world * it appears that many diſtinct tribes dwell in its different parts. But it is particularly to be remarked, that beſides the black race, there are alſo ſome of a lighter colour, who, if we may judge from their cuſtoms, ſeem to be related to the natives of the Society and Friendly Iſlands. Some other tribes there are who may, in all probability, be a mixture of both races. The ſlender form of the Mallicolleſe is a character, as far as I know, peculiar to them and the New Hollanders; but that nation hath nothing in common with them in all other reſpects. Their cuſtom of tying a rope very faſt round their belly is ſtill more ſingular, and would be fatal to a perſon unaccuſtomed from infancy to ſuch an abſurd ligature. The rope was as thick as a man's finger, and cut ſuch a deep notch acroſs the navel, that the belly ſeemed in a manner double, one part being above and the other below the rope. Their bracelets

* Dampier, Carteret, Bougainville.

which

which preſs the upper arm ſo cloſely, muſt have been put on while the natives are very young, and appear to have been contrived upon the ſame principle. The features of theſe people, though remarkably irregular and ugly, yet are full of great ſprightlineſs, and expreſs a quick comprehenſion. Their lips and the lower part of their face are entirely different from thoſe of African Negroes; but the upper part, eſpecially the noſe, is of a very ſimilar conformation, and the ſubſtance of the hair the ſame. The depreſſion of their forehead may perhaps be artificial, as the heads of infants may be ſqueezed into all kinds of forms. On the continent of America there are many inſtances of nations who disfigure their heads to make them reſemble the ſun, the moon, or ſome other object. But, upon the whole, this figure of the forehead among the Mallicolleſe is not carried to exceſs, and does not remarkably encreaſe their uglineſs. 1774. JULY.

The climate of Mallicollo, and the adjacent iſlands, is very warm, but perhaps not at all times ſo temperate as at Taheitee, becauſe the extent of land is infinitely greater. However, during our ſhort ſtay we experienced no unuſual degree of heat, the thermometer being at 76° and 78°, which is very moderate in the torrid zone. Dreſs, in ſuch a climate, is to be conſidered as an article of luxury, and cannot properly be placed among the indiſpenſible neceſſaries. At Mallicollo they have not yet attained that degree of opulence which could have ſuggeſted the invention of garments.

1774. JULY. garments. In their tufted groves they neither feel the ſcorching beams of a vertical ſun, nor ever know the uncomfortable ſenſation of cold. Briars and ſhrubberies oblige them to take ſome precaution, and the impulſes of nature towards the encreaſe of the ſpecies, have ſuggeſted the moſt ſimple means of preſerving the faculties and guarding againſt the dangers of mutilation, (ſee pag. 206.) We are too apt to look upon the principles which are early inſtilled into our mind by education as innate, and have frequently miſtaken a moral ſentiment for a phyſical inſtinct. From the contemplation of unpoliſhed people, we find that modeſty and chaſtity, which have long been ſuppoſed inherent in the human mind, are local ideas, unknown in the ſtate of nature, and modified according to the various degrees of civilization. It is not likely that the Mallicolleſe have ever thought of baniſhing unſeaſonable ideas from the mind, by a contrivance which ſeems much more apt to provoke their deſires. Nay, it is uncertain whether the ſcanty dreſs of their women owes its origin to a ſenſe of ſhame, or to an artful endeavour to pleaſe.

The ideas of beauty ſeem to be more obvious, though ſingular and different among divers nations. The Mallicolleſe are not ſatisfied with the charms of their own perſon, but think that a ſtone hung in the noſe, a bracelet, a necklace of ſhells, and a ſhining black paint, ſet them off to greater advantage. Their women, as far as we could obſerve,

obſerve, have no trinkets, but paint themſelves with the yellow colour of turmerick, which has a peculiar aromatic ſmell. The natives of the Friendly Iſles powder their hair and the women of Eaſter Iſland likewiſe paint their face and garments with it. It may therefore be employed, on account of its ſuppoſed virtues, rather than for ornament. The Mallicolleſe differ very remarkably from the lighter-coloured nation of the South Sea, by keeping their body entirely from punctures, which characterize all the various tribes of that race. 1774. JULY.

Their food ſeems to be principally vegetable, ſince they apply themſelves to agriculture. At times they may likewiſe feaſt on pork or fowls; and though we had no time to obſerve any implements of fiſhing, yet, as they have canoes, it may be ſuppoſed that they have not entirely neglected the produce of the ocean. Our ſhort ſtay did not give us an opportunity of ſeeing any of their tools; but from the workmanſhip of their boats, and the conſtruction of their houſes, we have no great reaſon to admire their ſkill in the arts. Their iſland being wholly covered with foreſts, it muſt require a great deal of labour to cultivate a ſpot of ground ſufficient for their ſupport. The country itſelf appears very fertile; but the luxuriant growth of wild vegetables, eaſily conquers and deſtroys the more tender ſhoots of thoſe which are planted. This being the caſe, it may ſerve to account for the cuſtom of confining their limbs

to

1774. JULY. to a ſmall and ſlender form, by ropes, bracelets, &c. Such monſtrous contrivances to pinch and contract the body, ſeem to be dictated by neceſſity, and in time may have been adopted as the marks of beauty. As their agriculture is ſo toilſome, it is plain they have not time to manufacture a dreſs, for which they have no immediate neceſſity. Repoſe and indolence are the favourite principles of ſmall uncivilized ſocieties, and neceſſity alone forces them to become induſtrious. We have obſerved that the Mallicolleſe paſs away a part of their time with muſic and dancing. Their inſtruments are doubtleſs very ſimple; we heard no other than drums; and theſe, together with whiſtles or pipes, are moſt eaſily invented. The common tranſactions of domeſtic life are ſo quiet and regular, that human nature ſeems to require ſome excentric movement to animate it. At times to be extravagant in the motions and exerciſes of the body, to produce a variety of ſounds from various ſubſtances, and to ſtrain the vocal organs beyond their uſual ſcale, are functions perhaps indiſpenſibly neceſſary in the revolution of human life, to act as ſpurs or *ſtimuli*, and to ſweeten the labours of the day.

The drums of the Mallicolleſe not only ſerve as a paſtime, but are likewiſe employed to ſound an alarm in caſes of danger. We have great reaſon to believe, that they are frequently involved in quarrels with the iſlanders in the neighbourhood; and it is not improbable, that living diſperſed

diſperſed throughout the iſland in ſmall families, they frequently diſagree amongſt themſelves. We never ſaw the Mallicolleſe without their arms, (except thoſe who came into the captain's cabin); and it ſeems much more care and ingenuity has been beſtowed on this part of their manufactures than upon any other. Their bows are ſtrong, elaſtic, and nicely poliſhed; their arrows well wrought; and thoſe which we ſuppoſed to be poiſoned, were very neatly ornamented. The cuſtom of poiſoning the arrows is a proof of their underſtanding; and the deſire of revenge againſt unjuſt oppreſſion, may have ſuggeſted it. Their ſmall ſtature, and ſlender make, ſeem indeed to require ſome artifice to ſupply the place of ſtrength; but it is at this moment doubtful, whether their arrows are really poiſoned. The dog on which we made the experiment on the day of our arrival, recovered perfectly without any aſſiſtance, though he was afflicted with the moſt dreadful illneſs from eating part of a poiſoned fiſh. Another experiment was tried in the ſequel upon a different dog; an inciſion was made in his leg with a lancet, and the gummy ſubſtance, ſuppoſed to be the poiſon, was laid into it, and covered with a plaſter. The dog was very lame a few days, from the ſwelling and feſtering of the wound; but gradually recovered like the firſt. The iſlanders of Santa Cruz *, who killed a number

1774. JULY.

* Egmont Iſland, of captain Carteret.—See Hawkeſworth, vol. I. p. 576.

1774. JULY. of captain Carteret's men, ſeem, according to his deſcription, to be very like the Mallicolleſe; and are likewiſe accuſed of having poiſoned arrows *, by the Spaniſh navigator who firſt diſcovered that iſland. Their bows and arrows, according to captain Carteret, are, however, of a remarkable length †, and the latter pointed with flints. Quiros alſo mentions poiſoned arrows among the natives in the Bay of St. Philip at St. Jago ‡; but from both inſtances it appears, that the ſuppoſed poiſon was not very efficacious. The wooden ruffle, which ſecures the arms of the Mallicolleſe againſt the recoil of the bow-ſtring, ſeems to imply a frequent uſe of their bows. Beſides the miſſile weapons, ſuch as arrows and ſpears, they have alſo ſhort clubs, ſeemingly for cloſe engagement, and are thus well prepared for all occaſions. Their behaviour towards us was in general harmleſs, but cautious. We received no invitations to ſtay with them; for they did not like the proximity of ſuch powerful people, being probably accuſtomed to acts of violence and ill uſage from the reſt of their neighbours. In ſome of their countenances we thought we could trace a miſchievous, ill-natured diſpoſition; but we might miſtake jealouſy for hatred. It is probable, that being continually on their guard, and engaged in wars, they have ſome

* See Mendaña's voyage in Mr. Dalrymple's collection, vol. I. p. 78.

† The bows are ſix feet five inches, and the arrows four feet four inches.

‡ See Mr. Dalrymple's collection, vol. I. p. 135.

chiefs

chiefs and leaders in battle, who, like the commanders at New Zeeland, are obeyed at the time of action. The only man whom we ſuppoſed to be a chief, at Mallicollo, did not appear to be reſpected; and it was only when he procured us ſome freſh water, that we could attribute to him any authority at all. Remarks on the government of a people are ſeldom to be made at the firſt interview, and therefore I only offer probabilities inſtead of facts. Their religion is entirely unknown to us, as well as the particular cuſtoms of domeſtic life; nor can it be ſuppoſed, that we could gather any intelligence concerning their diſeaſes. We did not take notice of any ſick perſon among them during our ſtay; however, according to Mr. de Bougainville's account, the natives on an adjacent iſland are ſubject to the leproſy in ſuch a high degree, that he named it the Iſle of Lepers. 1774. JULY.

The general character of the Mallicolleſe ought to be conſidered with a retroſpect to their civilization. Diſperſed into ſmall tribes, who have frequent cauſes of diſpute, it is not ſurpriſing that they are cautious and diſtruſtful. At the ſame time, however, their behaviour towards us ſhewed, that they had no propenſity to quarrel without a cauſe, but wiſhed to give no offence; and were in general much diſpleaſed with a few individuals among themſelves who attempted to infringe the peace. Green boughs, their ſigns of friendſhip, confirmed this good diſpoſition. The ceremony of pouring water on their heads, is ſtill more important, as it

1774. JULY. ſhews a great ſimilarity between them and the people of New Guinea. Dampier obſerved exactly the ſame ſign of amity at Pulo Sabuda, on the weſtern coaſt of New Guinea *. The ſhort converſations which we had with the Mallicolleſe, proved them to be a people of quick perception; their ſenſes are acute, and their intellects very open to improvement. From their amuſements it may be concluded, that they are chearful and good-humoured; and if I may venture another conjecture, they only want the impulſe of an ambitious individual to bring them into a higher ſtate of civilization. After this detail, it is time to reſume the thread of our voyage.

Having cleared the reefs of Port Sandwich, and ſtanding towards the Iſle of Ambrrym, we gradually came in ſight of the ſouth-eaſt extremity of Mallicollo, where four or five ſmall iſlands form a kind of bay. Ambrrym, on which the volcano is ſituated, appears to be upwards of twenty leagues in circuit. The centre of the iſland lies in 16° 15′ S. and 168° 20′ E. Pa-oom, the high peak to the ſouth of it, is of an inconſiderable ſize, but we were dubious whether the land which we ſaw before, or to the weſtward of it, and which was of moderate height, is connected with it or not. The whole circuit of both parts, ſuppoſing them to form a ſingle iſland, cannot exceed five leagues. The peak, according to our obſervations, lies in 16° 25′ S. and

* See Dampier's Voyages, vol. III. p. 186.

168°

168° 30′ E. Apee, the iſland to the ſouth of this peak, is large, hilly, and of the ſame extent as Ambrrym, being nearly ſeven leagues long. Its middle is ſituated in 16° 42′ S. and 168° 36′ E. The numerous ſmokes which aroſe from all theſe iſlands, gave us reaſon to ſuppoſe, that the natives dreſs their victuals above ground, by an open fire. At the Society and Friendly Iſles, where the inhabitants are accuſtomed to ſtew their food, by means of heated ſtones under the ground, we rarely perceived either ſmoke or fire. 1774. JULY.

The freſh meal with which all our ſhip's company regaled themſelves this day, was very near being fatal to ſome of them. All the lieutenants and their meſſmates, together with one of the mates, ſeveral midſhipmen, and the carpenter, having eaten of the red ſea breams (*ſparus erythrinus*) of which two had been caught, were in the ſpace of a few hours, ſeized with violent ſymptoms of being poiſoned. It began with great heat in the face, acute head-ache, ſevere vomiting, and diarrhæa; the arms, knees, and legs were ſo benumbed, that they could ſcarcely walk or ſtand; the ſalival glands were ſwelled, and a moſt copious diſcharge enſued; they were alſo troubled with acute pains, and ſpaſms in the bowels. A hog, which had eaten of the garbage was ſeized with ſimilar ſymptoms, ſwelled to a great ſize, and died at night. Several dogs on board, having received a ſhare of the entrails, and ſome being fed upon

1774. JULY. upon part of the boiled fiſh, were affected in the ſame manner; they groaned moſt pitifully, had violent reachings, and could hardly drag their limbs along. A little favourite parroquet from the Friendly Iſles, which familiarly hopped on its maſter's ſhoulder, having likewiſe taſted a morſel of the fiſh, died the next day. In a word, the joy of having obtained a freſh meal was ſuddenly converted into ſorrow; and the only comfort in this misfortune was, that our ſurgeon had dined with the captain this day, and by that means eſcaped the fate of his meſſmates.

We ſtill continued in ſight of Mallicollo, Ambrrym, Apee, Sunday 24. and Pa-oom, the next morning; but ſtood towards the ſouthernmoſt iſland then in ſight, and diſcovered on the 21ſt, which from the three hills upon it, was named Three-Hills Iſland (ſee p. 204.) We approached within half a mile of it, and obſerved it to be of the ſame nature with thoſe already diſcovered. It was well wooded, and probably well inhabited; for ſome of the natives appeared on the ſhore, who reſembled thoſe of Mallicollo, and were armed like them with bows and arrows. A very extenſive reef runs out from the ſouth point of the iſland, with ſome rocks in it. The whole iſland ſeemed to be about five leagues in circuit; its greateſt extent was from north-eaſt to ſouth-weſt; and according to aſtronomical obſervations, it is ſituated in 17° 4′ S. latitude, and 168° 32′ E. longitude. At noon we put about, and ſtood for ſeveral ſmall iſlands

iſlands and broken lands, which appeared off the S. E. end of the iſland of Apee, and now lay to the N. E. of us. We likewiſe had ſight of a peak to the S. E. and of ſome land beyond that, which ſeemed very large, though at a great diſtance. The number of iſlands in this group was very ſurpriſing; and their direction to the ſouthward, gave us great hopes of continuing to make diſcoveries, which might gradually lead us back once more to New Zeeland. 1774. JULY.

We ſtood on towards theſe north-eaſterly lands, and came among them in the afternoon. They were of an inconſiderable ſize when compared to Mallicollo, Ambrrym, Apee, or even to Three-hills Iſland, and Pa-oom. Moſt of them, however, were inhabited; which circumſtance we collected particularly in the evening, when we ſaw ſeveral fires, even on thoſe which we had by day-light judged to have no inhabitants. After ſunſet we were becalmed for ſeveral hours in the midſt of theſe iſles; the darkneſs of the night, and ſeveral broken rocks cloſe to us on all ſides, rendered our ſituation extremely critical. The navigator, who means to explore new iſlands, and give an accurate account of their poſition, is often in danger of loſing his ſhip. It is impoſſible for him to form a juſt conception of the coaſt, without approaching cloſe to it; but he muſt neceſſarily be expoſed to the dangers of a ſudden ſtorm, a ſunken rock, or a ſwift current, which are ſufficient,

1774. JULY. ficient, in a few moments, to deſtroy all his hopes of glory. Prudence and caution are very neceſſary in the conduct of every great enterprize; but it ſeems, that in a voyage of diſcovery, as in every undertaking of conſequence, a certain degree of raſhneſs, and reliance on good fortune, become the principal roads to fame, by being crowned with great and undeſerved ſucceſs.

Theſe dangerous iſlands received the name of Shepherd's Iſles, from the Rev. Dr. A. Shepherd, F. R. S. profeſſor of aſtronomy in the univerſity of Cambridge. We obtained a freſh breeze the ſame night, and tacked off and on till the Monday 25. next morning at day-break, when, being near the ſouthermoſt iſland, we ſtood away to the ſouthward for the lands which we had diſcovered the day before. We paſſed to the eaſtward of Three-hills Iſland, towards two other iſles a few leagues to the ſouth of it, of a much ſmaller ſize, but covered with verdure and groves in the ſame manner. We ſailed between one of them and a high columnar rock, which we named the Monument, from its remarkable ſhape. The ſurf which had beaten upon it, had worn ſeveral deep furrows and channels into it. It looked blackiſh, might be an hundred and fifty yards high, and was not wholly deſtitute of verdure. A great number of boobies and terns were ſeen flying about it, and ſeemed to have taken up their reſidence on it. The larger iſland, near which it was ſituated, was called Two-hills Iſland, by captain

captain Cook, becauſe it had only two elevations of any remarkable ſize. 1774. JULY.

We now ſtood due ſouth, towards the large land which appeared in that quarter, and which we had already noticed on the 24th. A canoe, with a triangular ſail, was obſerved at a great diſtance, coming from the S. W. towards Three-hills Iſland. The natives of theſe different iſlands have therefore, in all likelihood, a friendly intercourſe with each other, in the ſame manner as the different inhabitants of the Society and Friendly Iſlands. In the afternoon we had almoſt made the ſouthern iſland, which now appeared to conſiſt of two; and were preparing to paſs to windward of both, being near the eaſtermoſt of them, when the breeze ſuddenly failed us, and we were carried to the weſt by the tide or current at a great rate. Our ſituation this night was no leſs dangerous than on the preceding, with this difference only, that the moon ſhone very bright, and we could judge of the quick advances which we made towards the weſtern iſland. Its northernmoſt point was of a great height, rocky, black, and almoſt perpendicular, having only a narrow beach, and a few ſcattered rocks at the bottom. We remained in the moſt dreadful ſuſpenſe till near ten o'clock, as the current was ſo ſtrong, that hoiſting out our boats would ſcarcely have availed us any thing. The ſhip's head, her ſtern, or her broad-ſide, were by turns directed towards the ſhore, on which we heard the ſurf breaking

1774. JULY. with a much more dreadful ſound than it had ever had before, when unconnected with the ideas of immediate danger; at laſt we fortunately drifted clear of the point at a ſhort diſtance.

Tueſday 26. The next morning a gentle breeze ſprung up, with which we advanced towards the land again. We now ran within the eaſtermoſt iſland, which, though it was not above eight or nine miles in circuit, was however inhabited, many of the people running along ſhore to gaze at us, with bows, arrows, and darts in their hands. This iſle had a hill of moderate height in its centre, which appeared to be deſtitute of woods in moſt parts, the cultivated lands and groves lying at its foot and on its firſt ſlope. They conſiſted of coco-palms, bananas, and various other trees; amongſt which we diſcerned a number of ſmall huts, and on the beach, ſeveral canoes hauled aſhore. The land oppoſite to the weſt was about four or five leagues diſtant from it, and now likewiſe appeared to conſiſt of two iſlands. One of theſe to the north, the ſame on which we were near being loſt, was ſmall, not above twelve or fifteen miles in circumference, but of moderate height, like the former, and with much the ſame aſpect. To the ſouth of it, the main iſland appeared, which extended no leſs than ten leagues from N. W. to S. E. It was of a moderate height, like the two others near it, but very gently ſloping in all parts, and preſented to the eye many beautiful proſpects. Thick groves, and extenſive

extenſive tracts of clear ground, were very agreeably varied, and the latter had a rich yellowiſh colour, which exactly reſembled the golden corn-fields of Europe. We all agreed that this iſland was one of the fineſt we had hitherto ſeen in the new group, and ſeemed to be well ſituated for the purpoſe of an European ſettlement. We kept at a conſiderable diſtance from it; but it appeared to us to be more thinly inhabited than thoſe which we had left to the northward. This circumſtance would facilitate the eſtabliſhment of a colony; and if the ſpirit of philanthropy could ever animate the planters, they would here have an opportunity to become the benefactors of the natives. From what we obſerved at Mallicollo, this race of men is very intelligent, and would readily receive the improvements of civilization. There appeared to be a bay towards the N. W. end of the iſland, which we did not examine, on account of ſeveral ſmall iſlands and reefs lying before it to the eaſtward. It appeared to form a deep indenture on the ſhore, and to be more acceſſible from the weſtward. Captain Cook named this extenſive iſland Sandwich, that to the north Hinchinbrook, and the other to the eaſt Montagu. The middle of Sandwich Iſland lies in 17° 40′ S. lat. and 168° 30′ E. long. 1774. JULY.

We ran to the ſouth-eaſtward all the afternoon and night; but at day-break, the next morning, another iſland was ſeen ahead, about fourteen leagues diſtant, Sandwich Wedneſd. 27.

1774. JULY. being ſtill faintly in ſight, nearly at the ſame diſtance. Our ſhips now perfectly reſembled an hoſpital; the poiſoned patients were ſtill in a deplorable ſituation; they continued to have gripes, and acute pains in all their bones: in the day time they were in a manner giddy, and felt a great heavineſs in their heads; at night, as ſoon as they were warm in bed, their pains redoubled, and robbed them entirely of ſleep. The ſecretion of *ſaliva* was exceſſive; the ſkin peeled off from the whole body, and pimples appeared on their hands. Thoſe who were leſs afflicted with pain, were much weaker in proportion, and crawled about the decks, emaciated to mere ſhadows. We had not one lieutenant able to do duty; and as one of the mates, and ſeveral of the midſhipmen were likewiſe ill, the watches were commanded by the gunner and the other mates. The dogs which had unfortunately fed upon the ſame fiſh, were in a ſtill worſe condition, as we could not give them any relief. They groaned and panted moſt piteouſly, drank great quantities of water, and appeared to be tortured with pain. Thoſe which had eaten of the entrails were infinitely more affected than the reſt. One of theſe poor creatures was doomed to be a martyr, being the ſame upon which we tried the Mallicolleſe arrows; however, he luckily got the better of both theſe attacks, and was brought to England. It is remarkable, that captain Quiros complains of a ſort of fiſh, which he calls pargos, that poiſoned great part of his crew,

crew, in the bay of St. Philip and St. James. Nothing is more probable, than that it was of the ſame ſpecies, pargos being the Spaniſh name of the ſea-bream *(pagrus.)* It is to be ſuſpected, at the ſame time, that theſe fiſhes are not always poiſonous, but, like many ſpecies in the Weſt and Eaſt Indies, may acquire that quality, by feeding on poiſonous vegetables. The circumſtance, that the inteſtines were more poiſonous than the reſt, ſeems to confirm this ſuppoſition; the greateſt part of the venom remaining in the *primæ viæ*, whilſt only a ſmall part was carried into the muſcles, by the chyle and blood. 1774. JULY.

We had had very mild weather after leaving Mallicollo, but the trade-wind had blown freſh from time to time. At preſent, however, being in ſight of this new iſland, we were ſtopped by light airs and faint breezes. All the next day we lay becalmed, and rolled about very uncomfortably, being ſet to the northward ſeveral leagues by a current. In the evening we diſcovered another iſland very far off to the ſouth-eaſtward, of which for the preſent we took no notice. The day after we obtained a breeze towards noon, which continued till the next day in the evening, and brought us within ſix leagues of the land. In the afternoon one of the dogs, leſs affected with the poiſon of the fiſh than the reſt, being quite recovered, we determined to try another experiment with the poiſon of the Mallicolleſe arrow. An inciſion was made with a lancet in his thigh, and the re- Thurſday 28. Friday 29. Saturday 30.

ſinous

1774. JULY. ſinous ſubſtance ſticking on the bony point of the arrow, as well as the green earthy ſtuff which lodged in the compartments formed by the coco-nut fibres, were ſcraped off, and laid into the wound, covered with a plaſter, in order to make the experiment as fair as poſſible. The dog, as I have already mentioned, recovered as quickly as if nothing had been laid into the wound.

Sunday 31. The next morning it was abſolutely calm again, and many of our ſailors obſerved, that the iſland before us was certainly enchanted, becauſe our attempts to come near it had hitherto failed. At preſent we ſaw the other iſland to the ſouth, which had been diſcovered on the 28th, more diſtinctly than before. The nearer iſland ſeemed to be leſs fertile and agreeable than thoſe which we had hitherto diſcovered; it ſeemed, however, to be inhabited, which we concluded on ſeeing a great ſmoke riſe from it. Our ſituation was the more diſagreeable, as it was tantalizing to be in ſight of land, and not to be able to approach it. Notwithſtanding its ſuppoſed barrenneſs, which precluded the hope of refreſhments, we were all very deſirous of being better acquainted with it. We never felt the tedioufneſs of being confined to the ſhip more ſeverely, nor ever wiſhed more eargerly to have intercourſe with human creatures. The company of ſavages, and an opportunity of contemplating their manners, dwellings and plantations, were at preſent, in our eſtimation, deſirable objects. In the afternoon

noon two ſharks were caught, which ſwam about the ſhip, attended by pilot and ſucking-fiſhes. One of theſe huge voracious animals ſeemed to be a ſpecies of epicure, having in his maw no leſs than four young turtles, of eighteen inches in diameter, two large cuttle-fiſhes, and the feathers and ſkeleton of a booby; but though he was well fed, he did not diſdain a piece of ſalt pork, with which we baited our hook. The ſailors had no ſooner hauled them on deck, than every one drew his knife, and in a few moments divided them into ſmall pieces, which they haſtened to dreſs, and to devour. One of the ſharks making ſome reſiſtance in hauling up, was ſhot dead by our officers, who were equally concerned with the reſt of their ſhipmates to prevent his eſcape. In this manner we revenged the cauſe of the whole ſubmarine creation. Salt proviſions are more loathſome in hot climates than every where elſe, which is partly owing to the raging thirſt they occaſion. As we had lived upon ſalt meat ſince we left Namoka, it may be eaſily imagined that no ſhark was ever more delicious to our taſte. A faint breeze ſprung up at night, with which we proceeded towards the land once more. We diſcerned a ſingle rock the next morning lying off its north end, at the diſtance of a few leagues; and as we approached, found the iſland leſs barren than we had at firſt ſuppoſed. Towards ten o'clock, we were moſt dreadfully alarmed by a fire in the ſhip. Confuſion and horror appeared in all our faces,

1774. JULY.

AUGUST. Monday 1.

1774. JULY. faces, at the bare mention of it; and it was ſome time before proper meaſures were taken to ſtop its progreſs: for in theſe moments of danger, few are able to collect their faculties, and to act with cool deliberation. The mind which unexpected and imminent danger cannot ruffle for a time, is one of the ſcarceſt phænomena in human nature; no wonder then, that it was not to be met with among the ſmall number of perſons to whom the ſhip was entruſted. To be on board of a ſhip on fire, is perhaps one of the moſt trying ſituations that can be imagined; a ſtorm itſelf, on a dangerous coaſt, is leſs dreadful, as it does not ſo entirely preclude all hopes of eſcaping with life. Providentially, the fire of this day was very trifling, and extinguiſhed in a few moments. Our fears ſuggeſted that it was in the ſail-room; but we ſoon found, that a piece of Taheitee cloth, careleſsly laid near the lamp in the ſteward's room, had taken fire, and raiſed a quantity of ſmoke, which gave the alarm. In proportion as we advanced towards the land, we diſcerned fine woods upon it, interſperſed with glades and plantations on the very ſummits of the hills. A number of coco-palms were likewiſe obſerved upon it, which had not however that noble appearance, by which we diſtinguiſhed them in other countries.

In the afternoon we came up with the weſt ſide of the iſland, and running cloſe to the ſhore, we obſerved ſeveral ſmall beaches, at the foot of ſteep hills, covered with plantations.

tations. Theſe chiefly conſiſted of bananas, and were confined in neat encloſures, near which we alſo noticed ſeveral houſes like ſheds. Thirty or forty natives were ſeen running along the ſhore, armed with bows and arrows, as well as ſpears. They looked very ſwarthy at a diſtance, and reſembled the people of Mallicollo. Some women were obſerved among them, who wore a kind of petticoat, apparently made of leaves and ſtraw, which deſcended to the mid-leg, or ſometimes nearly to the ancles; the men on the contrary were naked, like the Mallicolleſe. We entered a kind of open bay, where the natives of both ſexes waded a good way into the water, and called to us, to all appearance, with very friendly geſtures. We ſtood acroſs the bay, where it was not thought proper to anchor. It was growing dark when we opened the ſouthernmoſt point, and ſaw the coaſt ſtretching to the eaſt. As the wind was falling again, we did not attempt to ſtand in ſhore any longer, but rather endeavoured to keep off during night, for fear of being ſet towards it by the current. Every morning and evening, at ſun-riſe and ſun-ſet, our ſailors waſhed the decks from one end to the other, to prevent the heat from drying them up too much, and making them leaky. This evening one of the marines, who was drawing water on the ſhip's ſide, for this purpoſe, had the misfortune to fall over-board. He was not able to ſwim; however, by bringing the ſhip to inſtantly, and throwing a

1774. AUGUST.

1774. AUGUST. number of ropes over-board, one of which he ſeized, we ſucceeded in our endeavours to ſave him. The poor fellow was immediately conducted between decks, by his comrades the marines, being much weakened by the efforts he had made to ſave himſelf by keeping faſt hold of the rope, as well as the ſudden fear of death. They ſhifted his clothes, and gave him a dram or two of brandy to revive the animal ſpirits, treating him with peculiar tenderneſs, the reſult of an *eſprit du corps*, to which ſailors are at preſent utter ſtrangers.

Tueſday 2. The calms which had ſo long perſecuted us, were not yet at an end. Our ſhip lay like a log on the water all night, and the next day being gradually drifted into the bay which we had paſſed the day before, the boats were hoiſted out, and ſent in queſt of anchorage. They had no ſoundings till they came near the ſhore, but there had found twenty fathom, at the diſtance of three cables lengths (ſix hundred yards.) The natives were ſeen running to the beach again, but our people held no converſe with them; for captain Cook ſeeing a breeze ſpring up, made the ſignal for them to return, and hoiſted them in again. The cannon which was fired on the occaſion, ſeemed to have no particular effect on the natives, who were doubtleſs utterly unacquainted with our arms, and with Europeans.

Wedneſd. 3. We ſailed round the N. W. point of the iſland, and in the morning advanced towards the ſingle rock, which we had noticed

noticed before. A very remarkable mountain with a double ſummit, which had ſome reſemblance to a ſaddle, lay on the iſland juſt abreaſt of this rock, and ſeemed to be of great height, even though the reſt of the iſland had a conſiderable elevation. The detached rock appeared to be covered with wood, and our ſhip being greatly in want of fuel, two boats were hoiſted out and ſent towards it. The hopes of making ſome botanical acquiſitions, engaged us to embark in one of theſe boats. The diſtance which had been ſuppoſed trifling, was found to be near five miles; but after rowing all this ſpace, we were wholly diſappointed. An enormous ſurf broke upon the rock on all ſides, which rendered the landing abſolutely impracticable. In vain we rowed all round it, caſting many a longing look at the verdure and trees with which we ſaw it covered. A large bat, and ſome ſmall birds were obſerved flying through its buſhes; and a number of fiſh ſwam among the broken rocks; but the former did not come within muſket-ſhot, and the others refuſed to take our hooks. Returning back to the ſhip we caught a water-ſnake (*coluber laticaudatus*, Linn.) of the ſame ſort which had been obſerved ſo plentiful on one of the low iſles off Maria Bay, in Tonga-Tabboo. (See vol. I. p. 478.) 1774. AUGUST.

After returning on board, a gentle breeze ſprung up, and we ſtood into a kind of bay, cloſe under the Saddle-peak, to the weſtward of it. We came in towards evening,

1774. AUGUST. and found the bay very extenſive, above eight miles wide, but not above two deep. The Saddle which forms a kind of peninſula, lies on its eaſt ſide, and ſhelters it from the trade-wind, being very ſteep towards the point, but gradually ſloping into leſſer hills towards the bottom of the bay. Every part of the ſhore was well cultivated between the wild groves; and every plantation ſeemed to be encloſed in very neat fences of reed, exactly reſembling thoſe which we had obſerved at the Friendly Iſles. We dropped an anchor about a quarter of a mile from ſhore, having a low point a-head of us, behind which there appeared to be a harbour. The natives lined the ſhore in great crouds; ſome of them ſwam off, and came within hail, but no nearer; crying out and ſcreaming aloud to us. They appeared at a diſtance to reſemble the Mallicolleſe, and were ſwarthy; one of them however, had reddiſh hair, and was fairer than the reſt. It was remarkable that not a ſingle canoe appeared, either on the water, or hauled aſhore; though we can hardly ſuppoſe ſo fine an iſland to be deſtitute of boats. As it was growing dark, all the ſwimmers returned to the ſhore, and made ſeveral fires in their plantations. Our proviſion of freſh water being very low, and that which we filled at Namoka being very bad, we rejoiced to have found a place, where the appearance of the country, gave us the greateſt hopes of meeting with a freſh ſupply, not only of this neceſſary article, but of all ſorts

of

of refreſhments. All thoſe who had been poiſoned by the red fiſh at Mallicollo, were not yet wholly recovered, but felt their pains returning every night, their teeth loſe, and their gums and palate excoriated. They likewiſe hoped to get rid of the remains of their tedious ſickneſs, by making ſome ſtay on this iſland, and recruiting their ſtrength with wholeſome freſh food, to which they had long been ſtrangers. But all our expectations proved abortive and premature. 1774. AUGUST.

Early in the morning, captain Cook ordered two boats to be properly armed and manned, and commanding himſelf in one, and entruſting the other to the care of the maſter, went in ſearch of a convenient watering-place. He firſt rowed towards the ſhore directly abreaſt of the ſhip, where a number of natives not leſs than ſixty, were aſſembled on the beach. As ſoon as he was near the ſhore, ſome of the natives came into the water, round the boats, where the captain diſtributed to them nails, medals, Taheitee cloth, &c. with which they ſeemed vaſtly delighted. He ſoon put off, and rowed along the ſhore, more ahead of the ſhip, round the low point which I have already mentioned, the natives running along in the ſame direction. The boats having got round the point, which might be about three quarters of a mile off, continued out of ſight near an hour. In the mean time, the natives were obſerved running towards the point from all parts, whilſt a great Thurſday 4.

number

1774. AUGUST. number ſat down oppoſite the ſhip, gazing at it with the greateſt attention. At once we heard the diſcharge of ſome muſkets, and an irregular fire kept up for ſome time. Upon this alarm, another boat was inſtantly equipped, and ſent to the aſſiſtance of the former, and a ſwivel ſhot directed over the point. A great gun was likewiſe brought upon the fore-caſtle, and fired off towards the hills. This ſtruck a panic into the inhabitants in our ſight, who all haſtened to ſcreen themſelves in the buſhes; many were ſeen running out of the plantations on the hills, roufed by the ſound, and hurrying away again, as ſoon as they beheld their countrymen put to flight. We alſo ſaw ſeveral dragging a dead or wounded man up one of the hills, from the place where we heard the fire of our boats. In a little time the captain returned in one boat, while the two others continued to ſound in the bay. One of our ſeamen was brought into the ſhip with a wound in the cheek and another in the wriſt; and we had the following account from captain Cook and thoſe who accompanied him, concerning this unfortunate attack. The boats had no ſooner rowed round the point than they found a good landing-place, where the captain and another perſon ſtepped aſhore. He found ſeveral hundred natives armed with bows and arrows, clubs, and long ſpears. Their ſtature was of the middle ſize, and much ſuperior to that of the Mallicolleſe; they were indeed nearly of the ſame

ſwarthy

ſwarthy hue, but better limbed and better featured. They went ſtark naked, with a rope only about the middle, and were for the reſt to the full as indecent in the eyes of Europeans as the Mallicolleſe. Black paint and ruddle were likewiſe not ſpared on ſome of their faces; their hair was black, very curly or frizzled, but not woolly in all perſons alike, and in a great quantity. Some, however, had reddiſh hair, and all had ſtrong black beards. 1774. AUGUST.

Captain Cook began with diſtributing preſents to ſeveral of the natives, and particularly to a man who appeared to have ſome authority over the reſt. Having expreſſed by ſigns that he wanted freſh water and other proviſions, the chief ſent away ſome men, and continued to converſe by ſigns. In a ſhort time the men returned, bringing a hollow bamboo filled with freſh water, a few coco-nuts, and the root of a yam. Our people underſtood from their geſtures, that they had fetched the water at a little diſtance, but it ſeemed the natives were not inclined to let them walk thither to examine it. Their numbers encreaſing every moment, the captain re-embarked, and ordered his boat to be puſhed off. One of the natives immediately ſeized an oar, but another took it out of his hand and threw it back towards the boat. Some then took hold of the gang-board, which the ſailors had neglected to ſecure, and hauled the boat back to the ſhore, whilſt others came into the water

and

1774. AUGUST. and ſeized the boat itſelf, taking out two other oars. The chief ſtood near the boat, and ſeemed to direct this whole manœuvre. Captain Cook levelled his muſket at the natives, but here, as at Savage Iſland, (ſee pag. 166.) the piece miſſed fire ſeveral times. The natives ſeeing him take aim, and readily conceiving that what he held in his hand was a weapon, drew their bows and poiſed their ſpears. A volley of arrows was directed at our people, and ſeveral ſpears were thrown into the boat. One of them, without any carving and perfectly blunt, wounded a ſeaman in the cheek. Captain Cook, ſeeing the lives of his people in danger, ordered them to fire, but it was ſome time before any of them could diſcharge their muſkets. The firſt diſcharge killed two natives, who fell cloſe to the boat. The reſt, ſtill undiſmayed, ran back a little at firſt, but returned briſkly to the charge, throwing ſtones and ſhooting arrows at our people. The other boat likewiſe fired upon them, but only two or three of their muſkets went off; however, they alſo killed and wounded ſome other natives. It is remarkable, that though the beſt flints are to be had in England, and though government allows the higheſt price for them to the contractors, yet are our troops ſupplied with the very worſt flints by theſe people, who uſe every means to amaſs a fortune at the expence of the public. Some attention ought to be paid to an article, upon which the lives of

of many thouſand ſubjects, nay often the ſucceſs of engagements, in great meaſure depends *. An arrow hit the maſter on the naked breaſt, but being entirely ſpent, it did not even fetch blood. It conſiſted of a reed, armed with a long point of black wood, which was jagged or bearded with many indentures on one ſide. Some of the natives who were wounded crawled upon all fours into the buſhes. When our ſwivels and cannon were fired from the ſhip, the whole croud diſperſed; ſome, however, hid themſelves behind a ſandy elevation, which ſerved as a breaſt-work, from whence they continued to annoy our people, who for ſome time amuſed themſelves to fire at them as often as their heads appeared. At laſt, captain Cook ſeeing a third boat come to his aſſiſtance returned on board, and ordered the other two to ſound the bay. From his account of this unhappy diſpute, Mr. Hodges has invented a drawing, which is meant as a repreſentation of his interview with the natives. For my own part, I cannot entirely perſuade myſelf that theſe people had any hoſtile intentions in detaining our boat. The levelling of a muſket at them, or rather at their chief, provoked them to attack our crew. On our part this

1774. AUGUST.

* It has been obſerved by foreigners, who have been ſpectators of military manœuvres, abroad as well as in Hyde-Park, that upon a company's firing ſeveral rounds, ſix private men at leaſt retire behind the lines to draw or to fire their muſkets, which did not go off before. This ſingular circumſtance is not owing to any defect in the locks, but to the badneſs of the flints. All foreign troops are in that reſpect ſuperior to the Britiſh.

1774. AUGUST. manœuvre was equally neceſſary; but it is much to be lamented that the voyages of Europeans cannot be performed without being fatal to the nations whom they viſit.

After breakfaſt we weighed the anchor, and prepared to ſtand farther into the bay, our boats having found convenient anchorage nearer to the watering-place. All the weſtern coaſt of the bay was covered with thouſands of palms, which had a beautiful effect, and appeared to be different from the coco-palm. We ſoon came in ſight of the place where the engagement had happened. A few natives who ſtood here and there on the ſhore, ran into the woods on ſeeing the ſhip. We ſaw the two oars which they had taken out of the boat ſtuck in the ground and leaning on the buſhes; but it was not thought proper to ſend a boat in queſt of them, though the coaſt was clear. After we had entertained hopes of coming to an anchor again for ſome time, the captain gave orders to put about, and ſtood to the eaſtward round the ſaddle-peak, which was now called Traitor's Head. We tacked all the morning, in order to weather that point, but could not accompliſh it till three o'clock in the afternoon, when we opened a bay immediately to the eaſtward of it. This bay extended very far inland, and ſeemed to contain ſeveral ſnug creeks or harbours. The lands on both ſides were covered with the thickeſt woods, which had a moſt fertile and enchanting appearance. To the ſouth, the land ſloped very gently, offering

fering a fine expoſure of vaſt extent almoſt wholly cultivated, and in all likelihood rich in vegetable productions. We were juſt abreaſt of this bay, and perhaps in doubt whether we ſhould not go in, when the iſland appeared in ſight again to the ſouth, which we had already diſcovered on the 28th of July. Captain Cook now reſolved to relinquiſh the nearer iſland, and to proceed to the more diſtant one, in order to leave as little unexplored as poſſible. The breeze was very freſh, and we left the iſland with great rapidity. It is ſituated in 18° 48′ ſouth latitude, and 169° 20′ eaſt longitude *, and is nearly of a ſquare figure, which meaſures at leaſt 30 leagues in circuit. We ſtood ſoutherly towards the new iſland, with ſtudding ſails ſet, which had been in diſuſe with us ever ſince we arrived among this group of iſles. Several fires appeared upon the iſland at night, one of which blazed up from time to time like the the flame of a volcano. 1774. AUGUST.

At day-break we ſaw a low iſland to the north-eaſtward of us, having paſſed cloſe to it during the night, and a high one nearly eaſt of us, at the diſtance of eight or nine leagues. The low iſland was covered with coco-palms, but we could not determine whether it conſiſted of a circular reef or not. The large iſland, towards which we ſtill Friday 5.

* We have given it the name of IRROMANGA, for, as we afterwards learnt on an adjacent iſland, this is the name by which it is known among the natives. See the next chapter.

1774. AUGUST. directed our courſe, extended from N. W. to S. E. and conſiſted of a high range of mountains. Towards the ſouth-eaſtern extremity, at the end of a ſecondary range of hills, we diſcovered a volcano, of which we had really ſeen the fire at night. It was a low hill, much lower than any in the ſame range, and of a conical ſhape, with a crater in the middle. Its colour was reddiſh brown, conſiſting of a heap of burnt ſtones, perfectly barren, but it offered a very ſtriking ſight to our eyes. A column of heavy ſmoke roſe up from time to time, like a great tree, whoſe crown gradually ſpread as it aſcended. Every time that a new column of ſmoke was thus thrown up, we heard a very deep rumbling ſound like thunder, and the columns followed each other at very ſhort intervals. The colour of the ſmoke was not always the ſame; it was white and yellowiſh in general, but ſometimes of a dirty reddiſh grey, which we ſuſpected to be partly owing to the fire in the crater which illuminated the ſmoke and aſhes. The whole iſland, except the volcano, is well wooded, and contains abundance of fine coco-palms; its verdure, even at this ſeaſon, which was the winter of theſe regions, was very rich and beautiful.

After eight o'clock we hoiſted out our boats, and the maſter went to ſound a harbour, which appeared in view to the eaſt of the volcano. They ran in very faſt, and were followed by two canoes of the natives, which put off from different parts of the coaſt; another canoe was ſeen at a diſtance

a diſtance ſailing along ſhore. In a little time they made ſignals for the ſhip to follow. We ſtood on into the harbour, which has a narrow entrance, and as we kept a man conſtantly ſounding in the chains, we were greatly alarmed when our ſoundings ſuddenly decreaſed from ſix fathom to three and a half; however, an inſtant afterwards we had four, five, and more fathoms. It appeared that we had providentially paſſed over a rock before the entrance, on which we had run the greateſt riſk of ſtriking. The harbour was a ſmall ſnug baſon, where we let go our anchor in four fathom, ſurrounded by a number of natives in their canoes. 1774. AUGUST.

This was the only anchorage where we made any ſtay in all the extenſive cluſter of iſlands which we had now diſcovered. We provided our ſhip with wood and water, but did not obtain any refreſhments worth mentioning. The principal advantage which we derived from putting in here, conſiſted in a few remarks on a race of people, in a great meaſure diſtinct from all the tribes which were known to us before. But while we were entertained with various new and ſtriking objects, it was very diſagreeable to be tantalized with the ſight of wholeſome vegetable and animal food, with which the natives did not chooſe to ſupply us.

CHAP.

1774. AUGUST.

CHAP. II.

Account of our ſtay at Tanna, and departure from the New Hebrides.

Friday 5. HAVING brought the ſhip to an anchor, we were well pleaſed to ſee the natives coming off in their canoes from different parts of the bay, and paddling round about us at a little diſtance. Their behaviour at firſt was very irreſolute; though all were armed with ſpears, clubs, bows and arrows. One or two came cloſe to us, and ſent a yam, or a coco-nut, upon the deck, for which we made them preſents of our goods. In a few moments the number of canoes encreaſed to ſeventeen; ſome of them contained twenty-two men; others ten, ſeven, five, and the ſmalleſt only two; ſo that the number of people about us exceeded two hundred. They pronounced ſeveral words to us from time to time, and ſeemed to propoſe queſtions; but if we uttered a word of the Taheitee, or Mallicollo dialect, they repeated it, without ſeeming to have the leaſt idea of it. By degrees they were familiarized with our appearance, and ventured cloſe along ſide. We had hung a net overboard aſtern, containing ſalt meat for dinner, which the ſea water was to freſhen, as we did every day; one of the natives,

tives, an old man, ſeized this net, and was about to detach it; but being called to, he inſtantly deſiſted. However, another ſhook his dart at us upon this occaſion, and ſtill another adjuſted an arrow to his bow, taking aim by turns at different perſons on the quarter-deck. Captain Cook imagined that the diſcharge of a cannon might be of great ſervice, to prevent any unhappy differences with the natives, by apprizing them of our power. He made ſign accordingly to the canoes to paddle aſide, in order to keep clear of the ſhot. It was remarkable that they were not offended by this ſign, which had the air of authority, but readily dropped aſtern. The gun was fired towards the ſhore, and the two hundred people leaped out of their canoes into the ſea in the ſame inſtant. Only a ſingle young man, very well made, and of a very open friendly countenance, remained ſtanding in his canoe, without the leaſt marks of ſurprize or fear, but looking with a mixture of mirth and contempt at his affrighted countrymen. They preſently recovered their ſtation in their canoes, and ſeeing no ill conſequences had enſued after our bravado, converſed very loud with each other, and ſeemed to laugh at their own fears. They kept off however at a little diſtance, and did not ſhew any hoſtile inclinations. 1774. AUGUST.

Captain Cook did not like the ſhip's birth, but reſolved to carry her deeper into the bay. To that purpoſe, a boat was ſent off with an anchor, and our people proceeded in their

1774. AUGUST. their operation without being moleſted. The buoy, however, which belonged to our firſt anchor, appeared ſo tempting, that an old Indian, who was quite bald, put off in his canoe, and endeavoured to carry it away, at firſt by towing it, but afterwards by detaching it from its rope. As ſoon as we perceived that he was ſeriouſly at work about it, captain Cook called to him to deſiſt, but he was not able ſo much as to divert his attention. The captain fired a muſket loaded with ſmall ſhot at him; and ſome of the ſhot having ſtruck him, he immediately threw the buoy out of his canoe. A few moments after, however, feeling himſelf very little hurt, he returned once more to complete his former undertaking. A muſket, with a ball, was now fired rather ſhort of him into the ſea; upon this he left the buoy, and came long ſide to preſent us with a coco-nut. There was ſomething bold and generous in his behaviour, which I think plainly indicated, that he offered us his friendſhip, after making trial of our ſpirit. Our boat having laid the anchor in the ground with another buoy, came on board, and we began to warp in by it. The buoy tempted another native, notwithſtanding the correction which his countryman had received. He was afraid of taking it up; but paddled ſeveral times towards it, and as often turned back again. At laſt the temptation prevailed, and he began to haul it into his canoe. A large muſketoon was fired at him, and the ball fell cloſe to him, ſtriking the water ſeveral times,

times, and at laſt dropping on the beach. A number of people ſtood near the place, and immediately ran off; but the man in the canoe returned again to the buoy. Another muſketoon, a ſwivel, and laſt of all a cannon were fired, which terrified him and all the natives both on the water and on ſhore, without doing them any hurt. 1774. AUGUST.

We brought the ſhip deeper into the bay, after this little diſturbance; but in warping her in, ſhe ſtruck aground ſeveral times, being drawn out of the deep channel. The water was very ſmooth, and the bottom covered with mud, ſo that ſhe could receive no material damage, and the fault was eaſily redreſſed. We then went to dinner very quietly, and afterwards proceeded to the beach in three boats, well manned, eſpecially by all our marines. The opportunity ſeemed very favourable, as the number of natives in ſight was very ſmall, and not likely to give us any trouble. A few of them, who were ſeated in the graſs along the beach, ran off upon our landing, but returned as ſoon as we beckoned to them. On our left, or to the weſtward, we ſaw a body of about a hundred and fifty, well armed, who advanced towards us with the green branches of coco-palm, which they preſented us in ſign of peace. We diſtributed medals, Taheitee cloth, and iron ware, to conciliate their good will; and afterwards exchanged theſe articles for a few coco-nuts which they brought us, after we had pointed to the trees, and made our wants intelligible by different

1774. AUGUST. geſtures. One of our firſt requeſts was, that they ſhould ſit down; which was imperfectly complied with: another, that they ſhould not tranſgreſs a line which we drew on the ſand; and to this they readily aſſented. We preſently found a pond of very palatable freſh water, and made ſigns to the natives, that we came to provide ourſelves from thence, and that we alſo deſired leave to cut ſome trees. They immediately pointed out ſeveral wild trees which we might cut, only excepting the coco-palms, of which innumerable quantities covered the ſhore. We filled two ſmall barrels with water, and cut down a few trees, to ſhew in what manner we intended to proceed; and the natives appeared to be ſatisfied. Our marines were however drawn up, and the leaſt motion they made ſo terrified the inhabitants, that they ran off to a conſiderable diſtance, only a few old men remaining near us. We deſired them to lay down their arms; and even in this demand, which was in itſelf unreaſonable, the greateſt part acquieſced. Their ſtature was of the middle ſize, and their perſons infinitely ſtronger, and better proportioned, than thoſe of the Mallicolleſe. Their colour was a dark or cheſnut brown, with a very ſwarthy mixture. Like the natives of Mallicollo, they went ſtark naked, having only a ſtring round the belly, which did not cut their body in ſuch a ſhocking manner, as we had obſerved at that iſland. We ſaw ſome women at a diſtance, who did not ſeem to be ſo ugly as thoſe of Mallicollo,

and

and wore a kind of petticoat, which deſcended below the knee. Two girls had each a long ſpear in their hand, but did not venture nearer than the reſt. We collected a number of words from theſe people, among which, far the greateſt part were entirely new to us; but ſometimes they expreſſed the ſame idea by two words, one of which was new, and the other correſponded with the language of the Friendly Iſlands; from whence we had reaſon to conclude, that they have ſome neighbours of the other race, who ſpeak that language. They alſo told us, that they call their own iſland TANNA, a word which ſignifies "*earth*" in the Malay language. This laſt we looked upon as a great acquiſition; for the indigenous name of a country is always permanent. We made but a ſhort ſtay among theſe people, and returned on board as ſoon as we had filled our caſks. We now thought the peace concluded, and every difficulty conquered; but we found matters in a very different ſituation the next morning. Our intercourſe with them had hitherto been peaceable, becauſe they did not feel themſelves a match for us; but it ſeems they were very far from purpoſing to give us free admittance into their country. They looked upon us as invaders, and appeared jealous of their property, and reſolved to defend it. 1774. AUGUST.

We ſaw the flame of the volcano in the evening, blazing up, with an exploſion once in five minutes or thereabouts. The tranſactions of the day prevented my ſpeaking of this

1774. AUGUST. wonderful phænomenon, though it was in continual agitation. Some of the exploſions reſembled very violent claps of thunder, and a rumbling noiſe continued for half a minute together. The whole air was filled with ſmoky particles and with aſhes, which occaſioned much pain when they fell into the eye. The decks, rigging, and all parts of the ſhip were covered with black ſherl aſhes in the ſpace of a few hours, and the ſame ſand, mixed with ſmall cinders and pumice ſtones, covered the ſea-ſhore. The diſtance of this volcano from our harbour was five or ſix miles; but ſeveral hills lay between, ſo that we only ſaw its ſummit, which threw up the ſmoke from a crater, conſiſting of ſeveral ragged points.

Saturday 6. Early in the morning, the ſhip was moored ſtill more conveniently and nearer to the ſhore. The natives appeared at ſun-riſe coming out of their groves and conſulting together on the beach. In order to make the ſequel more intelligible, it will be neceſſary to give a ſlight ſketch of the appearance of the country which encloſed the harbour. The point which forms its eaſtern ſhore is very low and flat, but preſently riſes into a level hill, about fifteen or twenty yards high, which is wholly laid out in plantations. This encompaſſes the eaſtern and ſouthern ſhore of the bay, being near three miles long, and extending ſeveral miles inland to the ſea on the other ſide. Where this flat hill ends, a fine plain covered with planttaions runs to the ſouthward,

bounded

bounded by ſeveral ranges of pleaſant hills, of which the neareſt are of eaſy aſcent. To the weſt this plain, as well as the whole bay itſelf, is encloſed by a ſteep hill, three or four hundred yards high, which is nearly perpendicular in moſt places. A narrow beach of large broken ſhingles and ſtones runs along the weſtern ſhore, but a perpendicular rock ſeparates it from the ſouthern beach. This laſt is very broad, and conſiſts of a firm black ſand; it bounds the plain, and is the ſame where we cut wood and filled our caſks with water. A beach of coral rock and ſhell ſand continues from thence along the foot of the flat hill quite to the eaſtern point of the harbour. The flat hill does not lie cloſe to this beach, but a ſpace of level land, thirty or forty yards wide, covered with groves of palms, extends to its foot. The whole ſouth-eaſt corner of the bay is filled with a flat reef of coral, which is overflowed at low water. 1774. AUGUST.

A few canoes put off one by one from the ſhore, and each brought a coco-nut or two and a cluſter of bananas for ſale, which they readily exchanged for Taheitee cloth. As ſoon as the natives in them had diſpoſed of their cargo, they returned to the ſhore and brought off another. One of them offered captain Cook his club, and, having agreed to take a piece of cloth for it, it was let down into his canoe. However, he had no ſooner received this cloth, than he took no farther trouble to fulfil his agreement. The captain ſpoke to him ſeveral times, by ſuch ſigns as the

man

1774. AUGUST. man ſeemed to underſtand, but all in vain; a muſket, charged with ſmall ſhot was fired into his face, upon which he, and two men who were with him, betook themſelves to paddling with the greateſt agility. Their canoe was purſued from deck by ſeveral ſhot from the ſhip's muſketoons; one of them fell ſo near them, and rebounded ſo often from the water, that they all jumped into the ſea and ſwam aſhore. A great concourſe of natives was preſently obſerved near the ſpot where they landed, to whom they probably related their ſtory. A few minutes after, a ſingle man came off to us in a canoe, with ſome ſugar-canes, coco-nuts, and yams. He was an old man, of a low ſtature, but had a very friendly countenance, which announced his good diſpoſition. He had been active the preceding afternoon to preſerve the peace with our people, and his arrival was therefore the more acceptable to us. Captain Cook made him a preſent of a complete dreſs of the beſt red Taheitee cloth, with which the old man was highly pleaſed. He had in his canoe two large clubs, none of theſe people ever going without arms; but captain Cook, being in one of our boats along ſide, took them out and threw them into the ſea, making ſigns to the man, that all his countrymen on ſhore ſhould lay down their arms. The old fellow liked this propoſal exceedingly, and ſeeming entirely contented with the loſs of his clubs, returned to the ſhore, where we obſerved him parading for ſome time in his new dreſs.

Vaſt

Vaſt numbers of people were now ſeen aſſembling on the beach from all quarters of the iſland, but far the greateſt part came down from the ſteep hill on the weſt ſide of the bay. The buſhes and groves on the plain were filled with men, of whom none went without arms. Towards nine o'clock, having fixed a ſpring on the cable, we prepared to land in the launch and two other boats, with all our marines and a party of ſeamen well armed. As ſoon as the natives ſaw our boats coming, they haſtened out of the buſhes on the beach, and formed chiefly in two large bodies, one on each ſide of the watering-place. That on the weſt ſide was by far the moſt conſiderable, conſiſting of no leſs than ſeven hundred men, in a compact body, who ſeemed prepared for action. On the eaſt ſide we gueſſed there might be about two hundred men, who, though equally well armed, had however a more peaceable look. In the middle, between them, ſtood the little old man who had been with us juſt before, and two other natives. Theſe three were unarmed, and had laid a heap of bananas on the beach. Having approached within twenty yards of the beach, captain Cook called to the natives, and made ſigns for them to lay down their arms, and to recede from the beach. But of this demand they took no manner of notice, perhaps thinking it abſurd and unjuſt that a few ſtrangers ſhould preſcribe laws to them on their own ground. As it was not thought prudent to land between the

1774. AUGUST.

1774. AUGUST. the two bodies of natives, and to expoſe ourſelves to an attack in which many of theſe innocent people, and perhaps ſome of us, might have been killed, captain Cook ordered a muſket-ball to be fired over their heads, in order, if poſſible to frighten them away. Indeed, the whole body was immediately in motion at the ſound; but, ſoon recovering from their ſurprize, the greateſt number ſtood their ground. One of them, ſtanding cloſe to the water's edge, was ſo bold as to turn his poſteriors towards us, and ſlap them with his hand, which is the uſual challenge with all the nations of the South Sea. Captain Cook ordered another muſket to be ſhot into the air, and, at this ſignal, the ſhip played her whole artillery, conſiſting of five four-pounders, two ſwivels, and four muſketoons. The balls whiſtled over our heads, and making ſome havock among the coco-palms, had the deſired effect, and entirely cleared the beach in a few moments. Only our old peace maker, with his two friends, remained unconcerned near his pile of fruit, which he preſented to the captain as ſoon as he had landed, at the ſame time deſiring him not to ſhoot any longer. An intereſting picture, repreſenting this landing at Tanna, compoſed by Mr. Hodges, with great ingenuity, has been engraved for captain Cook's account of this voyage. It is one of thoſe pieces in which the ſkill of that able artiſt is diſplayed in its full force.

Our

1774. AUGUST.

Our firſt care was to draw up the marines in two lines, to guard the waterers. Stakes were driven into the ground on both ſides, and ropes faſtened to them, leaving a ſpace of fifty or ſixty yards clear, for our people to paſs and repaſs unmoleſted. By degrees they ventured out of the buſhes, and came upon the beach, where we made ſigns to them not to tranſgreſs our lines, which none of them attempted. The captain once more repeated his ſigns, that they ſhould lay down their arms; thoſe on the weſt did not attend to them, but the other party, who were in ſome meaſure connected with our old friend, complied for the greateſt part. The old man told us his name, which was Paw yangom, and was permitted to ſtay within the lines if he choſe.

We now endeavoured to advance into the woods in queſt of plants, but we had not got twenty yards, before we ſaw numbers of natives behind every buſh, who kept up a communication between the two parties on the beach. It was therefore impoſſible to make any great acquiſitions at firſt, and we contented ourſelves with two or three new ſpecies. With theſe we returned on the beach, and by endeavouring to converſe with the party on our left (to the eaſt of us) filled our vocabularies with many words of their language. We often offered to purchaſe their arms, but they conſtantly refuſed to part with them. However, one of them diſpoſed of a cylindrical piece of alabaſter, two inches long,

1774. AUGUST. which he wore as a noſe-jewel. Before he delivered it, he waſhed it in the ſea, whether from a principle of cleanlineſs, or not, we cannot determine. During the whole time of our ſtay on ſhore this morning, the natives did not attempt to moleſt or attack us; and thoſe on our left ſeemed very well diſpoſed, and gave us hopes, that we might eſtabliſh a friendly intercourſe with them in a ſhort time. As we now ſaw a great part of the inhabitants of this iſland aſſembled, we had the beſt opportunity of forming an adequate idea of their general habit of body, their dreſs and arms. They are of the middle-ſized ſtature, but many among them may be reckoned tall. Their limbs are well made, and rather ſlender; ſome are likewiſe very ſtout and ſtrong; but thoſe beautiful outlines, which are ſo frequent among the people of the Society and Friendly Iſlands, and of the Marqueſas, are rarely to be met with at Tanna. I did not obſerve one ſingle corpulent man among them; all are active, and full of ſpirit. Their features are large, the noſe broad, but the eyes full, and in general agreeable. Moſt of them have an open, manly, and good-natured air, though ſome may likewiſe be found, as in other nations, whoſe countenance betrays malevolence. The colour of their hair is black; however, we obſerved ſome which had brown or yellowiſh tips. It grew very thick and buſhy, and in generally frizzled; but in a few individuals, it ſtill preſerved a degree of woollineſs. The beard is likewiſe

wiſe thick, black, and frizzled. The colour of their whole body is a dark cheſnut brown, which is frequently mixed with a blackiſh hue, ſo that it appears at firſt ſight, as if it were ſullied with ſoot; and their ſkin is extremely ſoft to the touch, as is obſerved to be the caſe with Negroes. They almoſt go perfectly naked; but, true to the general characteriſtic of mankind, wear ſeveral ſorts of ornaments. They dreſs their hair after the following method: they take a quantity, not exceeding a pigeon's quill in thickneſs, and wrap it in a thin thread or ribbon, made of the ſtalk of a bindweed, ſo that only a ſmall tuft remains at the end. All the hair on the head is diſpoſed exactly in the ſame manner, ſo that they have ſeveral hundred *queues*, three or four inches long, ſtanding an end, and diverging every way, 1774. AUGUST.

Like quills upon the fretful porcupine. SHAKESPEARE.

If theſe parcels are a little longer, from five to eight or nine inches, they hang down on both ſides of the head, and in that caſe, the wearer ſtrongly reſembles a river-god, with his lank hair all ſoaked and dripping. Some however, and particularly thoſe who have woolly hair, let it grow without torturing it into any particular form, or, at fartheſt, tie it in a bunch on the crown of the head with a leaf. Moſt of them wear a thin ſtick or reed, about nine inches long, in their hair, with which they occaſionally diſturb the vermin that abound in their heads. A reed

1774. AUGUST. ſet with cock's or owls feathers, is likewiſe ſometimes ſtuck in the hair as an ornament. A few of them alſo wear a cap made of a green plantane leaf, or of matted work, on their heads. Some twiſt their beard into a kind of rope, but the greater number leave it in its natural form. The cartilage between the noſtrils is commonly perforated, and in the aperture, they wear a cylindrical ſtone, or a bit of reed, half an inch thick. The ears are pierced with a very large hole, in which they wear a number of rings of tortoiſe-ſhell, or of a piece of white ſhell an inch in diameter, and three quarter's of an inch broad. Sometimes one ring is faſtened within the other, ſo as to form a kind of chain. Round their neck they ſometimes paſs a ſtring, to which they faſten a ſhell, or a ſmall cylindrical piece of green nephritic ſtone, reſembling that which is common at New Zeeland. On the left upper arm, they commonly have a bracelet made of a piece of coco-nut-ſhell, either curiouſly carved, or plain and poliſhed, between which they frequently ſtick ſome plant, as the *cuodia hortenſis* *, the *croton variegatum*, *lycopodium phlegmaria*, *vitex trifolia*, or a ſpecies of *epidendrum*. Some of them wear a belt, or ſaſh, of a kind of coarſe cloth, made of the inner bark of a tree, which is commonly of a dark cinnamon colour. Round their middle they tie a ſtring, and below that, they employ the leaves

* See Forſt. Nov. Gener. Plantar.

of

of a plant like ginger †, for the ſame purpoſe, and in the ſame manner as the natives of Mallicollo. Boys, as ſoon as they attain the age of ſix years, are already provided with theſe leaves, which ſeems to confirm, what I have obſerved in regard to the Mallicolleſe, viz. that they do not employ this covering from motives of decency. Indeed it had ſo much the contrary appearance, that in the perſon of every native of Tanna or Mallicollo, we thought we beheld a living repreſentation of that terrible divinity, who protected the orchards and gardens of the ancients. To complete the liſt of their ornaments, I muſt add their paints and inciſions. The paints are reſerved for the face; they are red ochre, white lime, and a colour ſhining like black lead; all theſe they mix with coco-nut oil, and lay on the face in oblique bars, two or three inches broad. The white colour is ſeldom employed, but the red and black is more frequent, and ſometimes each covers one half of the face. The inciſions are chiefly made on the upper arm, and the belly, and ſupply the place of punctures, which are common in the lighter-coloured race of men, who inhabit the Friendly and Society Iſlands, New Zeeland, Eaſter Iſland, and the Marqueſas. They cut the fleſh with a bamboo, or ſharp ſhell, and apply a particular plant, which forms an elevated ſcar on the ſurface of the ſkin, after it is healed. Theſe ſcars are formed to repreſent flowers, and other fan- 1774. AUGUST.

† Of the order of *ſcitamina*.

cied

1774. AUGUST. cied figures, which are deemed a great beauty by the natives. A ſingle man only was obſerved, who had a figure punctured on his breaſt, which appeared to have been performed in the ſame manner as among the nations above enumerated.

The weapons which the men of Tanna conſtantly carry are bows and arrows, clubs, darts and ſlings. Their young men are commonly ſlingers and archers, but thoſe of a more advanced age make uſe of clubs or darts. The bows are made of the beſt club-wood *(caſuarina)* very ſtrong and elaſtic. They poliſh them very highly, and perhaps rub them with oil from time to time, in order to keep them in repair. Their arrows are of reed, near four feet long. The ſame black wood, which the Mallicolleſe employ for the point, is likewiſe made uſe of at Tanna; but the whole point, which is frequently above a foot long, is jagged or bearded on two or three ſides. They have likewiſe arrows with three points, but theſe are chiefly intended to kill birds and fiſh. Their ſlings are made of coco-nut fibres, and worn round the arm or waiſt; they have a broad part for the reception of the ſtone, of which the people carry with them ſeveral in a leaf. The darts or ſpears are the third ſort of miſſile weapons at Tanna. They are commonly made of a thin, knotty, and ill-ſhaped ſtick, not exceeding half an inch in diameter, but nine or ten feet long. At the thickeſt end they are ſhaped into a triangular point, ſix or eight inches long, and on each corner there is a row of

eight

eight or ten beards or hooks. Theſe darts they throw with great accuracy, at a ſhort diſtance, by the help of a piece of plaited cord, four or five inches long, which has a knob at one end, and an eye at the other. They hold the dart between the thumb and fore-finger, having previouſly placed the latter in the eye of the rope, the remaining part of which is ſlung round the dart, above the hand, and forms a kind of nooſe round it, ſerving to guide and confine the dart in its proper direction, when it is once projected. I have ſeen one of theſe darts thrown, at the diſtance of ten or twelve yards, into a ſtake four inches in diameter, with ſuch violence, that the jagged point was forced quite through it. The ſame thing may be ſaid of their arrows; at eight or ten yards diſtance they ſhoot them very accurately, and with great force; but as they are cautious of breaking their bows, they ſeldom draw them to the full ſtretch, and therefore at twenty-five or thirty yards their arrows have little effect, and are not to be dreaded. The clubs are reſerved for cloſe engagement, and every grown man carries one of them, beſides ſome of the miſſile weapons. They are of four or five different ſhapes. The moſt valuable are made of the *caſuarina*, about four feet long, ſtrait, cylindrical, highly poliſhed, and knobbed at each end. One knob, which they graſp in the hand, is round, but the other, with which they ſtrike, is cut out into

1774. AUGUST.

1774. AUGUST. into the figure of a ſtar, with many prominent points. Another ſort of clubs are about ſix feet long, and have a great knob or lateral excreſcence at one end, which appears to belong to the root. Theſe are made of hard wood, but of a greyiſh colour. A third kind is about five feet long, and has a flat piece, eight or ten inches long, projecting at right angles, which greatly reſembles a farrier's fleam in ſhape, and is formed with a very ſharp edge. A fourth is exactly like this, but has one of theſe flat blades on each ſide of the handle. Laſtly, a fifth is ſimply a piece of coral rock, about eighteen inches long, and two in diameter, rudely ſhaped into a cylinder. Sometimes this is likewiſe made uſe of as a miſſile weapon.

We ſaw but few women on this day, and thoſe who appeared kept at a great diſtance from us; however they all ſeemed ill-favoured, and of ſmaller ſtature than the men. The young girls had only a ſtring tied about the middle, with a little wiſp of dry graſſes faſtened to it, before and behind; but thoſe of a maturer age wore a ſhort petticoat made of leaves. Their ears were hung full of tortoiſeſhell rings, and necklaces of ſhells fell on their boſom. Some of the oldeſt had caps made of a plantane-leaf, or of matted work, but this head-dreſs was rather uncommon.

Towards noon the greater part of the natives left the beach, as the weather grew very hot, and the hour of taking

taking food was approaching. We likewiſe embarked, having filled a quantity of freſh water, and returned to dine on board. 1774. AUGUST.

About three in the afternoon we went aſhore again, and did not find a ſingle man on the beach. At a conſiderable diſtance to the eaſtward we ſaw about thirty ſitting under the ſhade of their palms, but they did not care to come towards us. We took this opportunity of rambling about two or three hundred yards into the country, where we collected ſeveral new plants. We found that part of the plain, at the foot of the level hill, was uncultivated, and filled with a variety of ſpontaneous ſhrubs and trees, but did not venture far out of the reach of protection, as we were not yet upon a ſure footing with the natives. Having paſſed ſome time in the buſhes, we walked towards the people whom we had obſerved ſeated on the graſs. Our friend Paw-yangom met us about halfway, and preſented my father with a little pig, for which he received a large nail, and a piece of Taheitee cloth in return. This good old man now accompanied us to our boats, where captain Cook had given orders to haul the ſeine. By degrees the natives whom we had ſeen, all came towards us unarmed, and converſed with us, as well as they could, with the greateſt cordiality. Our fiſhermen were extremely ſucceſsful, and took upwards of three hundred weight of mullets

1774. AUGUST. and other fiſh *. Paw-yangom ſeemed greatly deſirous of obtaining ſome of them; and we made him exceedingly happy, by gratifying his deſire. About ſunſet we returned in high ſpirits with our capture, it being a long time ſince we had been able to provide a freſh meal for the whole ſhip's company.

The volcano which had played at long intervals in the morning, entirely ceaſed its exploſions in the afternoon. Sunday 7. The next morning, however, at four o'clock, it began to blaze up again; ſome ſhowers of rain having fallen over night. Its fires afforded us a moſt pleaſing and magnificent ſight. The ſmoke, which ſlowly rolled up from time to time, in thick and heavy volumes, was coloured with all the various hues of yellow, orange, crimſon, and purple, which died away into a reddiſh grey and brown. As often as a new exploſion happpened, the whole country, with its ſhaggy foreſts, was tinged with the ſame orange and purple, according to its diſtance, or particular expoſure to the volcanic light.

We landed after breakfaſt. The natives, who were aſſembled in great crouds, though not near ſo numerous as the day before, did not attempt to hinder our landing, but immediately made way for us. Captain Cook however

* Particularly a ſort common in the Weſt Indies, and there called ten-pounders *(eſox argenteus. N. S.)*

found

found it neceſſary to ſtretch ropes again on both ſides, in order to keep our back free from them. The greater part ſtill refuſed to ſell their arms; but ſome were not ſo ſtrict, and parted with both darts and ſpears. My father gave Paw-yangom a hatchet for the pig which he had received the day before, and explained to him the uſe of it. He was extremely well pleaſed with it, and ſhewed it to his countrymen. Many of them made ſigns to us that they wanted the ſame preſent, which we promiſed them, if they would bring us hogs; but this offer was entirely unſucceſsful. A tent was erected this day, where Mr. Wales, the aſtronomer, made his obſervations. A few of the natives were in high ſpirits, and danced about, ſhaking their darts at ſome of our people, but the reſt remained very quiet. At noon captain Cook returned on board with us, leaving the lieutenant of marines with his men on ſhore. We had not been long on board, before we heard a muſket fired, and ſaw the natives diſturbed. However, they were ſoon pacified, and returned to their former ſtation. All our people came off about three of the clock, in order to dine on board. We then heard that one of the inhabitants had offended the officer, by making the ſame unmannerly geſture with which we had been challenged the day before. Upon this he was ſhot in the thigh, and made off into the woods. His countrymen likewiſe prepared to run away, but their old people pacified them. 1774. AUGUST.

1774. AUGUST. The ſucceſs of the preceding afternoon tempted us to haul the ſeine a ſecond time this evening, by which means we got about forty-eight pounds of fiſh. When we landed we ſaw very few natives, but in a ſhort time they collected near us in great crouds, moſt of them without any arms, having left them in the buſhes, probably to pleaſe us. Towards ſunſet they all diſperſed, and only a few remained, who came up and told us that they wanted to go to ſleep. We made ſigns to them to depart, and they all left us immediately. We thought we might explain this behaviour as a kind of ceremony, and that they did not think it civil to leave their gueſts alone in their own country. This circumſtance would imply, that they have ideas of propriety and decency, which we ſhould hardly have expected among an uncivilized people.

The next morning Dr. Sparrman, with my father and myſelf, landed under the ſteep mountain on the weſt ſide of the bay, where a party of ſailors were ſent to load ſhingle for ballaſt. A little ſwell came in upon the ſhore in this place, which obliged us to wade through the ſurf. On the ſteep ſides of the hill we gathered ſeveral new plants, and ſlid down the precipice ſeveral times. Different ſorts of minerals appeared in this place. The principal ſtrata of the ſteep hill conſiſt of a ſpecies of clay, very ſoft, and crumbling in pieces when expoſed to the air and moiſture. We alſo found a ſpecies of black ſand-ſtone, a ſubſtance reſembling

ſembling rotten-ſtone *(lapis ſuillus)*, and ſome pieces of chalk, which were either pure, or tinged with a reddiſh colour, perhaps ariſing from particles of iron. We walked ſeveral hundred yards along the beach, towards the weſt point of the harbour, and at laſt ſeeing a path which led up the hill, prepared to advance into the country, when we were met by a number of natives, who were all armed. We then rejoined our party, who loaded ballaſt, and traded with the natives for a few ſugar-canes and coco-nuts. They all ſat down on the rocks near us; and one of them, to whom the reſt paid ſome deference, exchanged names with my father. He was called Oomb-yégan. This cuſtom of making friendſhip, by a reciprocal exchange of names, is common in all the ſouthern iſlands which we had hitherto viſited, and in reality has ſomething in it very engaging and affectionate. After having been in this manner adopted among the natives, we continued upon the beſt terms imaginable, and collected great ſupplements to the vocabulary. They made us a preſent of ſome leaves of a fig, which had been wrapped in banana-leaves, and ſtewed. They were extremely well taſted, and might be eaten as a ſubſtitute for our ſpinach. We likewiſe obtained two large plantanes of the coarſer ſort; which proved, that even here the ſpirit of hoſpitality is natural to the inhabitants. The women and children brought down theſe dainties from the hills, and preſented them to us; but they

1774. AUGUST.

1774. AUGUST. they were ſo extremely timorous, that if we only fixed our eyes upon them, they inſtantly ran away, to the great entertainment of the men. However, their coming ſo near us, was ſufficient proof that we had made great progreſs towards gaining their confidence. We obſerved ſome of them which had a ſmile on their countenance, but in general they looked gloomy and melancholy. They had earrings and necklaces like the men, and the married women wore caps of matted work. The greater part of them had noſe-jewels of white ſtone. Whenever we preſented a bead, a nail, or ribbon to any of the people, they refuſed to touch it, but deſired us to lay it down, and then took it up in a leaf. Whether this was owing to ſome ſuperſtitious notions, or to a fancied idea of cleanlineſs, or of civility, muſt remain a matter of doubt. Towards noon our party re-embarked, and we went on board with them, the greateſt part of the natives having already retired to their dwellings on the hill. The afternoon was ſpent in fiſhing again, but without our former ſucceſs, for we only caught about two dozen of fiſh, after many repeated hauls of the net. The natives on the beach were very numerous; and their preſence made it improper for us to ramble far into the woods. We therefore confined ourſelves to the ſkirts, and collected a few words of their language.

Tueſday 9. We returned to the ſame place the next morning, where our people had loaded ballaſt the day before. We climbed about

about the rocks for ſeveral hours in the heat of the day, without much ſucceſs; and were only tantalized by the appearance of a rich foreſt, into which we could not venture to advance with any degree of prudence. Before we returned on board again, we diſcovered a hot ſpring coming out of the rock cloſe to the water's edge. We had no thermometer at hand; but the degree of heat was ſuch, that we could not bear to hold a finger in the water above a ſingle ſecond. As ſoon as we had returned to the ſhip at noon, captain Cook likewiſe came from the watering party, and brought one of the natives with him in his boat. We ſoon diſcovered him to be the ſame young man, who had ſhewed ſo much coolneſs and bravery on the firſt day of our arrival, by remaining in his canoe, when near two hundred of his countrymen leaped into the ſea at the diſcharge of a cannon, (ſee p. 263.) He told us his name was Fannòkko, and enquired for our names, which he endeavoured to remember. He, as well as all his countrymen, had not the ſame facility of pronunciation as the Mallicolleſe; we were therefore obliged to tell him our names, modified according to the ſofter organs of the Taheitians. His features were rather handſome; his eyes large, and very lively; and the whole countenance expreſſed good-humour, ſprightlineſs, and acuteneſs. To mention only a ſingle inſtance of his ingenuity; it happened that my father and captain Cook, on comparing their vocabularies, diſcovered that each had collected

1774. AUGUST.

1774. AUGUST. lected a different word to ſignify the ſky; they appealed to him, to know which of the two expreſſions was right; he preſently held out one hand, and applied it to one of the words, then moving the other hand under it, he pronounced the ſecond word; intimating that the upper was properly the ſky, and the lower the clouds which moved under it. He likewiſe gave us the names of ſeveral iſlands in the neighbourhood. That from which we came to Tanna, and on which captain Cook had an unhappy difference with the natives, he called Irromanga. The low iſland which we had paſſed in ſtanding in to this harbour he named Immèr; a high iſland, which we had diſcovered to the eaſt of Tanna, on the ſame day, Irronàn; and another to the ſouth, which we had not yet ſeen, Anàttom. He ſat down to dinner with us, and taſted of our ſalt pork, but did not eat more than a ſingle morſel of it. Some yams, fried in lard, or ſimply boiled, he reliſhed better; but he ate very ſparingly upon the whole, and finiſhed his repaſt with a ſmall portion of pye, made of dried and worm-eaten apples, which ſeemed to be very agreeable to his palate. He alſo taſted a little wine after dinner; but though he drank it without ſhewing any diſlike, he did not chooſe to take a ſecond glaſs. His manners at table were extremely becoming and decent; and the only practice which did not appear quite cleanly in our eyes, was his making uſe of a ſtick, which he wore in his hair, inſtead of a fork, with which he occaſionally ſcratched his

his head. As his hair was dreſſed in the higheſt faſhion of the country, *à la porc-épic*, greaſed with oil and paint, our ſtomachs were ſo much the more eaſily offended; though Fannòkko had not the leaſt notion that ſuch an action was reprehenſible. 1774. AUGUST.

After dinner we walked about the decks with him, and ſhewed him different parts of the ſhip. He ſoon fixed his eyes on one of our Taheitian dogs, which he called *boòga*, hog; a ſure ſign that dogs are unknown in his country. He ſeemed ſo deſirous of poſſeſſing this creature, that captain Cook made him a preſent of one of each ſex. Beſides this, he received a hatchet, a large piece of Taheitee cloth, ſome ſpike-nails, medals, and other trinkets of leſs value, with which we carried him back to the ſhore, happy beyond expreſſion. As ſoon as he landed he left the beach with his riches, and walked into the country to his home.

We took a walk to the eaſtward along the ſhore of the bay, and looked into the groves which ſkirted the flat hill, of which I have ſpoken above. We found theſe groves to conſiſt of coco-palms, and ſeveral ſpecies of ſhady fig-trees, with eatable fruits, nearly of the ſize of common figs. We alſo obſerved ſeveral ſheds, under which ſome of their canoes were ſecured from the ſun and weather; but there were no habitations, except towards the eaſtern point. We were ſtill above three hundred yards from thence, when a great number of natives came and begged us not to go

1774. AUGUST. farther; ſome likewiſe ran to captain Cook, and pointing to us, deſired him to recall us. We returned to our party, and endeavoured to penetrate into the country, immediately at the back of our waterers. We found a path, which led through a variety of buſhes, upon the flat hills. In our way to it, we croſſed ſome glades, or meadows, encloſed in woods on all ſides, and covered with a very rich herbage of the moſt vivid green. On our aſcending the hill, we were met by three natives, who endeavoured to perſuade us to return; but ſeeing us reſolved to proceed, they accompanied us. We paſſed through a little airy grove, into ſeveral extenſive plantations of bananas, yams, eddoes, aud fig-trees, which were in ſome places encloſed in fences of ſtone two feet high. We heard the ſurf beating on the ſhore to the ſouth, and ſeeing the three natives very uneaſy at our progreſs, we told them we only wiſhed to behold the ſea. They led us to a little eminence, from whence we got ſight of it, and of an iſland eight or ten leagues diſtant, which was the ſame that Fannòkko had named Anattom. It appeared to be of conſiderable height; and though not of the ſame extent as Tanna, was probably about ten or twelve leagues in circuit. Having ſeen this iſland, the natives invited us to go on farther inland with them, with the ſame eagerneſs which they had before expreſſed to keep us back; but as we took notice, that one of them was ſent before the reſt, we did not care to truſt their invitations at that time,

time, which might however, for aught I know, have been very friendly and honeſt. We retreated therefore gradually to the beach, having picked up a new plant, and ſeen ſo much of the country, as only made us more deſirous of examining it. Our people had once more tried their luck in fiſhing, but were not by far ſo fortunate as the firſt time. The natives attended to their method of hauling the net, and from their geſtures, we learnt that they are unacquainted with this contrivance, and only dart or ſhoot with arrows at the fiſh, when they riſe near the ſurface of the water. They never failed to beg for ſome fiſh as often as our people hauled the ſeine, which is ſome confirmation that they rarely catch or ſtrike them. As often as they took notice of any thing new to them, they broke out into the interjection, *heebou!* They likewiſe made uſe of the ſame word, when they were ſuddenly ſurpriſed, when they admired, or diſliked, or coveted any thing. The different tone and geſture with which it was either drawled out, or quickly repeated ſeveral times in a breath, ſtrongly marked the various affections of the mind. They ſnapped their fingers at the ſame time, eſpecially when they expreſſed their admiration. 1774. AUGUST.

We went on ſhore at the watering-place the next morning, immediately after breakfaſt. A party of our people had been there ever ſince day-break, and told us they had ſeen many of the natives paſſing by them, from the eaſtern Wedneſd. 12.

1774. AUGUST. part of the bay, loaded with bundles, which they carried into the country. Our men were of opinion that they had actually removed, in order to remain undiſturbed, and out of the reach of our fire-arms; but as we never found many habitations on this part of the ſhore, our arrival might at firſt have drawn together a number of people from other parts of the iſland, who occaſionally lodged in the woods thereabouts, but now returned to their own dwellings, ſeeing that no farther miſchief was to be apprehended from the ſtrangers, who had arrived among them. We endeavoured to conquer their diffidence more and more, by counting on our fingers, that we only intended to remain a certain number of days on the iſland; and we found that they were always much pleaſed and pacified by this intelligence. It muſt be obſerved, however, that all thoſe who carried loads this morning were women, whilſt the men walked on unconcernedly without any incumbrance, except their arms. It ſhould appear from this circumſtance, that the people of Tanna are not yet arrived at that advanced ſtate, which diſtinguiſhes the natives of the Society and Friendly Iſlands. All ſavage nations have the general character of uſing the other ſex with great unkindneſs and indignity, obliging them to perform all ſorts of laborious, and humiliating operations.

The removal of the natives was ſoon diſcernible, as thoſe who came on the beach to us, were in very ſmall numbers.

numbers. We therefore took the opportunity of walking out upon the plain, behind the watering-place. We met with ſeveral ponds of ſtagnant water, in which the natives had planted great quantities of eddoes *(arum.)* The coco-palms formed ſpacious groves, full of different ſhrubberies, where a great number of birds of different ſorts, chiefly fly-catchers, creepers, and parroquets reſided. We ſaw likewiſe many lofty trees, covered with nuts, which are common at Taheitee, *(inocarpus* Nov. Gen.*)* Theſe trees were commonly the reſort of pigeons of different kinds, and chiefly of the ſort which are to be met with at the Friendly Iſlands, where the natives catch and tame them. It ſhould ſeem that the inhabitants of Tanna likewiſe practiſe fowling; for one of our lieutenants ſhot a pigeon this day, which had two very long white feathers faſtened to its tail by ſtrings; he had believed it to be a new and ſingular ſpecies of bird, till he diſcovered the artifice. We met with ſome natives on this excurſion, who told us, that one of our people had killed two pigeons; but this intelligence was only valuable to us, on account of the language in which it was conveyed, which was exactly the ſame with that ſpoken at the Friendly Iſlands. It appeared to us that he made uſe of this language, in order to be more intelligible to us, having frequently obſerved that we pronounced ſeveral words of it. We expreſſed ſome ſurprize however, at his knowledge, and he then repeated the ſame meaning

1774. AUGUST.

in

1774. AUGUST. in the language of Tanna, which was totally diſtinct from the other. He added at the ſame time, that the former language was ſpoken at the iſland of Irronan, which lies ſeven or eight leagues to the eaſt of Tanna *. Perhaps a colony of the ſame race, who inhabit the Friendly Iſlands, and all the eaſterly iſlands of the South Pacific Ocean, may have ſettled on that iſland; or perhaps the natives of Irronan keep up a communication with the Friendly Iſlands, by means of ſome Iſles unknown to us, lying between them.

We made another excurſion in the afternoon, and ſaw but few inhabitants in our way, though we advanced near three miles on the plain. We always told them, that we wanted to kill birds, and they immediately went on without giving us any uneaſineſs. We ſhot indeed a number of ſmall birds, but the graſs was ſo thick that we loſt almoſt all of them. We paſſed by ſome plantations of bananas and ſugar-canes, but ſaw no houſes, the greateſt part of the ground being uncultivated, and covered with ſhady foreſts, or low ſhrubberies. At the end of the plain we obſerved a long, and ſpacious valley, from whence we ſaw a great number of ſmokes riſing, and heard the promiſcuous voices of many men, women, and children. We ſtood in a path, on both ſides of which were thick ſhrubberies; and the vale itſelf was ſo full of groves,

* He likewiſe acquainted us, that Irronan was ſometimes called Footoona.

that

that we neither ſaw the people, whoſe voices we heard, nor any of their dwellings. It being late in the evening, we proceeded no farther, and without diſcovering ourſelves, retreated to the beach. 1774. AUGUST.

The volcano had been quiet ever ſince the 7th, and though it continued to emit ſmoke from time to time, yet the rumbling had entirely ceaſed. The fire within the crater, ſtill however illuminated the clouds of ſmoke. We had heavy, and almoſt continual rains all night. In the morning we landed on the beach, and ſaw but few inhabitants; we therefore repaired to its weſternmoſt corner, where we had obſerved a path which led to the ſteep hill on the weſt ſide of the bay. We aſcended by very eaſy ſteps, through the moſt delightful groves of ſpontaneous trees and ſhrubs, which every where ſpread a fragrant and refreſhing ſmell. Several kinds of flowers embelliſhed the tufted foliage, and the moſt beautiful bindweeds climbed like ivy to the ſummits of the talleſt trees, and adorned them with garlands of blue and purple bloſſoms. A number of birds twittered round us, and gave life to a ſcene, which would without them have been inanimate. Indeed, we did not ſee a ſingle native on the firſt ſlope of this hill, nor did we meet with any plantations. Having walked up about half a mile by different windings, we came to a little glade, covered with delicate herbage, and ſurrounded with the moſt beautiful wild trees of the wood.

Here

1774. AUGUST. Here the ſun ſhone exceſſively hot upon us, the place being entirely ſheltered from winds. A ſulphureous ſmell however, ſoon betrayed a kind of ſteam riſing out of the ground, which added to the heat of the place. There was a little mound of whitiſh earth, which looked as if it were calcareous, on the left ſide of the path, almoſt hid by the branches of ſeveral ſorts of wild fig-trees, that throve luxuriantly in this neighbourhood. From this mound we ſaw a vapour, or ſteam riſing continually; the earth was ſo hot, that we could hardly bear to ſtand upon it, and we found it impregnated with native ſulphur. When we ſtirred in the white earth, we found the ſteam coming up faſter; and on taſting it, we obſerved a ſtyptic or aſtringent quality, like that of alum in it. From this place we walked on a great way higher, and came to another open place, which lay on the ſlope, and was rather barren. Here likewiſe we found two other ſpots, which emitted ſteam, but not in ſuch quantities as the firſt, nor ſo ſtrongly ſcented. The earth which covered theſe ſolfatarras, was of the ſame nature as that on the firſt, and had a greeniſh tinge from the ſulphur with which it was penetrated. But in the neighbourhood of it, we found red ochre of the ſame ſort with that which the natives employ to paint their faces. The volcano was more loud than ever we had known it this day, and at every exploſion we obſerved the ſteam riſing much more copiouſly than before, in thick white clouds,

clouds, from the ſolfatarras. This circumſtance ſeems to indicate, that they have a ſubterraneous connection with, or are, by ſome means unknown to us, affected by the convulſions of this burning mountain. We remarked that this was the ſecond time the exploſions of the volcano had recommenced after ſhowers of rain; and were therefore led to ſuſpect, that the rain in ſome meaſure excites theſe exploſions, by promoting or encreaſing the fermentation of various mineral ſubſtances in the mountain. Having contemplated theſe ſingular *ſpiracula*, we mounted ſtill higher, and diſcovered a great number of plantations, in different parts of the foreſt. The path continued to be very good and eaſy of aſcent, ſurrounded on all ſides by very ſhady trees; but as ſoon as it approached the plantations, we loſt it by ſome means or other, and it ſeemed as if the natives had purpoſely contrived it ſo, in order to prevent being ſurpriſed by their enemies. At laſt we reached the ſummit of this hill, and went down the other ſide of it, in a narrow lane between hedges of reeds, in ſight of the ſea, which waſhes the north-eaſt coaſt of the iſland. In a little time we got ſight of the volcano between the trees, and perceived that the walk which led to it, acroſs ſeveral hills and vallies, could not be leſs than two leagues long from our ſtation. We ſaw its eruption however, and took notice of immenſe maſſes of rock which it hurled upwards in the ſmoke, and ſome of which were at leaſt as large as the hull

1774. AUGUST.

1774. AUGUST. of our long-boat. We were thinking to go on towards it, as we had hitherto met with no bad accident, nor ſeen ſo much as a ſingle native on our walk: however, our voices muſt have alarmed ſome of them in the plantations along which we paſſed, for we preſently heard one or two blowing on great conchs, which, among many ſavage nations, and particularly in the South Seas, are uſed to alarm the country. At this ſound we inſtantly reſolved to retreat, and got ſafely down to the ſolfatarra which we had laſt diſcovered, unſeen by any of the natives. Here we met a few of them coming up the hill from the ſea ſide, who ſeemed greatly ſurpriſed to ſee us ſo far advanced into their receſſes. We told them that we went about to ſhoot birds, and deſired them to bring us ſomething to drink. They went on without ſeeming to take much notice of our requeſt; but after we had botanized on the ſpot above a quarter of an hour, and were juſt preparing to deſcend, we ſaw a whole family of men, women, and children, coming down with abundance of ſugar-canes and two or three coco-nuts. We ſat down, and after refreſhing ourſelves with the juices which theſe vegetables contained, made our hoſpitable friends ſeveral preſents, with which they parted from us well contented. We went down with our acquiſitions, and came on the beach when the boats were going on board. The natives had now begun to trade with yams, ſugar-canes, coco-nuts, and bananas; and though they only ſupplied us ſparingly,

ſparingly, yet we were highly pleaſed even with this ſmall beginning, hoping that in time we might obtain more conſiderable ſupplies. They ſet no value on our iron-ware, but preferred Taheitee cloth, ſmall pieces of green nephritic ſtone from New Zeeland, mother of pearl ſhells, and, above all, pieces of tortoiſe-ſhell. For theſe laſt they ſold their arms; at firſt, parting only with darts and arrows, but afterwards diſpoſing alſo of their bows and clubs. 1774. AUGUST.

In the afternoon we landed, and walked along the ſea-ſhore towards the eaſt point, where the natives had prevented our going on two days before. We met ſome of them, who talked with us a few moments; but whilſt they ſtood near us, we took notice of a ſingle man ſitting behind a tree, with his bow bent and the arrow pointed towards us. As ſoon as he perceived himſelf diſcovered, and a muſket pointed at him, he threw his arms into the buſh and crept out to us, and I believe he really had no bad intent, though ſuch kinds of jeſts are not much to be truſted. We reached the eaſtern point of the harbour, and there gathered ſome beautiful red flowers, which had tempted us ever ſince we came to an anchor; they belonged to a ſpecies of yamboos or *eugenia*. As we were going to croſs the point and to proceed along the ſhore beyond it, fifteen or twenty natives crouded about us, and begged us with the greateſt earneſtneſs to return. We were not much inclined to comply with their demand, but they repeated their intreaties,

1774. AUGUST. and at laſt made ſigns that we ſhould be killed and eaten. The ſame geſtures, though much leſs intelligible, had been made to us two days before, but we had paid very little attention to them, unwilling, upon ſuch ſlight teſtimony, to ſuppoſe that they had any idea of anthropophagy. However, at preſent we could no longer be miſtaken; for, having pretended to miſunderſtand them, and making them believe that we thought they offered us ſome proviſions, we began to move forward, and expreſſed that we ſhould be glad to eat ſomething. They were very eager to undeceive us, and ſhowed, by ſigns, how they killed a man, cut his limbs aſunder, and ſeparated the fleſh from the bones. Laſtly, they bit their own arms, to expreſs more clearly that they eat human fleſh. We turned from the point, but walked towards a hut which we obſerved about fifty yards from it, where the ground began to riſe. Here ſeveral of them, ſeeing us advance, took up arms out of the hut, perhaps to force us to return. It was not our wiſh to offend theſe people in their own country, and therefore we checked a ſpirit of curioſity, which might have proved fatal to ſome of them, if they had obliged us to defend our lives. The motives for purſuing our diſcoveries on this point were not, however, of a trifling nature. Every morning, at day-break, we heard a ſlow ſolemn ſong or dirge ſung on this point, which laſted more than a quarter of an hour. It ſeemed to be a religious act, and gave us great reaſon

reaſon to ſuſpect that ſome place of worſhip was concealed in theſe groves, and the conſtant endeavours of the natives to keep us from this place, greatly confirmed us in this ſuppoſition. Having walked back a little way, we reſolved to get upon the flat hill in a place where the aſcent was eaſy, and where, being very near the point, we hoped to be able to make ſome obſervations. When we had reached the top, which was about thirty-five or forty feet perpendicular in height, we found ourſelves in a ſpacious plantation, chiefly conſiſting of innumerable banana-trees. We found it interſperſed with coco-palms and other tall and tufted trees, which entirely impeded the proſpect on all ſides, and ſeparated from other plantations by various fences of reeds, very neatly made, much reſembling thoſe of Tonga-Tabboo and Namoka. Here the natives began to repeat their threats, and, if poſſible, made it more plain to us than before, that we ſhould be killed and eaten if we went on. We told them we only wiſhed to ſhoot ſome birds, but they did not ſeem to pay much attention to this excuſe, and I know not whether we ſhould have made any diſcoveries this afternoon, if the little friendly old man, Paw-yangom, had not luckily met us. We expreſſed reciprocal joy on finding each other, and the old man immediately conducted us along the edge of the hill towards its weſtern extremity. Here we ſaw great numbers of fig-trees, which the natives cultivate for the ſake of the fruit and the leaves. They are

1774. AUGUST.

of

1774. AUGUST. of two or three different kinds, and one ſort, in particular, bears figs of the common ſize, which are woolly, like peaches, on the outſide, and have a beautiful crimſon pulp like pomegranates. They are ſweetiſh and juicy, but, upon the whole, rather inſipid. The yamboos, *(eugenia,)* a cooling watery fruit, of the ſize of pears, but with an agreeable tartneſs, likewiſe grew here in great abundance on large trees; and we alſo obſerved ſome fine cabbage-palms, *(areca oleracea.)* We advanced into a little thicket of various flowering ſhrubs, and in a few minutes found ourſelves on a fine open area not leſs than an hundred yards ſquare, on the ſkirts of which we ſaw three habitations of the natives. Many lofty trees, richly furniſhed with foliage, made this receſs impenetrable to the eye from the outſide. Among the reſt we noticed an immenſe wild fig-tree in one corner of the green, of which the ſtem was three yards in diameter, and the branches ſpread at leaſt forty yards on all ſides in the moſt pictureſque manner. At the foot of this beautiful tree, which was ſtill in full vigour, we ſaw a ſmall family ſeated round a fire, on which they roaſted ſome yams and bananas. They ran away into their huts at ſight of us, but Paw-yangom telling them they had nothing to fear, they came out again; the women and girls, however, remained at a great diſtance, and only peeped at us behind the buſhes. We ſat down with them, and they offered us ſome of their proviſions, with the ſame hoſpitality which

we

we had experienced in other iſlands. Their huts were, properly ſpeaking, large ſheds, of which the roof reaches down to the very ground, and forms a ridge at top. They are open at both ends, having only a ſmall encloſure or railing of reeds and ſticks about eighteen inches high. The height of the ridge in the largeſt was nine or ten feet, and the width on the floor between the roofs nearly the ſame. The length, however, was conſiderable, and exceeded five and thirty feet. The conſtruction of theſe huts is very ſimple; two row of ſtakes are placed in the ground, bending towards each other, and thoſe which are oppoſite are tied together. Over theſe they lay ſeveral mats, made of coco-nut leaves, which form a thatch ſufficient to defend them from the inclemencies of the air. We ſaw no manner of utenſils or furniture in theſe houſes. The floor was covered with dry graſs, and a few mats of palm-leaves lay ſpread in different parts. We likewiſe obſerved that all the inſide was blackened by ſmoke, and found in every hut the veſtiges of ſeveral fire-places. In the middle of the area, we ſaw three tall poles ſtanding cloſe together, which were made of the ſtems of coco-palms, and connected together by means of tranſverſe laths at the top. A vaſt number of ſmall ſticks were faſtened acroſs them from the top to within nine or ten feet of the bottom, and theſe were hung with old coco-nuts. As they make uſe of the oil in the kernel, and employ the ſhell for bracelets, they probably keep them in this

1774. AUGUST.

place

1774. AUGUST. place to ſeaſon them. All the ſkirts of the flat hill, where we ſaw no habitation, are, as I have already obſerved, well ſtocked with immenſe numbers of wild coco-palms, and the ground underneath them is covered with nuts, of which as it ſhould ſeem they take the trouble to collect only an inconſiderable quantity. Little bits of their cloth, which they wear as faſhes or belts, were ſuſpended on the buſhes which ſurrounded the green; and the preſents which Paw-yangom had received, among which was a laced hat, were placed in the ſame manner like ſo many trophies. This was a convincing proof to me of the general honeſty of the people towards each other. At Taheitee they are already obliged to ſuſpend their goods to the roofs of their houſes, in order to keep them out of the reach of thieves; but here they are ſafe on every buſh. It muſt be obſerved likewiſe, in confirmation of this remark, that during our ſtay among the people of Tanna, we had not a ſingle inſtance of their ſtealing the leaſt trifle from any one of our people. The natives having obſerved, that though we looked into their huts, we did not attempt to do any hurt, to diſplace or take any thing, ſoon became more reconciled to our appearance, and the boys, from ſix to fourteen years, who had hitherto kept aloof, ventured to come near, and ſuffered us to ſeize their hands. We diſtributed medals with ſilk ribbons to them, and gave them handkerchiefs of Taheitee cloth, which entirely conciliated their affection, and baniſhed reſerve

ſerve and the remains of apprehenſion. Diſtruſt and ſuſ- 1774. AUGUST.
picion, are not yet known to the boy; he is frank and honeſt, and thinks every body is like himſelf. We learnt all their names, and preſerved them in memory, and it can hardly be thought how much this little artifice aſſiſted us in gaining their good graces; they were overjoyed that we remembered them, and came running as often as we called. Having ſpent ſome time with them, we got up to return to the beach, and old Paw-yangom, who did not care to go down, it being very near ſun-ſet, gave directions to two or three young men to ſhew us the neareſt path. We took leave of him very heartily, and made ſome addition to the preſents he had already received. In our way we told our conductors, pointing to the coco-palms near the beach, that we were dry, and ſhould be glad to taſte ſome of them. Upon this they immediately led us into another path, where a number of palms ſtood in the midſt of the plantation. From thence they took ſome nuts, and preſented them to us, which we interpreted as a mark of great good-nature; but when we taſted the liquor, we found that they had done us a particular kindneſs or civility, it being infinitely more delicious than that of the nuts near the beach. We now looked at the trees, and finding them in very fine order, concluded that thoſe below were wild; but theſe, planted and brought to perfection by the care of the inhabitants. It is well known that by means of cultivation

1774. AUGUST. the coco-palm, as well as all other trees, is made fitter for domeſtic purpoſes; and the Javaneſe have many varieties, of which the nuts are much improved *. The ſort which is uſual in the Society Iſlands is one of the beſt, and likewiſe owes its excellence to culture; nor do I remember to have ſeen any variety there reſembling the wild palms of Tanna, which thrive even on the mountains. Having been well refreſhed through the benevolence of our friendly Indians, we proceeded towards the beach, and in a few minutes rejoined our watering-party there, by a path which led us directly down. Here we rewarded our conductors to the beſt of our power, and embarking in a boat returned to the ſhip for the enſuing night.

The ſingular nature of the ſolfatarra on the weſtern hill ſo much attracted our attention, that we haſtened thither again the next morning, and Mr. Hodges was of the party. The volcano continued to thunder all the day, and threw up vaſt quantities of minute black aſhes, which, when more accurately examined, proved to be long needle-like and ſemitranſparent ſherls. The whole country was ſtrewed with theſe particles, and they proved remarkably dangerous to our eyes in botanizing, as every leaf on the iſland was entirely covered with them. It may however be remarked, that the volcano and its productions ſeem to contribute greatly to that prodigious luxuriance of vegetation which

* See Hawkeſworth, vol. III. p. 736.

is

is ſo remarkable on this iſland. Many plants here attain twice the height which they have in other countries; their leaves are broader, their flowers larger, and more richly ſcented. The ſame obſervation has been made in various volcanic countries. The ſoil of Veſuvius and Etna is reckoned the moſt fertile in Italy and Sicily; and ſome of the beſt flavoured wines which Italy produces are raiſed upon it. The volcanic ground on the Habichtſwald, in Heſſe, though ſituated in a high, cold, and barren country, is ſurpriſingly fertile, and covered with verdure. All kinds of plants, indigenous and foreign, thrive with luxuriance, and make this beautiful ſpot, on which the gardens of the landgrave are ſituated, the admiration of all beholders. Nay, to confine ourſelves to our own voyage, the Society Iſlands, the Marqueſas, and ſome of the Friendly Iſlands, where we found volcanic remains, as well as Ambrrym and Tanna, where we actually ſaw burning mountains, have a rich and fertile ſoil, in which nature diſplays the magnificence of the vegetable kingdom. Eaſter Iſland itſelf, wholly overturned by ſome volcanic eruption, produces different vegetables and uſeful roots, without any other ſoil than flags, cinders, and pumice-ſtones; though the burning heat of the ſun, from which there is no ſhelter, ſhould ſeem ſufficient to ſhrivel and deſtroy every plant. 1774. AUGUST.

We ſoon reached the firſt ſmoking place, but ſeeing the natives ſomewhat higher, we did not ſtop, and walked up

1774. AUGUST. to them. They were the ſame who had behaved ſo well to us the day before, and they now ſent ſome of their people up into the country, as ſoon as they ſaw us. Mr. Hodges ſketched ſome views, whilſt we paſſed our time in examining ſeveral plants, and ſuſpended a thermometer, with Fahrenheit's ſcale, on a tree in the ſhade. This thermometer ſtood at 78° on board the ſhip, at half an hour paſt eight, which was the time of our departure. Having been carried up cloſe to the body, it had riſen to 87°; but after hanging five minutes, at a diſtance of twenty yards from the ſolfatarra, it remained at 80°. We made a hole in the earth, deep enough to contain the thermometer in its whole length, and ſuſpending it from a ſtick into this hole, it roſe in half a minute to 170°. We left it there for the ſpace of four minutes, and at the end of that time it ſtill marked the ſame degree. The inſtant it was taken out, it fell to 160°, and in a few minutes gradually to 80° again. The ſteam which iſſues from this place is conſequently of the hotteſt. The natives, who obſerved that we ſtirred in the ſolfatarra, deſired us to leave it, telling us it would take fire, and reſemble the volcano, which they called *aſſoòr*. They ſeemed to be extremely apprehenſive of ſome miſchance, and were very uneaſy as often as we made the leaſt attempt to diſturb the ſulphureous earth. We walked higher, and found ſeveral other ſpots ſmoking, and of the ſame nature with that before deſcribed. By this time

time the meſſengers, whom the people had ſent off, came back with ſugar-canes and coco-nuts, and treated us as they had done the preceding morning. After this refreſhment we advanced higher up the hill, towards another in ſight, from whence we hoped to have a nearer view of the volcano; but upon our approaching ſome plantations, the natives came out, and pointed out a path, which they pretended led directly to the volcano or aſſoòr. We followed them for ſeveral miles, through various windings, being continually ſurrounded by woods, which hid the country from us on all ſides. At laſt we found ourſelves near the ſea-ſhore, from whence we had ſet out, and ſaw, or thought we ſaw, that the inhabitants had been artful enough to lead us far from their dwellings, where they diſlike the preſence of ſtrangers. One of them was a very intelligent man, and gave us the names of ſeveral iſlands in the neighbourhood, ſome in directions where we had not been. As we knew that captain Cook had collected a liſt of names of countries the day before, all which he afterwards found to be diſtricts on the iſle of Tanna, we particularly enquired of our Indian, whether the places which he enumerated were likewiſe ſituated on this iſland; but he expreſsly ſaid there was the ſea (tàſſee) between them; and ſeeing us make circles on a paper, made ſigns that we were right. 1774. AUGUST.

We ſpent the afternoon in an excurſion round the flat hill to the ſouth-eaſtward. Here we found ſome new plants, and

1774. AUGUST. and met with a few natives, who offered to conduct us to the ſea on the other ſide. However, obſerving that they only endeavoured to lead us back to the watering place by another path, we left them, and walked on alone through the plantations, many of which were encloſed with fences of reed five feet high. However another native ſoon came after us, and brought us to the beach on the other ſide of the iſland. We ſaw the iſle of Anattom again, and the native pointed a little to the north of it, where he ſaid another iſland was ſituated, which he called Eetònga. This circumſtance ſtrengthens the conjecture which I ventured before, that there is ſome connection or intercourſe between Tanna and the Friendly Iſlands. The name of Eetònga has a great ſimilarity with that of Tonga-Tabboo, and ſome of the natives of Middleburgh Iſland, or Eaoowhe, really call it Eetonga-Tabboo. The latter part of the word, (Tabboo) is affixed to other iſlands in the Pacific Ocean; viz. Tabbooamannoo (Saunders Iſland) and Tabboo aï *. I will not pretend to ſay that the people of Tanna deſign the iſland of Tonga-Tabboo by their Eetònga; but there is room to ſuppoſe that ſome other iſland of that name may be ſituated towards the Friendly Iſlands which facilitates the connection. When we had ſatisfied our curioſity we returned to the beach at the bay, where our people had once more

* An iſland enumerated by the Taheitians.

caught

caught about two hundred and fifty pounds weight of fiſh. This good fortune enabled the captain to give the whole ſhip's company another freſh meal, which was conſumed with the greateſt avidity. The bay contained great plenty of fiſh, and ſome of the petty officers, who took the trouble of fiſhing, caught ſeveral albecores and cavalhas of prodigious dimenſions during night. Two fiſh of the ſame ſpecies which had poiſoned ſo many perſons at Mallicollo were likewiſe taken one morning; but though I wiſhed particularly to draw and deſcribe this ſpecies, in order to enable future navigators to be on their guard, yet ſuch was the greedineſs with which all our ſhipmates now ſeized on a freſh meal, that in ſpite of the example, which was recent in all our memories, the fiſh were cut up, ſalted, and peppered the moment they came out of the water. Fortunately thoſe who dined upon them did not feel any bad effects; a farther proof that thoſe which poiſoned the officers had fed upon ſome noxious vegetables, and by that means acquired a bad quality, which is not natural to them. Our ſailors relied on the experiment of the ſilver-ſpoon, which remained perfectly untainted after being boiled with the fiſh; but it is at preſent well known that this mark is extremely fallacious, and that only certain ſorts of poiſons tinge that metal with an unuſual colour. The natives ſtill continued to ſell us ſome yams, but the trade was very far from being briſk. Tortoiſe-ſhell was the only commodity which

1774. AUGUST.

1774. AUGUST. which they were deſirous to obtain; but as we had never expected a demand for it, it happened that there were only a few ſmall pieces in the ſhip, which had been accidentally purchaſed at Tonga-Tabboo. Thoſe who were in poſſeſſion of this valuable article were far from making proper uſe of it. Notwithſtanding the loathſomeneſs of ſalt meat, the ſailor could not be brought to have a ſingle provident thought for the future, and exchanged his tortoiſe-ſhell for bows and arrows, inſtead of laying up a ſtock of yams.

Our ſhort excurſions into the country did not produce ſuch great diſcoveries in botany, as to confine us to the ſhip a whole day. We therefore haſtened aſhore every morning, and endeavoured to collect materials for new obſervation. On the 13th, we walked up the flat hill to the eaſtward, in order to viſit our friends who lived with old Paw-yangom. We arrived at the plantations unſeen by any of the natives, who now came down in very ſmall numbers to the beach, their curioſity being ſatisfied, and their diſtruſt conſiderably leſſened. We heard one of the men at work cutting down a tree with his hatchet of ſtone, and obſerved him through the buſhes a long while. The tree was not ſo thick as a man's thigh, and yet it was a very laborious undertaking, with ſuch a tool as this hatchet, to cut it in two. We went up to him, and he immediately left off working, in order to talk to us. Several boys, who remembered us, came, calling us by name, and brought

Saturday 13.

brought us handfulls of figs and yamboos; and the women likewiſe ventured to come and look at us. We examined the hatchet which the man employed, and found it formed exactly like thoſe which are made uſe of at the Friendly and Society Iſlands. The blade was of a black ſtone, which reſembled the baſaltes employed at thoſe places, and he told us it came from the iſle of Anattom. He ſhewed us at the ſame time another kind of hatchet, to which a broken ſhell was faſtened inſtead of a blade. This ſhell, which ſeemed to be a part of a mitre-ſhell *(voluta mitra)*, he ſaid was brought from the low iſland Immèr, a few leagues to the northward of the bay. It appeared that he was clearing a piece of ground, in order to plant it with yams. He had already cut down a quantity of buſhes, which lay in heaps, and which he told us he would ſet on fire. We proceeded from hence towards the ſea ſhore on the other ſide, attended by a number of boys, and ſeveral young men. We ſhot ſome birds in our way thither, and collected ſeveral new plants in the plantations, which were more delightfully ſituated than any we had hitherto ſeen. We found in them a variety of odoriferous plants, and ſome others, which it ſeems were cultivated only for their elegant appearance, as is frequently practiſed in gardens. We alſo took notice of the catappa-tree, of which the nuts have a large delicious kernel, twice as big as an almond. It had ſhed its leaves at preſent; but the nuts of the laſt ſeaſon were ſtill ſticking

1774. AUGUST.

1774. AUGUST. on the branches: the boys broke the hard ſhell between ſtones, preſenting the kernel to us on a clean freſh leaf. They were as aſſiduous at preſent in offering their ſervices as the Taheitians, and from leſs intereſted motives. If we had collected a plant, of which we could find no other ſpecimens, we only ſhewed it them, and away they flew to gather it for us, in places where they knew it was to be found. They were extremely fond of ſeeing us ſhoot, eagerly pointed out birds on the ſummits of the coco-palms, and were overjoyed as often as we killed them. Near every hut we ſaw ſome poultry, and ſeveral well fed hogs; and here and there we obſerved rats running over the path, of the ſame ſort which is common in the other iſlands of the Pacific Ocean. They particularly frequented the fields of ſugar-cane, in which they make great depredation. The natives had therefore dug ſeveral holes all round theſe plantations, in which they catch theſe animals. When we came to the ſea ſhore, we walked to the northward along the beach a good away, in order to come to the point, which the natives from the other ſide had repeatedly guarded from our ſight. On the ſhore we obſerved ſome ſmall huts, which we took to be the abode of fiſhermen, and from whence we concluded that we had been formerly miſtaken, in ſuppoſing them unacquainted with fiſhing; however, we ſaw no inhabitants, no nets, nor fiſh in theſe huts, but only ſome darts, which might be uſed as harpoons,

poons, or fiſh-gigs. Our attending Indians were greatly alarmed on ſeeing us go on towards the point, and with much anxious intreaty prevailed on us to give up all thoughts of going to examine that part of the iſland. They repeated to us the ſigns of eating human fleſh; and it is not to be doubted, but that this practice ſtill prevails among them. Thoſe who contend, that anthropophagy has the plea of the moſt cruel neceſſity, will hardly be able to account for its exiſtence in a nation living in a rich and fertile country, having plenty of vegetable food, and likewiſe well provided with domeſtic animals. The principle of revenge ſeems much more likely to have produced this extraordinary cuſtom, wherever it has been obſerved. Self-preſervation is doubtleſs the firſt law of nature, and the paſſions are ſubſervient to its purpoſes. In civilized communities we have tacitly conſented to laws and regulations, and delegated to certain individuals the power to redreſs our wrongs; but among ſavages every man rights himſelf, and anger and revenge are implanted in his breaſt, to repreſs the injuries and oppreſſions of others. They are equally natural to him as the ſentiments of general philanthropy; and however different and oppoſite theſe two impulſes of nature may ſeem, yet they are ſprings, which by acting againſt each other, keep the whole ſyſtem of human ſociety in conſtant motion, and prevent its total ſubverſion or corruption. A man wholly deſtitute of philanthropy is a

1774. AUGUST.

1774. AUGUST. monſter, juſtly deteſted by all mankind; but another, entirely incapable of anger, is a ſheepiſh wretch, liable to be inſulted by every mean-ſpirited villain. A nation, or I may ſay a family, (as ſavages ſeldom live in greater communities), which has been frequently expoſed to the attacks and inſults of others, naturally contracts a degree of hatred and inveteracy againſt its oppreſſors, which renders its revenge more furious, unbounded, and, in our eyes, more cruel. If the enemy have uſed treacherous arts, they create diſtruſt, and in the end form a malevolent diſpoſition, which ſoon has recourſe to the ſame baſeneſs. At the leaſt ſhadow of an injury they are up in arms, and threaten to bear down all before them: when they are actually provoked, they are ruled by no other law but that of the ſtrongeſt, and exterminate their foes with a degree of fury, which is capable of the moſt horrid exceſſes *. On the contrary, a nation, which has not experienced, or has long loſt the remembrance of miſchievous enemies, and inveterate broils, which, by applying to agriculture, has arrived to a degree of opulence, luxury, and civilization, and acquired new and refined ideas of philanthropy, is unaccuſtomed to the ſudden overflowings of the bile, and ſlow to reſent an affront †. The natives of Tanna doubtleſs are engaged, either in civil feuds with each other, or in frequent wars

* See vol. I. p. 173. † Ibid. p. 321.

with

with the adjacent iſlanders; their reſerved and diſtruſtful behaviour towards us at firſt, and their cuſtom of going conſtantly armed, ſeems clearly to prove the truth of this aſſertion. We have therefore, I think, great room to believe, that the violence of reſentment has inſenſibly led them to the cuſtom of eating human fleſh, which they practiſe according to their own confeſſion. But we muſt ſtill remain utterly ignorant of the reaſons which induced them to prohibit our acceſs towards the eaſtern point of the harbour. 1774. AUGUST.

We turned back with our Indians to their great joy and ſatisfaction. They led us on by a path which we had never trodden before, through a variety of the richeſt plantations, kept in excellent order. The boys ran before us, and gave us repeated marks of their ſkill in warlike exerciſes. They ſlung a ſtone with great accuracy, and made uſe of a green reed, or ſtiff graſs, in lieu of a dart. They had attained to ſuch perfection in throwing the latter, that they never failed to hit their object, and knew to give the reed, which every breath of air might turn out of its way, ſo much force and moment, that it entered above an inch into the hardeſt wood. They poiſed it between the loweſt joint of the thumb, and the hand, without touching it with a ſingle finger. The youngeſt among them, five or ſix years old, already habituated themſelves to this exerciſe, and thus prepared one day, to wield their

1774. AUGUST. their arms with activity and effect. By various windings we came back to their habitations, where the women were employed in dreſſing their dinner. They had made a fire of a few ſticks above ground, under the fig-tree, and broiled the roots of yams and eddoes over it. As ſoon as we arrived they were ſtartled, and began to run away, but our conductors quieted them, and they continued their operations. We ſat down on the trunk of a tree which lay before one of the houſes, and endeavoured to talk with our new friends as well as we could, whilſt ſome of them were gone to fetch us ſome refreſhments. We collected a number of words of their language on this occaſion, and had the pleaſure to ſatisfy their curioſity reſpecting our dreſs, arms, and various implements, concerning which they had hitherto not ventured to aſk a ſingle queſtion. The inhabitants of adjacent plantations hearing of our arrival, crouded about us, and ſeemed much pleaſed that they could converſe amicably and familiarly with us. As I happened to hum a ſong, many of them very eagerly intreated me to ſing to them, and though not one of us was properly acquainted with muſic, yet we ventured to gratify their curioſity, and in fact, offered them a great variety of different airs. Some German and Engliſh ſongs, eſpecially of the more lively kind, pleaſed them very much; but Dr. Sparrman's Swediſh tunes gained univerſal applauſe; from whence it appeared that their

their judgment of muſic was not influenced by the ſame rules which regulate the taſte of other countries. When we had performed, we deſired them in return to give us an opportunity of admiring their talents, and one of them immediately began a very ſimple tune; it was however harmonious, and, as far as we could judge, ſuperior to the muſic of all the nations in the tropical part of the South Sea, which we had hitherto heard. It ran through a much more conſiderable compaſs of notes, than is employed at Taheitee, or even at Tonga-Tabboo; and had a ſerious turn which diſtinguiſhed it very remarkably from the ſofter effeminate muſic of thoſe iſlands. The words ſeemed to be metrically arranged, and flowed very currently from the tongue. When the firſt had finiſhed his ſong, another began; his tune was different as to the compoſition, but had the ſame ſerious ſtyle which ſtrongly marked the general turn of the people. They were indeed ſeldom ſeen to laugh ſo heartily, and jeſt ſo facetiouſly, as the more poliſhed nations of the Friendly and Society Iſlands, who have already learnt to ſet a great value on theſe enjoyments. Our friendly natives likewiſe produced a muſical inſtrument, which conſiſted of eight reeds, like the ſyrinx of Tonga-Tabboo, with this difference, that the reeds regularly decreaſed in ſize, and comprehended an octave, though the ſingle reeds were not perfectly in tune. We might perhaps have had an opportunity of hearing them play on this inſtrument, had not the arrival of ſome of their brethren with a preſent of coco-nuts, yams, ſugar-

1774. AUGUST.

canes,

1774. AUGUST. canes, and figs, obliged us in civility to transfer our attention from the muſicians, to thoſe who brought us ſuch a valuable gift. And here I cannot but lament, that the ingenious and obliging friend, who communicated to me his remarks on the muſic of the Friendly Iſlands, of Taheitee and New Zeeland, did not likewiſe viſit the iſland of Tanna, which in that reſpect would doubtleſs have furniſhed him with ſome curious and uſeful obſervations.

If we have before obſerved the principle of revenge to have been active among the natives of Tanna, we muſt allow at the ſame time, that benevolence, and a love of the fellow-creature, are not entirely baniſhed from their hearts. As there is the greateſt reaſon to ſuppoſe, that their life is frequently diſturbed by the troubles of war, we cannot be ſurpriſed at the diſtruſt which they all expreſſed towards us, on the firſt days of our acquaintance; but as ſoon as they were thoroughly convinced of our harmleſs intentions, they naturally gave way to a contrary impulſe, which nothing but the neceſſity of ſelf-preſervation could have ſilenced ſo long. They did not indeed trade with us, becauſe their affluence is not yet equal to that of the Taheitians; but hoſpitality does not conſiſt in exchanging an article of which you have more than a ſufficiency, for another of which you ſtand greatly in need.

Having made various preſents to our friends, to the beſt of our abilities, we returned down to the beach, and paſſed

ſome

1774. AUGUST.

ſome time among the natives who were there aſſembled. We obſerved more women among them this day, than we had found before; moſt of them were married, and carried their children in a mat-ſatchel on their backs. Some had baſkets of a cloſe texture, made of pliant ſticks, in which they brought a brood of young chickens, whilſt others had yamboos, and figs, which they preſented to us. Among the reſt, we ſaw one who had a whole baſket full of green oranges, though on all our excurſions we had never found a ſingle orange-tree in the plantations. However, we were much pleaſed to have ſeen this fruit at Tanna, as well as at Mallicollo, there being great room to ſuppoſe, that it is likewiſe a production of the intermediate iſlands. We were fortunate in little acquiſitions to-day; another woman gave us a pye or pudding, of which the cruſt or dough was made of bananas, and eddoes; and the contents were the leaves of the okra *(hibiſcus eſculentus)* mixed up with the kernel of a coco-nut. This pudding was exceedingly well-taſted, and ſhewed that the women are well ſkilled in cookery. We alſo purchaſed ſeveral pipes of eight reeds, which the natives brought for ſale, and ſome bows, arrows, and clubs; with all which we returned on board, rather later in the day than uſual.

After dinner we came on ſhore again, to be preſent at hauling the ſeine; however, when we arrived on the beach, we ſeparated, and Dr. Sparrman went up the flat hill with

1774. AUGUST. me, to pay another viſit to the natives. Some of them met us about half way, and conducted us to the huts. We were no ſooner ſeated with the father of one of the families, a middle-aged man, of a promiſing countenance, than our friends importuned us to ſing to them again. We readily complied with their requeſt, and when they ſeemed to wonder at the difference in our ſongs, we endeavoured to make them comprehend that we were natives of different countries. Hearing this, they pointed at an elderly thin man in the circle of our hearers, and telling us that he was a native of Irromanga *, deſired him to ſing to us. The man immediately ſtepped forward, and began a ſong, in the courſe of which he made a variety of geſticulations, not only to our entertainment, but to the great ſatisfaction of all the people about him. His ſong was to the full as muſical as that of the people of Tanna, but it ſeemed to be of a droll or humorous nature, from his various ludicrous poſtures, and from the particular tone of the whole. The language was utterly diſtinct from that of Tanna, but not harſh or ill-ſuited to muſic. It ſeemed likewiſe to have a certain metre, but very different from that ſlow and ſerious one which we heard this morning. It appeared to us, when he had done ſinging, that the people of Tanna ſpoke to him in his own language, but that he was not acquainted with theirs. Whether he came as a viſitor, or had been

* The laſt iſland from whence we came to Tanna.

taken

taken priſoner, we could not determine; the natives however told us upon this occaſion, that their beſt clubs, made of caſuarina wood, came from Irromanga, ſo that it is probable they have an amicable intercourſe, or carry on a kind of trade with the inhabitants of that iſland. We obſerved no remarkable characteriſtic difference in his features from thoſe of the people of Tanna, and his cuſtom of dreſſing, or rather ornamenting himſelf was the ſame. His hair was woolly, ſhort, and therefore not divided into little *queues*. His temper was very chearful, and he appeared to be more inclined to mirth than any of the people of Tanna. 1774. AUGUST.

Whilſt the native of Irromanga was ſinging, the women came out of their huts, and ſeated themſelves in the little group which ſurrounded us. They were in general of a low ſtature, compared with the men, and wore ſhaggy petticoats, made of graſſes and leaves, which lengthened according to their age. Such as had borne children, and ſeemed to be about thirty years old, had entirely loſt all the feminine graces, and their petticoats deſcended to the ancles. Some young girls, about fourteen years of age, had very agreeable ſmall features, and a ſmile which became more engaging, in proportion as their fears wore off. Their whole form was ſlender, their arms particularly delicate, but the boſom round and full, and the petticoats barely reaching to the knee. Their hair curling upon

1774. AUGUST. their heads, without being cut, or reſtrained into any particular form, had not a bad effect; and the green plantane leaf which they generally wore, inſtead of covering it from the ſight, ſerved rather to ſet off its black colour to advantage. They wore in their ears tortoiſe-ſhell rings; but we obſerved that the number of ornaments conſiderably encreaſed with age, the oldeſt and uglieſt being loaded with necklaces, ear-rings, noſe-jewels, and bracelets. It appeared to me that the women were not held in any eſteem by the men, but obeyed upon the ſmalleſt ſign; and according to the accounts of our waterers (See above, p. 292.) many were ſeen in the humiliating guiſe of drudges and beaſts of burden. Perhaps the laborious taſks which they are forced to perform, contribute to leſſen their ſtature, eſpecially if they are diſproportioned to their ſtrength. It is the practice of all uncivilized nations to deny their women the common privileges of human beings, and to treat them as creatures inferior to themſelves. The ideas of finding happineſs and comfort in the boſom of a companion, only ariſe with a higher degree of culture. Where the mind is continually occupied with the means of ſelf-preſervation, there can be but little refined ſentiment in the commerce of the ſexes, and nothing but brutal enjoyment is known. Infirmity and meekneſs, inſtead of finding a protector in the ſavage, are commonly inſulted and oppreſſed: the love of power is ſo natural to mankind, that they eagerly ſeize every

oppor-

opportunity to exerciſe their ſuperiority over thoſe who are unable to reſiſt. The encreaſe of population neceſſarily brings on a greater degree of poliſh; the cares of ſelf-preſervation are in great meaſure removed from the individual to the community; affluence takes the place of want and indigence, and the mind more unemployed, takes pleaſure in the more refined enjoyment of life; it gives a looſe to a diſpoſition for mirth and play, and learns to ſet a value on the amiable qualities of the ſex. The ſavage is not wholly incapable of tenderneſs and affection; we trace them in the boy whilſt he remains thoughtleſs and free from care*; but as ſoon as he feels the urgent wants of his exiſtence, every other ſentiment or inſtinct is forced to lie dormant. We obſerved an inſtance of affection among the natives of Tanna this evening, which ſtrongly proves that the paſſions and innate qualities of human nature are much the ſame in every climate. A little girl, about eight years old, of very agreeable features, peeped at us between the heads of the people who were ſeated on the ground. As ſoon as ſhe found herſelf obſerved, ſhe ran away to hide herſelf in the hut. I beckoned the child to come back, and ſhewed her a piece of Taheitee cloth, but I could not prevail on her to come and fetch it. Her father got up, and with ſome entreaty perſuaded her to come to me. I took hold of her hand, and 1774. AUGUST.

* We may remember, that the attachment of the people at Tanna towards us, began with the riſing generation.

gave

1774. AUGUST. gave her the cloth, and a number of little ornaments. But I was overpaid by the pleaſure of the father, the joy, the fondneſs which ſparkled in his eyes, and lighted up his whole countenance.

We ſtaid among theſe people till ſunſet, and were entertained with ſongs, and with a diſplay of their ſkill. At our requeſt they ſhot their arrows into the air, and at a mark. They did not force the arrow to any extraordinary height, but were very accurate markſmen at a ſhort diſtance, as has been already obſerved. With their clubs they parried the darts of their antagoniſt, nearly in the ſame manner as I have deſcribed at Taheitee (See p. 104.) They told us that all the clubs which have a lateral blade, like a fleam (See p. 280.) are brought from the low iſland, which they call Immèr; but we could not learn whether they are manufactured there by the inhabitants, or whether the iſland is uninhabited, and they only viſit it occaſionally, to gather ſhells and to cut wood. Before we left the huts, the women had lighted ſeveral fires in and about them, and began to dreſs their ſuppers. The natives all huddled about theſe fires, and ſeemed to feel the evening air rather too cool for their naked bodies. Several of them had a ſwelling in the upper eye-lid, which we attributed in ſome meaſure to this practice of ſitting in the ſmoak. It impeded their ſight ſo much, that they were obliged to lean their heads backwards, till the eye was in a horizontal line with

with the object which they wiſhed to behold. This complaint was the more remarkable, as it extended to ſeveral little boys five and ſix years old; from whence we ſuſpected that it was perhaps propagated from one generation to another. 1774. AUGUST.

When we arrived on the beach, almoſt all the natives had left it, and in a ſhort time we were left entirely to ourſelves. To us, who were provided with cloaths, the cool of the evening was delightful, and we rambled about the deſerted woods till the twilight had entirely diſappeared. A prodigious number of bats of a ſmall ſize fluttered about us, coming out of every buſh; but our endeavours to ſhoot at them were entirely unſucceſsful, for we could not ſee them till they were cloſe to us, and they were inſtantly out of ſight again. Our people having replaced their nets in the boats, after toiling a long time with no other ſucceſs than a dozen or two of fiſh, which all together might weigh thirty pounds, we embarked likewiſe, and returned on board to reſt from our excurſion.

The next morning captain Cook, Mr. Wales, Mr. Patton, and ſeveral other gentlemen, who were deſirous to examine the volcano, ſet out with Dr. Sparrman, my father, myſelf, and two men, and walked up the hill on the weſt ſide of the bay. The weather was foggy, heavy, and ſultry, but the volcano was quiet. We ſoon reached the ſolfatara, where the hot ſteam roſe plentifully. The experiment to meaſure

1774. AUGUST. meaſure the degree of heat was repeated as on the 12th, with this difference, that the thermometer was entirely buried in the white earth where the vapour came up. After it had remained one minute in this ſtate, it roſe to 210°, which is nearly the heat of boiling water, and remained ſtationary there as long as we kept it in the hole, which was for the ſpace of five minutes. As ſoon as it was taken out, it fell inſtantly to 95°, and gradually deſcended to 80°, where it had ſtood previous to the immerſion. The perpendicular height of the firſt ſolfatara, above the level of the ſea, is about 80 yards. We proceeded up the hill, and ſaw ſeveral extenſive ſpots of ground which had been cleared of wood in order to be cultivated. The wretched tools of the natives, and the neceſſity of working very ſlowly with them, to which we had been witneſſes on the other hill, convinced us that this piece of ground, which comprehended near two acres, muſt have required a great deal of labour and a long ſpace of time to clear. We paſſed by ſome dwellings, but did not ſee a native ſtirring, till we came to another plantation in very good order, where a ſingle man was planting ſome yams. He was at firſt a little ſtartled at our appearance, but on aſking him the way to the volcano, he pointed out a path and returned to his former employment. We ſaw ſome hogs and poultry in the neighbourhood of theſe houſes, which were permitted to roam about unconfined; but perhaps the fences which the natives

tives form round ſome of their plantations, may be intended to exclude the hogs. A little farther on we were met by two natives, who came out of an adjacent garden of bananas, and continued to walk with us. Coming to a place where the path divided, another man appeared in that part which led into the country, and with his uplifted dart prohibited our advancing that way. We told him we were deſirous of going to the volcano, and he preſently pointed out the other path to us, and went before to lead the way. As we advanced, we took notice that he continually counted over our number; and having brought us to a clear part of the hill, from whence a conſiderable ſpace of country could be overlooked, we diſcovered that he had miſled us, and attempted to bring us off our road. We therefore returned the ſame way we came, in ſpite of his ſigns, which he did not think proper to enforce at preſent with any hoſtile geſtures. However, ſeeing us determined to proceed againſt his will, he blew with great force into his hand ſeveral times, and was ſoon anſwered by the ſounding of ſeveral conchs on different parts of the hill. He now called out as loud as he could, and we plainly heard him mention how many there were of us, probably deſiring his countrymen to aſſemble and oppoſe us. In the meanwhile we loſt our road and came into a fine ſecluded dell, ſurrounded by trees of prodigious height and extent, where numbers of pigeons and parroquets fluttered about. We

1774. AUGUST.

1774. AUGUST. paſſed ſome time in ſhooting here, whilſt ſeveral of the natives ſtill continued with us, eſpecially a couple of little boys, to whom we made ſome preſents to gain their good-will. From hence we proceeded into a dark path, which had many various windings, and at once opened upon a clear ſpot, ſurrounded by three or four houſes of the ſame dimenſions as thoſe where old Paw-yangom dwelt. Here about a dozen men, well armed with bows and arrows, clubs and darts, were ſitting on their hams in a row, who inſtantly ſtarted up at ſight of us. We beckoned to them, and made ſigns that we meant no harm, but they ſeemed not to truſt us entirely. Some elderly men among them ſeemed to have pacific intentions, but two or three young fellows frowned, and made ſeveral motions with their arms, which, though not exactly directed towards us, yet might have been conſtrued into a provocation if we had been very iraſcible. We concluded it was beſt to return, and deſired them to ſhew us the road to the ſea. We could not have hit upon a better method of quieting their diſtruſt and apprehenſions at once. Some of them went before us down a narrow path, which was rather ſteep at firſt but became more eaſy afterwards. Having deſcended about a quarter of a mile, they deſired us to ſtop and take ſome repoſe, and ſeveral of their brethren came to us loaded with coco-nuts, bananas, and abundance of ſugar-canes. The ſultrineſs of the weather made theſe refreſhments very acceptable. We

gave

gave the Indians ſeveral preſents in return, and were well pleaſed that it was only from diſtruſt, and not real malevolence, that they had collected together to oppoſe our progreſs into the country. After a walk of half an hour we returned to the beach from whence we had ſet out, and happily ended an excurſion which might, with a little more raſhneſs on our part, have proved fatal not only to the natives, but, in the end, to ourſelves. We were forced to give up all hopes of approaching the volcano; but it is ſurely adviſeable to abandon a purſuit where knowledge cannot be obtained without bloodſhed and injuſtice. 1774. AUGUST.

During our walk, our people had hauled the ſeine with the flood-tide, and obtained a ſmall quantity of fiſh, among which we found a new ſpecies. The pond of freſh water likewiſe furniſhed us with a new ſort of fiſh, and the ſeamen caught a number of mud eels in it. With theſe fiſh, and ſeveral new plants collected on the hill, we returned on board, and paſſed the afternoon in deſcribing and drawing them.

We reſumed our excurſionss into the country the next morning. The trade for yams and for the weapons of the natives was ſtill carried on, but tortoiſe-ſhell was ſo ſcarce in the ſhip that we could make but a ſmall purchaſe of proviſions. The mother of pearl fiſh-hooks of the Friendly Iſlands, which had the barb of tortoiſe-ſhell, were in great requeſt, and our ſeamen could ſometimes obtain a handful Monday 15.

1774. AUGUST. of arrows for one of them; whereas another fiſh-hook, equally good, but with a mother of pearl barb, was not eſteemed by the natives. We rambled about among the woods on the plain, and ſhot ſeveral birds, of which this iſland has a great variety. We alſo met with a number of Eaſt-Indian plants* which we had never obſerved in the more eaſterly iſlands. But the moſt valuable acquiſition, in our opinion, was a pigeon, of the ſort which is common at the Friendly Iſlands. This bird had the ſides of its bill covered with a red ſubſtance, and, upon farther examination, had in its mouth and craw two nutmegs, recently ſwallowed. They were ſtill ſurrounded by a ſcarlet coating, which was their mace, and had a bitter aromatic taſte, but no ſmell. The nutmeg itſelf was conſiderably more oblong than the true ſpice of that name, but had likewiſe a very bitter and aromatic taſte. We ſoon met with a native, to whom we ſhewed the fruit, and deſired him to point out the tree on which it grew, offering him a mother of pearl ſhell for his trouble. He conducted us about half a mile up into the country to a young tree, which, as he affirmed, bore the nutmeg. We gathered its leaves, but ſaw no fruit, which the native ſaid had all been eaten by the pigeons. The name of the fruit, in the language of the country, was

* The *ſterculia balanghas*, *ſterculia fœtida*, *dioſcorea oppoſitifolia*, *ricinus mappa*, *acanthus ilicifolius*, *iſchæmum muticum*, *panicum dimidiatum*, *croton variegatum*, and many others.

guannatàn.

guannatàn. We heard ſome muſkets fired, which had an unuſual report, and made us apprehenſive that ſome diſturbance had happened, eſpecially as we thought we underſtood ſomething to that purpoſe from the mouth of a native who paſſed by us coming from the beach. We therefore haſtened to the ſea-ſide, but ſoon found that every thing had been quiet there. However, ſhewing the leaves of the tree, which we had received as belonging to the nutmeg-tree, all the natives on the beach agreed in giving it a different name from that which our guide had told us, though he endeavoured to cover his deceit by telling his countrymen to name the leaf as he had done. We expreſſed ſtrong marks of indignation at his behaviour, and the other natives likewiſe rebuked him. 1774. AUGUST.

In the afternoon captain Cook, with lieutenants Cooper and Pickerſgill, Mr. Patton, Mr. Hodges, Dr. Sparrman, my father, and myſelf, went upon the flat hill to the eaſtward, and paſſed through the plantation to the ſea-ſhore on the other ſide. The Iſle of Anattom, which the captain was particularly deſirous to ſee, was for the greateſt part involved in haze. We returned therefore leiſurely through other gardens, ſhooting ſeveral birds, till we came to the huts of our friendly Indians. The father of the child which I mentioned page 325, brought me a preſent of bananas, ſugar-canes, and coco-nuts, and thus confirmed us in the good opinion we had formed of his ſenſibility.

Mr.

1774. AUGUST. Mr. Hodges made ſeveral ſketches of views, and particularly drew this little farm, with a group of natives of both ſexes, ſeated under the ſhady branches of the fig-tree. From thence he afterwards compoſed an elegant picture, which is engraved for captain Cook's account of this voyage, and gives a perfect idea of the iſland of Tanna, and its inhabitants. Towards ſun-ſet we returned on board.

Tueſday 16. The next morning we came aſhore again, and immediately walked into the woods on the plain. We ſaw a great number of large and beautiful parroquets, of black, red, and yellow plumage; but they kept on the tops of the higheſt fig-trees, where they were wholly out of the reach of ſmall ſhot, guarded by the thick foliage. The ſize of theſe trees can ſcarcely be imagined. Their roots grow above ground a conſiderable part of their length, and converge together into one enormous ſtem about ten or twelve feet above the ſurface. This ſtem which is frequently no leſs than three yards in diameter, ſeems to conſiſt of ſeveral trees grown together, which form every where ſharp longitudinal angles, projecting above three feet from the main body. Thus it riſes thirty or forty feet, before it divides into branches, which are above a yard in diameter. Theſe run up nearly to the ſame height without dividing, and the ſummit of the tree is at leaſt one hundred and fifty feet high. The place where they were moſt frequent, was a marſh or ſwamp, occaſioned by ſeveral branches of the ſame

ſame pond, from which we ſupplied our ſhip with freſh water. We were not able to determine whether this pond is the remains of a river, coming from the inland mountains, and loſing itſelf in the volcanic ſand and aſhes which cover the plain; or whether it is only the produce of the rains in the ſummer months. It had innumerable quantities of muſketoes which were very troubleſome to us, and was likewiſe the abode of rails and ducks, of which we could never obtain any, though they appeared to be of a new ſpecies. We walked on through the plain, keeping on its weſtern part, and croſſed ſeveral ſpots, which being covered with graſſes, reſembled our meadows, but were much overun with bind-weeds, and ſeparated from each other by wild ſhrubberies which had the effect of hedges. Now and then we met with great ſpots entirely covered with tall reeds (*ſaccharum ſpontaneum*, Linn.) which we could hardly imagine to have grown in ſuch great quantities without cultivation. They ſupply the natives with ſhafts for their arrows, and are made uſe of in baſket-work, fences, &c. Beyond theſe fields we came into a foreſt, conſiſting of trees of the ſame ſort with thoſe which cover the weſtern ſhores of the bay. Here we ſhot a ſpecies of wild dove hitherto unknown to naturaliſts, and ſaw ſome parroquets, which were exceſſively ſhy, and may perhaps be ſcared by the natives, whoſe orchards they infeſt. Advancing ſtill farther we came into a hollow road, which appeared

1774. AUGUST.

1774. AUGUST. peared to have been formed by a current of water, but was perfectly dry at preſent, and ſerved as a path to the natives. Its ſides were fringed in the moſt beautiful manner with ſhrubberies and palms; and in one part a huge venerable fig-tree *(ficus religioſa*, Linn.) of the ſame ſort to which the Cinghaleſe and natives of Malabar pay a particular regard *, ſtruck its roots into both ſides, and formed an aſtoniſhing vaulted arch over the lane, which was at leaſt five yards wide. A prodigious number of birds, of a very diminutive ſize, fluttered about on its uppermoſt branches, and picked off the fruit. We reſted ſome time under its ſhade, whilſt ſeveral natives paſſed by, who did not expreſs the leaſt uneaſineſs at ſight of us, and with perfect unconcern heard our fowling-pieces fired at birds. Towards noon we returned to the ſea ſide, and though the weather was very hot, yet as we walked almoſt continually in the ſhade, we felt no inconvenience. Before we came to the watering-place, we paſſed through a ſhrubbery, where we found a native at work cutting ſticks, on which the climbing ſtalks of the yams *(dioſcorea oppoſitifolia)* are ſupported. Seeing that he cut them very ſlowly with his hatchet, which had only a bit of ſhell in lieu of a blade, we began to help him with an Engliſh hatchet, and in a few minutes cut a much greater heap than he had done the whole day. The

* They make ſacrifices under its ſhade, where ſome of their divinities are ſaid to have been born.

natives

natives who were now frequently paſſing, as the hour of their meals was at hand, ſtood ſtill, and expreſſed the greateſt aſtoniſhment at the extreme utility of this tool, and ſome were very deſirous to poſſeſs it, by offering their bows and arrows for it. We thought this was a favourable opportunity to encourage them to part with their hogs, and told them we would exchange our hatchet for one of theſe animals; but they were deaf to this propoſal, and never ſold us a ſingle hog during our ſtay. Having ſhewn them the wild nutmeg which we had found in the pigeon's craw the day before, one of them produced three others, which were wrapped in their mace, but could not point out the tree on which they grew. They gave theſe nuts ſeveral different names, and told us they grew on a tree called *neeraſh*. On having recourſe to our books, we found that this ſpecies has ſome reſemblance to the wild nutmeg of Rumphius, and ſeems to be exactly the ſame with a ſort which is found in the Philipinas. The pigeon which feeds upon it at Tanna is the ſame which Rumphius deſcribes as the diſſeminator of the true nutmeg at the Spice Iſlands, and we had the honour of preſenting one alive to her majeſty. 1774. AUGUST.

We found a very old decrepit man ſitting on the beach whom we had never ſeen before. Many among the croud told us his name was Yogài, and that he was their *areekee*. He was of a tall ſtature, but very lean and worn out; his face was wrinkled, his head almoſt entirely bald, and what

1774. AUGUST. little hair remained was perfectly grey. There was however an expreſſion of kindneſs in his features, which preſerved the veſtiges of a former manly beauty. Near him ſat another perſon, who might have paſſed for an old man, if he had not been in company with the former. The reſt of the people told us he was the ſon of Yogài, and named Yatta. He was likewiſe a tall man, but well-proportioned, and remarkably well-featured for a native of Tanna. His hair was black, frizzled, and almoſt woolly, but not dreſſed; and he had a very engaging, ſenſible look, which expreſſed great good-nature towards the ſtrangers. The natives acquainted us that he was the *koùi-voſh*, which we ſuppoſe to be a title perhaps equivalent to ſuch expreſſions as "ſucceſſor, heir, prince of the blood," and the like, which are uſed in civilized countries. As their colour was exactly the ſame with that of the common people, for they were both of a very blackiſh or ſooty complexion, we took particular care to examine whether there was any difference between their ornaments and thoſe of the reſt of the natives; but all the diſtinction which we could obſerve, conſiſted in the kind of ſaſh, or cloth, which they wore round their body as a belt. The ſaſhes of the common people were of an uniform cinnamon, or browniſh-yellow colour; but theſe two chiefs wore them painted with black lines, and chequered with compartments of black and red: however, it is not improbable that even this variation is merely accidental,

dental, and by no means conſidered as a mark of royalty by the natives. Upon the whole, no deference was paid to theſe two perſons, if we except the title of chiefs, with which they were diſtinguiſhed. We never obſerved either of them to iſſue any command, and it is very probable that their orders are only obeyed in time of war. At ſuch a period, the people readily give up their judgment to the experience of hoary age, and follow its counſels inſtead of laws. They implicitly truſt their lives and fortunes to the conduct of a man, whoſe ſuperior valour, and conſummate art, they acknowledge with one common voice. We made them ſome trifling preſents, and gave them an invitation to come on board, which they declined. We then embarked in one of the boats, in order to go to dinner. Our people brought off a great quantity of clubwood *(caſuarina)* from the ſhore, having cut down a ſtately tree of this ſort, which grew upon the edge of the flat hill. They began to ſaw it the preceding afternoon; but Paw-yangom came to captain Cook to complain, becauſe this tree is highly valued at Tanna, and ſo very ſcarce, that they are obliged to go to Irromanga, where it grows more plentifully, in order to ſupply themſelves with clubs. Captain Cook immediately ordered the workmen to leave it; but afterwards finding that it was cut ſo far that it could not grow any more, he gave the old man a dog, a quantity of Taheitee cloth, and ſeveral other articles, for which he agreed that we ſhould take the tree, 1774. AUGUST.

1774. AUGUST. and the inhabitants in his neighbourhood ſeemed perfectly ſatisfied. Paw-yangom, no doubt, was a man of ſome weight among the people who dwelt on the flat hill, and it is not unlikely that his age alone had entitled him to ſome deference. The government of the people of Tanna ſeems to be in its infant ſtate, and every family is guided by the advice of the oldeſt men, their patriarchs, who never exerciſe their authority in a ſevere or tyrannical manner.

We returned into the woods again after dinner, but made an unſucceſsful excurſion, having now ſearched the ſame ſpots almoſt every day ſince our arrival on the iſland. The Wedneſd. 17. next morning we renewed our rambles, in hopes of meeting by accident with the nutmeg-tree. We paſſed ſome time in a fine plantation of bananas cloſe to the weſtern corner of the beach, where a number of parrots deſtroyed the fruit; but they were ſo extremely ſhy, that we attempted in vain to come at them. Having taken a long walk into the country, during which we frequently ſeparated from each other to a conſiderable diſtance, as we had now nothing to apprehend from the inhabitants, we came back to the beach. We found the laſt boat ready to put off, and returned to the ſhip, where we found the old chief Yogaï, his ſon Yatta, and a well-made boy, about fourteen years old, named Narrep, who appeared to be nearly related to them. They were all ſeated on the floor of the cabin when we came in, and captain Cook had given them a variety of preſents of all kinds. The old man

man had received them with the indifference natural at his age; but his ſon, and above all the boy Narrep, were extremely well pleaſed with the civilities which had been ſhewn them. We invited them to dinner, and they ate of ſome yams, but would not touch any other food, behaving nearly as Fanòkko, our former viſitor, had done (See p. 288.) As ſoon as we had dined, we embarked with them, and brought them to the beach, where the other natives converſed with them, and ſeemed to be highly pleaſed with the deference which we had paid to their chiefs. The number of natives on the beach now rarely ever amounted to one hundred, including women and children, who commonly ſat down in ſeveral groups under the ſhade of the buſhes. From time to time they brought us a yam or a bunch of bananas, for which they took Taheitee cloth in exchange. The women ſometimes had baſkets full of yamboo apples, *(eugenia,)* which they ſold for trifles, ſuch as ſmall bits of green nephritic ſtone, black beads, and the like, and, as it ſeemed, more to ſhew their good will, than from any value which they ſet upon thoſe articles. The civility of the natives was, upon the whole, very conſpicuous towards us. If they met us in a narrow path, they always ſtepped aſide into the buſhes and graſſes in order to make way for us. If they happened to know our names, they pronounced them with a ſmile, which could be extremely well under-

1774. AUGUST.

ſtood

1774. AUGUST. ſtood as a ſalutation; or, if they had not ſeen us before, they commonly enquired our names in order to know us again. On the beach we had for ſome days left off ſtretching ropes to reſerve a clear ſpot for our waterers and wood-cutters; only a centry was placed on each ſide, beyond whom they never ventured to advance, unleſs they came freſh from the country, and were unacquainted with our regulations. In ſhort, the change which our little ſtay among them had wrought in their opinion of us was already very remarkable, and continued every day to turn more in our favour. Yogaï and Yatta, with Narrep and ſeveral other natives, left the beach very ſoon, and returned through the woods to their own homes, which they pointed at as far diſtant from the bay. As ſoon as they were gone, captain Cook went in his boat with us to the people who loaded ballaſt under the weſtern hill. Here we examined the hot-ſprings which we had diſcovered on the 9th, having taken a thermometer for that purpoſe, which had ſtood at 78° on board the ſhip, but being carried cloſe to the body had riſen to 83°. When the bulb was plunged into the hot-ſpring the mercury roſe to 191° in the ſpace of five minutes. We then took it out, and enlarged the hole by clearing away the ſand and ſtones, through which the water oozed and ran into the ſea. Having replaced the thermometer ſo that it was immerged conſiderably above

the

the bulb, it roſe again to 191°, and continued there upwards of ten minutes longer. We threw ſome ſmall ſhell-fiſh into the ſpring, and they were boiled in two or three minutes. A piece of ſilver, after lying in the water above half an hour, came out perfectly bright and untarniſhed. Salt of tartar had no viſible effect upon it; but ſtill, as we obſerved a kind of aſtringency in its taſte, we filled a bottle with it, and ſhut it up cloſe, in order to make more accurate and complicate experiments with it after our return *. We obſerved a great number of little fiſhes, not above two inches long, ſkipping about the wet rocks like lizards, to which they bore a great reſemblance. Their pectoral fins performed the functions of feet, and their eyes were placed near the ſummit of the head, in order to guard them againſt all their enemies when they are out of the water. Theſe little amphibious animals were indeed ſo cautious and ſo nimble at the ſame time, that it was with great difficulty we caught them. They could leap the length of a yard with great eaſe, and belonged to the genus of *blennies*. The ſame or a ſimilar ſpecies of fiſh had been obſerved on the coaſt of New Holland by captain Cook in the Endeavour †. In one place we found them very active in deſtroying a brood of minute young crickets, which appeared to have been waſhed out of a crevice in the rock. 1774. AUGUST.

* This bottle, full of the ſame water, is ſtill in my father's poſſeſſion.

† See Hawkeſworth, vol. III. p. 529.

Captain

1774. AUGUST. Thurſday 18. Captain Cook ſet out again with us the next morning, to examine the hot ſprings at low water, the experiments of the preceding day being made during flood-tide, about half paſt four o'clock. We immerſed the thermometer, which in the open air had ſtood at 78°, and the quick-ſilver roſe to 187°, after lying one minute and a half in the hot water. This difference, from the former heat of 191°, was rather ſurpriſing, eſpecially as the ſprings iſſued ſo near the level of the ſea, that ſome of them were covered at high water, might therefore be expected to be cooled by the mixture. We concluded that ſome other cauſe beſides the tides influenced the relative heat of theſe ſprings, and we were confirmed in this ſuppoſition by examining another ſpring which came out upon the great beach to the ſouth, at its weſtermoſt corner. Here, at the foot of a perpendicular rock, forming part of the mountain to the weſt, on which the ſolfataras were ſituated, the hot water bubbles up out of the black ſand, and runs into the ſea, which likewiſe covers it at the flood-tide. In the ſpace of a minute the thermometer, after being placed in this new ſpring, roſe to 202½°, and remained at this degree ſeveral minutes. It ſhould ſeem that theſe ſprings are heated by the volcano, and run under ground till they find an iſſue. The fire of that mountain in all probability is not always equally violent, and gradually cools in the intervals between its eruptions. Different parts of it may likewiſe have

have various degrees of heat, and the different ſprings, by paſſing over a longer or ſhorter ſpace, muſt loſe more or leſs of their original heat. The ſolfataras on the hill directly above theſe ſprings, are in my opinion connected with them; and the ſteam which riſes from thence, through ſubterraneous crevices, may be part of the ſame water, aſcending before it can be condenſed into a continued fluid, by the coolneſs of the ground over which it is carried. The volcano had been quiet for two days paſt, and offered no new phænomena, from whence any of theſe circumſtances might have been better explained. 1774. AUGUST.

We paſſed the day before and after noon, in the plain behind the watering-place, and collected the flowers of an unknown ſort of tree, which we could obtain no other way, than by ſhooting at them. In the evening the ſeine was hauled, and we caught about two hundred weight of fiſh, which afforded another, though rather ſcanty freſh meal to the whole ſhip's company. Dr. Sparrman went up the flat hill with me, where we paſſed about half an hour very agreeably with our friends the natives, who made us a preſent of fruit at parting. We amuſed them as uſual by ſinging to them, and they became ſo familiar at laſt as to point out ſome girls to us, whom from an exceſs of hoſpitality not uncommon with uncivilized nations, they offered to their friends with geſtures not in the leaſt equivocal. The women, at the firſt hint of the civility which the

1774. AUGUST. men intended to confer upon us, ran off to a great diſtance ſeemingly much frightened, and ſhocked at their indelicacy. Our Indians, and particularly the young people, were very deſirous that we ſhould purſue the girls, whether only to frighten them or not, we could not aſcertain. However, they ſeemed to be very well pleaſed, that we did not take the hint; and we parted from them, after diſtributing ſeveral preſents, and eſpecially ſome mother of pearl hooks with tortoiſe-ſhell barbs.

Friday 19. The next morning we were ready for ſailing, having taken in a ſufficient quantity of ballaſt, wood, and freſh-water; only the wind, which blew right into the harbour, prevented our putting to ſea. We went on ſhore after breakfaſt, with the captain, and a party of people; and he continued to trade with the natives, whilſt we went into the country. We ſoon ſeparated, and each of us went by himſelf to a different part. I paſſed by a number of natives in their way to the beach; but they all ſtepped out of the path to make room for me, though I was without any companion, and not one of them attempted with a look or geſture to offend me. I ſtrolled alone ſeveral miles in the back of the flat hill, or in the valley along its ſouth-ſide, to a part where I had never been before. The path which I followed was hid in the thickeſt groves, from whence I could only now and then diſcern the extenſive plantations which covered the whole ſlope of the hill. Here

I fre-

I frequently ſaw the natives employed in cutting down trees, or pruning them, or digging up the ground with a branch of a tree, inſtead of a ſpade, or planting yams, and other roots; and in one place, I heard a man ſinging at his work, nearly the ſame tune which they uſed to ſing to us on the hill. The proſpect which I beheld was ſo pleaſing, that it did not fall much ſhort of the beautiful ſcenes of Taheitee. It had this advantage beſides, that all the country about me to a great diſtance, conſiſted of gentle elevations, and ſpacious vallies, all which were capable of culture; whereas at Taheitee the mountains roſe immediately craggy, wild, and majeſtic from the plain, which has no where the breadth of two miles. The plantations at Tanna conſiſt, for the greateſt part of yams, bananas, eddoes, and ſugar-canes, all which being very low *, permit the eye to take in a great extent of country. Single tufted trees riſe in different places, and amuſe the beholder with a variety of romantic forms. The whole ſummit of the level hill which bounds a part of the horizon, appears ſhaggy with little groves, where a number of lofty palms riſe over the reſt of the trees. 1774. AUGUST.

Thoſe who are capable of being delighted with the beauties of nature, which deck the globe for the gratification of man, may conceive the pleaſure which is derived from

* The talleſt banana-tree does not exceed ten feet, and in general they are about ſix feet high.

1774. AUGUST. every little object, trifling in itſelf, but important in the moment when the heart is expanded, and when a kind of blifsful trance opens a higher and purer ſphere of enjoyment. Then we behold with rapture the dark colour of lands freſh prepared for culture, the uniform verdure of meadows, the various tints upon the foliage of different trees, and the infinite varieties in the abundance, form, and ſize of the leaves. Here theſe varieties appeared in all their perfection, and the different expoſure of the trees to the ſun added to the magnificence of the view. Some reflected a thouſand dancing beams, whilſt others formed a broad maſs of ſhadow, in contraſt with the ſurrounding world of light. The numerous ſmokes which aſcended from every grove on the hill, revived the pleaſing impreſſions of domeſtic life; nay my thoughts naturally turned upon friendſhip and national felicity, when I beheld large fields of plantanes all round me, which, loaded with golden cluſters of fruit, ſeemed to be juſtly choſen the emblems of peace and affluence. The cheerful voice of the labouring huſbandman reſounded very opportunely to complete this idea. The landſcape to the weſtward was not leſs admirable than that of which I have juſt now ſpoken. The rich plain was bounded on that ſide by a vaſt number of fertile hills, covered with foreſts, interſperſed with plantations, and beyond them roſe a ridge of high mountains, not inferior to thoſe of the Society Iſlands, though apparently

ly of a much eaſier ſlope. The ſolitary ſpot from whence I beheld this rural ſcene was likewiſe favoured by nature. It was a delightful cluſter of trees, which climbers and bindweeds decked with odoriferous bloſſoms. The richneſs of the ſoil was here extremely remarkable; for though I beheld many palms which the winds had thrown down *, yet moſt of them bent their ſummits upwards from the ground, and ſent forth new ſhoots with ſurpriſing luxuriance. Their branches were the reſort of various birds, adorned with the brighteſt colours, which now and then ſtruck the ear with an unexpected ſong not deſtitute of harmony. The ſerenity of the air, and the coolneſs of the breeze, contributed to make my ſituation ſtill more agreeable. The mind at reſt, and lulled by this train of pleaſing ideas, indulged a few fallacious reflections, which encreaſed its happineſs at that inſtant by repreſenting mankind in a favourable light. We had now paſſed a fortnight amidſt a people who received us with the ſtrongeſt ſymptoms of diſtruſt, and who prepared to repel every hoſtile act with vigour. Our cool deliberate conduct, our moderation, and the conſtant uniformity in all our proceedings, had conquered their jealous fears. They, who in all probability had never dealt with ſuch a ſet of inoffenſive, peaceable, and 1774. AUGUST.

* The roots of the coco-palm are naturally extremely ſhort, and conſiſt of innumerable fibres; but at Tanna the ſoil, though rich and fertile, is ſo extremely looſe, that it does not require a great ſtorm to overturn the trees which grow in it.

yet

1774. AUGUST. yet not deſpicable men; they who had been uſed to ſee in every ſtranger a baſe and treacherous enemy, now learnt from us to think more nobly of their fellow-creatures. Prudence, which accompanied the civilized voyagers, had no ſooner faſcinated the inſtinct of the ſavages, watchful for their ſafety, than another, no leſs powerful, awoke in their breaſt, and taught them to reliſh the ſweets of ſociety. They ſhared the abundant produce of their ſoil with their new acquaintance, being no longer apprehenſive that they would take it by force. They permitted us to viſit them in their ſhady receſſes, and we ſat down in their domeſtic circles with that harmony which befits the members of one great family. In a few days they began to feel a pleaſure in our converſation, and a new diſintereſted ſentiment, of more than earthly mould, even friendſhip, filled their heart. This retroſpect was honourable to human nature, as it made us the benefactors of a numerous race. I fell from hence into a reverie on the pre-eminence of our civilized ſociety, from which I was rouſed by the ſound of approaching ſteps. I turned about and ſaw Dr. Sparrman, to whom I pointed out the proſpect and communicated my ideas. We agreed in our ſentiments, and ſet out on our return, as the hour of noon was approaching. The firſt native whom we met ran out of the way and hid himſelf in a buſh. The next was a woman at the entrance of a plantation, to whom we appeared ſo unexpectedly, that ſhe had no time to eſcape.

She

She offered us a baſket full of yamboos, with a trembling hand, and with all the expreſſions of fear ſtrongly marked in her countenance. We were ſurpriſed at this behaviour, and giving her ſome ſmall trifles proceeded in our way. A number of men ſtood behind the buſhes in and about the plantation, and made ſigns to us to walk on by waving their hands towards the beach. At laſt, when we ſtepped out of the wood, we beheld two natives ſeated on the graſs, holding one of their brethren dead in their arms. They pointed to a wound in his ſide, which had been made by a muſket-ball, and with a moſt affecting look they told us "he is killed *." We looked haſtily towards the ſtation of our people, and ſeeing them deſerted by the natives, hurried to join them, and learn the particulars of this ſhocking event. A ſentinel had been poſted as uſual to keep the natives at a diſtance from our party, but the ſailors took the liberty of walking and trading freely among them. A native, who in all likelihood had never been on the beach before, came through the croud and began to walk acroſs the ſpace which our people occupied. The ſentry puſhed him back among the reſt of his brethren, who were already accuſtomed to this injurious treatment, and acquieſced in it. The new-comer, however, refuſed to be controuled on his own iſland by a ſtranger; he prepared once more to croſs the area, perhaps with no other motive at preſent than that 1774. AUGUST

* In their language they expreſs this more ſtrikingly by one word, *markom*.

of

1774. AUGUST. of aſſerting his liberty of walking where he pleaſed. The ſentry drove him back once more, with a rude thruſt ſufficient to rouſe a man much leſs iraſcible than a ſavage. He, to vindicate his right, laid an arrow on his bow, which he aimed at the aggreſſor; but the ſoldier inſtantly levelled his muſket and ſhot him dead. Captain Cook landed in the ſame moment; he ſaw the native fall, and many of his countrymen running off to hide themſelves from the cruel and treacherous people who had polluted their iſland. He commanded the ſoldier to be loaded with irons, and ſent him on board the ſhip. He next endeavoured to appeaſe the natives, and the natural excellence of the human heart is ſuch, that ſeveral, eſpecially thoſe who came from the flat eaſtern hill, were perſuaded to ſtay, and once more to truſt thoſe who had ſo grievouſly violated the laws of hoſpitality. Dr. Sparrman and myſelf were ſtruck with the moderation of the people, who had ſuffered us to paſs by them unmoleſted, when they might eaſily have taken a ſevere revenge for the murder of their countryman. We went on board with captain Cook, greatly apprehenſive for the ſafety of my father, who ſtill remained in the woods, accompanied by a ſingle ſailor. We had, however, the ſatisfaction to ſee him ſafe about a quarter of an hour after, among the party of marines who were left on the beach to protect ſome of our water-caſks. A boat was immediately ſent off, which brought him on board. He had met with the ſame

good

1774. AUGUST.

good treatment from the natives as ourſelves; they had learnt to know our diſpoſition, and ſeemed to be too good tempered to confound the innocent with the guilty. Thus one dark and deteſtable action effaced all the hopes with which I had flattered myſelf. The natives, inſtead of looking upon us in a more favourable light than upon other ſtrangers, had reaſon to deteſt us much more, as we came to deſtroy under the ſpecious maſk of friendſhip; and ſome amongſt us lamented that inſtead of making amends at this place for the many raſh acts which we had perpetrated at almoſt every iſland in our courſe, we had wantonly made it the ſcene of the greateſt cruelty. Captain Cook reſolved to puniſh the marine with the utmoſt rigour for having tranſgreſſed his poſitive orders, according to which the choleric emotions of the ſavage were to be repreſſed with gentleneſs, and prudently ſuffered to cool. But the officer who commanded on ſhore, declared that he had not delivered theſe orders to the ſentry, but given him others which imported, that the leaſt threat was to be puniſhed with immediate death. The ſoldier was therefore immediately cleared, and the officer's right to diſpoſe of the lives of the natives remained uncontroverted.

We came on ſhore again after dinner, where our people hauled the ſeine, and caught a few fiſh. The natives on the beach were very few in number, and chiefly without arms; the murder of their countryman ſeemed to be for-

1774. AUGUST. gotten, or at leaſt they ſeemed to have forgiven it in their hearts. My father, with Dr. Sparrman and myſelf, walked about on the plain, and ſhot ſome birds. We only met a ſingle native, who at ſight of us immediately ſtruck into a different path, and walked very ſwiftly to eſcape us. We called to him, and making all the friendly ſigns which we could invent, at laſt prevailed on him to turn back. He approached us with diſtruſt and apprehenſion marked in every geſture; however, by making him ſome preſents, his fears were removed, mutual confidence took place, and we parted very good friends. It was late in the evening when we left the ſhore with all our people.

Saturday 20. Early in the morning ſeveral canoes of the natives got under ſail, and went out of the harbour. Their form reſembled that of the canoes at the Friendly Iſlands, but with this difference, that the workmanſhip was very inferior at Tanna. They have out-riggers to all their canoes, and ſome may contain twenty people. Their ſails were low triangular mats, of which the broadeſt part is uppermoſt, and the ſharp angle below. A long piece of timber, hollowed out in the middle, forms the bottom of the canoe, and upon this one or two planks are fixed, forming the two ſides, by means of ropes of the coco-nut fibres. Theſe ropes are drawn through the round holes in ſeveral knobs on the inſide of the planks, by which means the latter are not pierced with a ſingle hole. Their oars are ill-ſhaped,

and

and very clumſily made. It ſeems the fabrick of a boat is ſo tedious an enterprize to people who are in a continual ſtate of warfare, that they cannot ſpend much time in poliſhing the timbers, and giving them that perfection and elegance, which is conſpicuous in the manufactures of the Friendly Iſlands. 1774. AUGUST.

The wind being favourable to our departure at preſent, we weighed the anchor, and ſet ſail, after a ſtay of ſixteen days. The iſland of Tanna is ſituated in 19° 30′ S. lat. and 169° 38′ E. long. and I believe does not exceed twenty-four leagues in circuit. A clayey ſort of ſtone, mixed with pieces of chalk-ſtones, forms moſt of the rocks which we examined. It is commonly of a browniſh or yellowiſh colour, and lies in ſtrata nearly horizontal, about ſix inches thick. In a few places we obſerved a ſoft black ſtone, compoſed of the aſhes and ſherls thrown up by the volcano, mixed with clay, or with a ſort of tripoly, which is called rotten-ſtone by ſome miners. This ſubſtance ſometimes forms alternate ſtrata with the black ſtone. The ſame volcanic ſand, mixed with vegetable mold, forms the rich ſoil of this iſland, on which, as I have already mentioned, all vegetables thrive with uncommon luxuriance. The volcano which burns on the iſland, doubtleſs works a great change in its mineral productions, and might perhaps have afforded ſome new obſervations, if the jealouſy of the natives had not continually prevented our examining it. We

1774. AUGUST. found native ſulphur in the white earth which covers the ſolfataras, from whence the aqueous ſtreams ariſe. The taſte of this earth was ſtrongly aluminous, and it may perhaps be impregnated with particles of that ſalt. We likewiſe met with a red bolus near theſe places, and obſerved a white ſelenitic ſtone among the natives, which they wear as an ornament in the cartilage between the noſtrils. We found ſome ſpecimens of ſtrong lavas; but as we could not come near the volcano, we never met with them in any quantity. The hot ſprings have a kind of aſtringency in the taſte, which gives us ſome reaſon to ſuſpect that they contain mineral particles; but we had no opportunity to make experiments on board with the water which we brought from thence. The only remark of any conſequence, is a confirmation of a former well-known fact with regard to volcanos, viz. that theſe burning mountains are not always the higheſt in the whole ridge, as in Peru and Sicily, but that they ſometimes break out in a ſecondary ridge, and are even of an inconſiderable height. As there are inſtances in the Açores, and in the Archipelago, that volcanic eruptions have forced their way through the ſea from the unfathomable bottom, this circumſtance would be of leſs conſequence, if it had not diſagreed with the opinion of the great naturaliſt, M. de Buffon. He aſſerts, that the higheſt mountains alone are the ſeat of volcanic fires, being deſirous to remove theſe fires as far from the centre of the earth as poſſible.

poſſible. Another obſervation which we made ſeems to prove, that the eruptions commonly ſucceeded after ſhowers of rain; but ſo ſhort a ſtay as ours is inſufficient to give this remark its neceſſary weight, though it coincides with the conjectures which have hitherto been made concerning the cauſes of ſubterraneous fires. The vegetable productions of Tanna are very rich and various. The foreſts are filled with plants, of which a great number were new to us, and ſome were ſpecies hitherto known only in the Eaſt Indian iſlands. The cultivated grounds likewiſe contain a great variety of plants which are unknown in the Society and Friendly Iſlands, and no leſs than forty different ſpecies are cultivated. Among the ſpontaneous plants, we ought particularly to repeat the mention of the nutmeg, in defence of Quiros's veracity, who aſſerts that he found it in Tierra del Eſpiritù Santo, which doubtleſs belongs to this group of iſlands. Whether oranges are cultivated, or grow wild, is uncertain, as we never met with a ſingle tree that bore them, but were obliged to content ourſelves with the fruit, which the women ſometimes ſold to us. 1774. AUGUST.

The animal creation in Tanna is likewiſe numerous and beautiful. Shells indeed are ſcarce upon the coaſt, and the natives go in queſt of them to other iſlands, ſetting ſome value alſo upon large mother of pearl ſhells. Fiſh, on the contrary, are numerous, and in great variety: with the ſeine and hook we caught mullet *(mullus)*, Braſilian pike, garfiſh, dolphins,

1774. AUGUST. dolphins, cavallas, parrot-fiſh, ſting-rays, toothleſs-rays, angel-fiſh, ſharks, and ſucking-fiſh, as well as ſeveral ſpecies of mackrel and mullet *(mugil)*. The woods contained a variety of birds, eſpecially ſeveral ſorts of pigeons, parroquets, and fly-catchers. Among the latter we found a ſpecies which is likewiſe to be met with in New Zeeland. The Ceylaneſe owl, a ſpecies of creeper, a ſort of duck, and a purple water-hen, were likewiſe ſeen; but all in general were remarkably ſhy, which ſeems to indicate their being purſued by the natives. The only tame fowls are the common cock and hen; and the only domeſtic quadrupeds are hogs. Rats and bats, both which I have already mentioned, form the only two wild ſpecies of quadrupeds.

Tanna, thus well ſupplied by nature, and bleſſed with the mild influence of a tropical climate, contains a race of men in a much inferior ſtate of civilization, than the natives of the Friendly and Society Iſlands, who live nearly in the ſame parallel, but to the eaſtward. I am of opinion, we rate the population of Tanna very high, when we ſuppoſe it to amount to twenty thouſand perſons. The plantations ſeem to bear a ſmall proportion to the wild foreſts, wherever we walked about in the iſland, only excepting the flat hill along the eaſtern ſhore of the bay, which is indeed the richeſt ſpot I ever beheld in the South Seas. The excellence of the ſoil, inſtead of being an advantage to cultivation in its infant ſtate, is rather of diſſervice; as all kinds

kinds of wild trees, buſhes and weeds, are with the greateſt difficulty rooted out, and propagate with luxuriance, either from ſeeds, or from the roots. Cultivated vegetables, being of a more weakly and delicate nature, are eaſily oppreſſed and ſuffocated by the indigenous wild tribes, till repeated labours ſucceed at laſt to bring them to a flouriſhing ſtate. Theſe two circumſtances together ſtrongly indicate, that the nation which inhabits Tanna is not very numerous, in proportion to the extent of that iſland. The people ſeem to live diſperſed in ſmall villages, conſiſting of a few families; and their conſtant cuſtom of going armed is a certain ſign that they formerly had, and probably ſtill have, wars with neighbouring iſlanders, or quarrels amongſt themſelves. If I might venture a conjecture, founded upon the languages which we heard ſpoken in the iſland, I ſhould ſuppoſe that ſeveral tribes of different nations have peopled the iſland of Tanna, and may have diſputed the poſſeſſion of the ground with each other. Beſides the common language of the iſland, and beſides a dialect of that of the Friendly Iſlands, we collected ſome words of a third language, chiefly current among the inhabitants of its weſtern hills; and we particularly obtained the numerals of all the three tongues, which are indeed totally diſtinct. In the common language of Tanna, we met with two or three words, which have a clear affinity with the language of Mallicollo, and about the ſame number correſpond with

1774. AUGUST.

ſome

1774. AUGUST. ſome words of the Malay; but in general they are wholly unlike each other, and related to no other tongue that I know of. There is a ſtrong kind of aſpiration, and a guttural ſound, in many words at Tanna, which are, however, very ſonorous and full of vowels, and therefore eaſily pronounced.

The ſmall ſize of the iſlands in the South Sea, and the want of wild quadrupeds on them, have totally prevented their firſt ſettlers from living by the chace, the uſual occupation of ſavages. This confined ſpace likewiſe did not allow them to breed numerous herds of domeſtic animals, and obliged them to have recourſe to the cultivation of the ſoil for their immediate ſubſiſtence, eſpecially when they could not ſupport themſelves by fiſhing. It has been the ſalutary conſequence of this early application to rural œconomy, to facilitate civilization. All the nations of tropical iſlands in the South Sea have fixed habitations, and it is only the degree of elegance and convenience which diſtinguiſhes their different progreſs in culture. The people of Tanna do not appear, according to this ſtandard, to be far advanced; their houſes are mere ſheds, which barely cover them from the inclemency of the weather. Dreſs, another diſtinguiſhing character of civilization, is as yet entirely unknown to them; and in the place of cleanlineſs, which every where renders mankind agreeable to each other, we obſerved divers ſorts of paint and greaſe. They ſeem however

ever to be in great forwardneſs towards receiving a greater poliſh. Their food is much varied by the arts of cookery which the women put in practice; they roaſt or broil the yams and bananas; they ſtew the green leaves of a kind of fig, and of the okra *(hibiſcus eſculentus)*, they bake puddings made of a paſte of bananas and eddoes, containing a mixture of coco-nut kernel and leaves, and they likewiſe eat ſeveral ſorts of ripe fruits, without any preparation. Their poultry and hogs doubtleſs ſupply them at times with animal food; and from time to time they catch fiſh and birds, which very probably are reckoned dainties. If the taſte for a variety of food becomes more general and violent, agriculture, arts, and manufactures will be carried on with greater ſpirit, as far as they are ſubſervient to the pleaſure of the palate, and one refinement ſtill muſt give birth to another. The heavieſt taſk becomes light and amuſing, as ſoon as it is undertaken from our own inclination, and for the gratification of our ſenſes. The domeſtic life of the people of Tanna is not wholly deſtitute of amuſements; they are at preſent indeed of a more ſerious turn than the civilized nations of the Friendly and Society Iſlands, and the more ſavage inhabitants of Mallicollo: but, on the other hand, their muſic is in greater perfection than any in the South Sea; and it cannot be diſputed that a predilection for harmonious ſounds implies great ſenſibility, and muſt prepare the way for civilization. Agreeably to their pre- 1774. AUGUST.

1774. AUGUST. ſent ſituation, their government is in a very imperfect ſtate. Every village or family appears to be independent, and only to join with the reſt when their common intereſt is abſolutely the ſame: for example, when their country is threatened by the invaſion of ſtrangers. The aged or the ſtrong appear to have the greateſt influence among the multitude, and a diverſity of ranks ſeems to be unknown. The ſeparate intereſt of many ſmall ſocieties muſt frequently claſh, and of courſe involve them in feuds, which nouriſh, in ſome meaſure, the principles of diſtruſt and revenge. This difficulty can only be remedied in proceſs of time by the encreaſe of population, which will oblige them to unite and to eſtabliſh a government on a more permanent baſis. The manufacture of arms, upon which they now ſpend more time than on any other, will then employ their more numerous leiſure hours, and the ſame elegance which is at preſent laviſhed on the arms at the Friendly Iſlands, may likewiſe at Tanna become the work of peace and mutual ſafety. How far their navigations to neighbourings iſlands may haſten that period is uncertain; but commerce is doubtleſs of infinite ſervice to the encreaſe of civilization.

We know nothing of their religion, except the ſolemn ſong which we heard on the eaſtern point of the bay almoſt every morning, from whence we ſuſpect that they have a place of worſhip in the woods thereabouts. Their ſolicitude to prevent our acceſs to that part

ſeems

ſeems to ſtrengthen this conjecture; but in their general behaviour we did not take notice of the leaſt religious act, nor of any thing that could be conſtrued into ſuperſtition. The only circumſtance which has ſome appearance of owing its origin to a religious notion, is their taking up the preſents which we gave them, in a leaf; but as this was not a general cuſtom, and almoſt entirely neglected as ſoon as we became better acquainted, I cannot lay any ſtreſs upon it. Civilization enlarges and unravels the idea of a Deity, which is not unknown to the ſavage, though his more immediate wants prevent his giving attention to it. When the exigencies of nature are ſupplied with leſs trouble, and in a ſhorter time, the intellectual part expands and mounts to heaven to find ſome occupation. It cannot be expected that during the little ſtay which we made at Tanna, and in the confined ſituation to which the diſtruſt of the natives reduced us at firſt, we ſhould have been able to collect more certain and inſtructive obſervations, or an exact detail of the whole extent of knowledge among the natives. Many articles, and eſpecially all the cuſtoms of domeſtic life, remain entirely unknown to us. All nations practiſe certain ceremonies on ſolemn occaſions, ſuch as marriages, births, or deaths; and however ſimple they may be at Tanna, they contribute to delineate the character of the people, of which our knowledge is but too imperfect. The viſits which we made to them on the hill, gave us great room to believe 1774. AUGUST.

1774. AUGUST. them hoſpitable, and open to ſentiments of univerſal benevolence, as ſoon as the apprehenſions for their ſafety were pacified. We found them unjuſt to their women, but not ſo cruel and unnatural as the New Zeelanders; on the contrary, it is rather to be ſuppoſed that they make gradual advances towards that kind diſpoſition which manifeſts itſelf in the good treatment of the ſex at the Friendly and Society Iſlands. Upon other occaſions we had reaſon to believe them brave and intrepid, and their conduct to us in the woods, after the fatal murder of their countryman, was certainly generous. Their converſation ſometimes afforded us an opportunity of admiring their ſagacity. Their behaviour to us at our firſt arrival, and the cuſtom of going conſtantly armed, are evident marks of diſtruſt; and the cuſtom of eating human fleſh, which their ſigns plainly indicated, is a proof that their paſſions are violent. The intercourſe with Europeans might perhaps have proved a benefit to them, and laid the ground-work for a future progreſs in civilization, if their laſt raſh action had not effaced thoſe favourable impreſſions which the natives had already conceived of them. European goods were in no repute; but as we left a conſiderable number of nails and ſome hatchets among them, the durability of the metal will ſoon teach them to hold it in high eſteem, and it is not improbable that the next ſhip which may happen to viſit them, will find them fond of iron-ware, and eager to barter proviſions for it.

Having

Having once more put to ſea, we ran to the eaſtward, in order to examine the iſland of Irronan. Our ſtay at Tanna had ſupplied us only with three or four meals of freſh fiſh, and a ſmall quantity of yams, which we treaſured up to ſerve upon emergencies. Some of our crew were at this time afflicted with fevers, and received ſmall portions of thoſe roots, as ſubſtitutes to the unwholeſome biſcuit and pickled beef. 1774. AUGUST.

In the evening we came near the iſland of Irronan, which was found to lie about twelve leagues to the eaſt of Tanna, and conſiſted of a high table-hill. We paſſed the night in tacking, and the next morning aſcertained the ſituation of Anattom in 20° 3′ ſouth, and 170° 5′ eaſt. Its ſize was inferior to that of Tanna, though we kept at ſuch a diſtance that we could not determine it with preciſion; but the height of its mountains was to all appearance nearly the ſame. Obſerving no other iſlands to the ſouthward at preſent, we ſhaped our courſe along the ſouth-weſt ſhore of Tanna, which we ſaw to great advantage on that ſide, all the hills ſloping very gently from their ſummits and inland ridges. As the wind was very freſh and wholly in our favour, we were on the lee-ſide of Irromanga the next morning. Captain Cook was reſolved to ſpend ſome time in examining the weſtern coaſts of all this group of iſlands, and particularly not to leave unexplored that to the north of Mallicollo, which had been ſeen by M. de Bougainville. This group being Sunday 21. Monday 22.

1774. AUGUST. being the weſternmoſt hitherto known in the South Pacific Ocean, captain Cook named the NEW HEBRIDES *, having acquired the right of giving this new collective name by diſcovering ten large iſlands, beſides a number of ſmaller ones, all which had never been ſeen before. The day was not yet ſpent when we had already paſſed the ſouthern ſhores of Sandwich Iſland. Its aſpect on that ſide was very beautiful, and its foreſts ſeemed more rich and copious than we had formerly obſerved them to the northward. Four ſmall iſlands, of inconſiderable height but finely wooded with the moſt tufted trees, formed a harbour, which had the appearance of being very convenient and ſafe.

Tueſday 23. Running on all night with great ſpeed, we came in ſight of the Iſles of Apee, Pa-oom, and Ambrrym the next morning, and ſtood along the ſouth-weſt ſide of Mallicollo. The peak of Pa-oom ſeemed at this diſtance in one direction, to be entirely ſeparate from the land before it, but it may nevertheleſs be connected with it by low land. Mallicollo ſurpriſed us again with the beauty and ſhagginess of its foreſts, from whence vaſt numbers of ſmokes aſcended, ſufficient to prove, that a great part of theſe foreſts was inhabited. A ſpacious bay ſoon opened to our view, with a fine beach; and the land about it, was to all appearance, extremely populous and fertile. Two ſmall iſlands were ſituated in this bay, and we feaſted our eyes

* The Hebrides are the weſtermoſt iſlands of Great Britain.

on

on the richneſs and luxuriance of the proſpect, where the brighteſt tints of verdure were profuſely ſpread. 1774. AUGUST.

A great number of natives were obſerved on the ſhore, and two canoes put off about noon, paddling towards us, but ſoon giving over the chace, as we ſailed on too faſt for them. Beyond the point which included the bay to the north-weſt, the country loſt ſomething of its exuberant fertility, and was interſperſed with barren ſpots, though we ſaw ſmokes and habitations on the higheſt ridges: and at night the mountains were illuminated in different places, by ſeveral lines of fires, ſome of which appeared to extend at leaſt half a mile in length. We paſſed the north point of Mallicollo during night, and were a good way advanced in Bougainville's paſſage at day-break on the 24th. Mallicollo lies nearly N. N. W. and S. S. E. and the north point is in 15° 50′ S. and 167° 23′ E. The land which forms the north ſide of the paſſage, appeared very extenſive, high and mountainous, and a number of ſmall iſlands lay along its ſouthern coaſt, which were of a very moderate height, and covered with the fineſt foreſts. The continual fair weather which attended this part of our navigation, made all theſe beautiful landſcapes appear to the greateſt advantage; and the pleaſure of contemplating a great variety of rich ſceneries, made us ſome amends for the wretchedneſs of our diet, which at preſent conſiſted of no other than the ſhip's proviſions. Wedneſd. 24.

The

1774. AUGUST. The land which we now ſaw to the northward, ſeems to be the ſame, which that great navigator, captain Quiros, called Tierra Auſtral del Eſpiritu Santo, and which at that time, he ſuppoſed to make part of a continent. It is not improbable, that the bay of St. Philip and St. Jago, where he anchored, is ſituated within the ſmall iſlands, which lie before that great land. We really ſaw the appearance of a bay within them, but did not ſtop to examine it, only giving the ſmall iſlands the name of Bartholemew Iſles, from the day on which we ſaw them.

We were now entertained once more with the ſight of the iſland of Lepers, and Aurora which remained at a great diſtance to the eaſt of us. Our courſe continued to the north along the eaſtern ſhore of Tierra del Eſpiritu Santo, where we ſtill diſcovered new iſlands, which were not ſeen by M. de Bougainville. Theſe ſmall iſlands, as well as the main land, had all a very fertile aſpect, being covered with fine foreſts, from whence numerous ſmokes aſcended, which were ſo many ſigns of a great population. Having paſſed the night, ſtanding off and on, we came abreaſt of the northernmoſt iſlands the next morning, and took notice that even the large land extended no further northward. Moſt of the ſmall iſlands were very long, narrow, and bluff at one end, but formed a low flat point, running out to the northward. Their bluff part was commonly white like a chalk-cliff, and it was remarkable that we did not obſerve any coco-

Thurſday 25.

nut

nut trees among their foreſts, which in ſome places conſiſted chiefly of club-wood. As we paſſed by their northern extremity, they formed a very beautiful proſpect, gradually opening from each other, and clear of the main land. Steering to the weſtward, we paſſed a projecting point on Tierra del Eſpiritù Santo, and opened a moſt ſpacious bay of which the entrance could be no leſs than five leagues wide. The depth of the bay was proportioned to the width. The ſhores on each ſide ſeemed to run parallel for the ſpace of ſeven leagues, at the end of which the bay terminates. A fine beach was ſeen all along the bottom of it, and the land from thence, for many leagues within the country, conſiſted of hills of a very moderate height, and extenſive populous vallies, which had the appearance of fertility and plenty. We ſtood over to its weſtern ſhore where we ſaw many natives, eſpecially towards the evening; and likewiſe took notice of a canoe ſimilar to thoſe which we had obſerved at Mallicollo; it came off, but the people in it kept it at a diſtance from the ſhip, and would not come near, though we gave them ever ſo many invitations. The hill which formed the weſtern ſhore was rather ſteep, but however well inhabited, and covered with woods. A low flat point ran out from it a mile or two into the bay, and formed a kind of cove where we wiſhed to come to an anchor, as we were becalmed, and the night was coming on. We ſounded ſeveral times, but found no bottom with one 1774. AUGUST.

1774. AUGUST. hundred and thirty, and one hundred and forty fathom, about a mile from the ſhore. It was ſoon perfectly dark, and as we only diſcerned the land by the lights which glimmered through the woods in different places, our ſituation was beginning to be alarming, and we thought of hoiſting out our boats to tow us off, when a faint breeze aſſiſted us to get into the middle of the bay. Here we Friday 26. waited for day-light, and then continued to ſtand in to the ſouthward with light airs, which vaniſhed towards noon. Two boats were ſent after dinner to the beach which runs along the bottom of the bay, in order to reconnoitre whether there was any port, or a river, which we could not diſcern from on board, being ſtill above a league and a half diſtant. In the mean while three canoes put off from the ſhore, with triangular ſails, and approached the ſhip very faſt. In each of them we obſerved four or five men, to whom we called, as ſoon as we thought them within hearing. They were naked, and of the ſame colour as the Mallicolleſe; but taller, and more ſtoutly formed; their hair ſeemed to be woolly, and their beards frizzled. Some of them had a bunch of feathers on the top of the head, and others wore a white ſhell tied on the fore-head. On their arms they had bracelets of ſhell-work, exactly reſembling thoſe which we had obſerved at Mallicollo, and round their middle they wore a narrow belt, from whence a long ſlip of matted-work, five inches broad, deſcended to the

the knees before and behind. One of them had a ſago-leaf rolled round his head, forming a kind of airy cap. Their canoes were of indifferent workmanſhip like thoſe of Mallicollo, and had out-riggers. We ſaw ſome ſpears in them, which had two or three prongs, and were doubtleſs intended as fiſh-gigs; but, beſides theſe, the people had no arms whatſoever. They came ſo near as to accept a preſent of medals, nails, Taheitee cloth, and red baize; and we could obſerve them ſeizing upon the nails with peculiar eagerneſs, which ſeems to indicate that they were not wholly unacquainted with them: Quiros perhaps might leave ſome iron-ware on this iſland, which has thus acquired a high value among the natives. They faſtened a branch of the pepper-plant to the ſame rope by which we had lowered down the nails to them; but it appeared, that beſides this emblem of friendſhip, they had nothing elſe to give. We ſpoke a good deal to them, and they anſwered from time to time, but neither party underſtood the other. However, I thought of repeating the numerals in the dialect of the Friendly Iſlands, and had ſcarcely begun to count, when they immediately interrupted me, and counted very exactly till ten. We now pointed to the ſhore, and enquired for the name of the iſland. They repeated the word *Fannoòa*, which in the dialect juſt mentioned ſignifies land; and called the level diſtrict, at the bottom of the bay, *Tallaòncc*, 1774. AUGUST.

1774. AUGUST. *onee*, at the ſame time giving ſeveral names for different parts of the country on the ſides; but we could not obtain a general name of the iſland, which we therefore diſtinguiſhed by that of Tierra del Eſpiritù Santo, as Quiros had done before. The languages of Mallicollo and Tanna, of which we repeated ſome words to theſe people, were either unknown to them, or we pronounced them too improperly to be underſtood. When they ſaw our boats coming back from the ſhore, they left us, it being then near ſunſet. Lieutenant Pickerſgill, who had the command of our boats, reported that he found no foundings before he came within two or three cable's lengths of the ſhore, but that the bottom was good at this diſtance. He had found a fine river, which was deep enough for his boat at the entrance, and had landed on one of the banks, whilſt a great number of natives appeared in the buſhes on the oppoſite ſide. He made many ſigns of friendſhip, and called and beckoned to them to come over the water; but none of them venturing to accept the invitation, he re-embarked, and returned to the ſhip. The boats were hoiſted in, and a breeze ſpringing up, aſſiſted us to go gradually out of the bay. Captain Cook gave this bay the name of St. Philip and St. Iago; but it is ſtill ſomewhat doubtful, whether it is the ſame which Quiros has diſtinguiſhed by that name; at leaſt the port of Vera Cruz, which according to that Spaniſh navigator, has

room

room for a thouſand ſhips, is not to be found in it *. The eaſtern point of the entrance was named cape Quiros, and lies in 14° 55′ S. and 167° 14′ E. The weſtern point extends ſomewhat more to the northward, being in 14° 38′ S. and 166° 52′ E. and was named cape Cumberland. We were off this point early the next morning, and advanced ſlowly out of the bay, along the northern coaſt of the iſland, being much detained by calms and light airs. Quiros had great reaſon to extol the beauty and fertility of this country; it is indeed to appearance, one of the fineſt in the world. Its riches in vegetable productions would doubtleſs have afforded the botaniſt an ample harveſt of new plants, as next to New Zeeland it was the largeſt land we had hitherto ſeen, and had the advantage of having never been examined by other naturaliſts. But the ſtudy of nature was only made the ſecondary object in this voyage, which, contrary to its original intent, was ſo contrived in the execution, as to produce little more than a new track on the chart of the ſouthern hemiſphere. We were therefore obliged to look upon thoſe moments, as peculiarly fortunate, when the urgent wants of the crew, and the intereſt of the ſciences, happened to coincide. 1774. AUGUST.

A ſhark was caught in the afternoon, and afforded us a freſh meal. We found a ſmall inſect, of the monoculus

* See Mr. Dalrymple's uſeful and judicious Collection of Voyages, vol. I. p. 132, 142, and 169.

tribe,

1774. AUGUST. tribe, upon its back, which much reſembled the ſpecies in the gills of ſalmons. A ſcorpion was likewiſe diſlodged from a ſhelf, by the accidental removal of a book; ſome of theſe creatures having been brought on board at the Society or Friendly Iſlands with cluſters of bananas, on which they ſometimes ſit. Towards night we made another acquiſition; it was a booby, of the ſort which Linnæus calls *pelecanus fiber*, which had rooſted on the main-yard.

The day following a light air likewiſe retarded our progreſs, ſo that we ſlowly examined the weſtern coaſt of Tierra del Eſpiritù Santo. A variety of fiſh were obſerved ſwimming along ſide; two albecores were caught, and a ſingle dolphin was ſtruck with the harpoon, after many unſucceſsful attempts. The land on this ſide was high, and the mountains very ſteep. Many fires were obſerved at night, probably in order to clear the ground for plantations. Quiros having likewiſe ſeen fires on this iſland, conjectured as we had done at firſt, that they were *feux de joye*, and illuminations, on account of the arrival of ſhips. A ſoutherly breeze ſpringing up, obliged us to tack off and on, during the 30th and 31ſt, when we reached the S. W. point of the iſland, which we named Cape Liſburne, and which is ſituated in 15° 35′ S. and 167° E. We ſtood once more into the paſſage between Tierra del Eſpiritù Santo and Mallicollo, in order to complete the circuit of the former. Here we ſaw the bay which M. de Bougainville has expreſſed in his map,

map, ſheltered by ſome of the Bartholomew Iſlands: it did not however appear to be of ſuch great extent as it is there repreſented. About ſix in the evening we put about, and ſtood to the S. S. W. from the New Hebrides, with a S. E. trade-wind. This group of iſlands, which we had now curſorily examined in the ſpace of forty-ſix days, ſeems to be well worth the attention of future navigators, eſpecially if they ſhould ever be ſent out upon the liberal plan of making diſcoveries in all the various branches of ſcience. I will not pretend to ſay that they would find great riches of ſilver and pearls, which Quiros was forced to ſpeak of, in order to engage an intereſted, avaricious court, to ſupport his great and ſpirited undertakings. Theſe incitements are not neceſſary now a-days, when ſeveral monarchs in Europe have convinced the world that they can inſtitute voyages of diſcovery, with no other view than the increaſe of human knowledge, and the improvement of mankind. The ſums which ſome of their predeceſſors have laviſhed on paraſites, have been found ſufficient to make an immenſe progreſs, nay, to produce a new and important revolution in the ſtate of the ſciences, which have ever required a trifling expence to triumph over the numberleſs obſtacles that ignorance, envy, or ſuperſtition oppoſed againſt them. The natural productions of the New Hebrides, excluſive of all kinds of artificial riches, are therefore in my opinion conſiderable enough to engage the attention of future voyagers. Their

1774. AUGUST.

volcanoes,

1774. AUGUST. volcanoes, their vegetables, and their inhabitants, would provide ſufficient employment for a Ferber *, a Solander, and many of the hiſtorians of mankind.

SEPTEMBER. Thurſday 1. We proceeded at preſent to the ſouthward, and prepared to croſs the South Sea in its greateſt breadth towards the extremity of America; and though our crew were much weakened by living entirely upon ſalt meat in a hot climate, yet it was intended not to touch at any place by the way; a project, which if it had been put in execution, would doubtleſs have proved fatal to ſome of them, whoſe bad conſtitution would not prompt them to ſupport ſuch an abſtinence. Fortunately, after ſtanding on the ſame courſe for three days, we fell in with a large land, which had never been viſited by any European navigator before, and which entirely altered the plan of our proceedings for the remaining part of our ſtay in the South Seas.

* Mr. Ferber is the firſt and only man of ſcience who has given us a truly ſcientifical and mineralogical account of Veſuvius, which is worthy the attention of naturaliſts. See his Letters to baron Born, London, 1776.

CHAP.

1774. SEPTEMBER.

CHAP. III.

Diſcovery of New Caledonia.—Account of our ſtay there.—Range along the coaſt to our departure.—Diſcovery of Norfolk Iſland.—Return to New Zeeland.

ON the 4th of September, about ſeven in the morning, a midſhipman at the maſt-head diſcovered land to the ſouth, extending a great way to the weſtward, and likewiſe to the ſouth-eaſtward. It appeared to be very high, and its diſtance from us was about eight leagues, being ſeen through a haze, which made it appear farther off than it really was. We had at this time little wind, though fair weather, and therefore advanced ſlowly towards this new and unexpected coaſt. M. de Bougainville takes notice of meeting with a part of the ſea which was entirely ſmooth *, and where ſeveral pieces of wood and fruits floated paſt his ſhip. This was nearly to the N. W. of the land which we now diſcovered, and which, as an able and intelligent navigator, he had conjectured to lie in that direction. Sunday 4.

* See his Voyage, Eng. edition, p. 303.

1774. SEPTEMBER. A calm, which happened after noon, entirely ſtopped our progreſs towards the land, to which we were now near enough to diſcern ſeveral ſmokes, ſufficient to prove that it was inhabited. An officer at the maſt-head likewiſe entertained us with the hope of ſeeing another volcano, of which he ſaid he had ſeen the ſmoke burſting out. He muſt, however, have been deceived by appearances, as we never afterwards ſaw any volcanic production upon this iſland. The point which had firſt been ſeen, was named after the midſhipman, *Cape Colnett*, and is ſituated in 20° 30′ ſouth, and 165° 2′ eaſt. The whole land, appearing to be very extenſive, was honoured with the appellation of *Nova Caledonia*. We could not wait the moment which ſhould bring us acquainted with the inhabitants of this land, but formed ſeveral conjectures relative to them. As we had found the inhabitants of the New Hebrides not only entirely diſtinct from the New Zeelanders, but alſo different amongſt themſelves, this new country offered itſelf to our eyes very opportunely in order to account for the population of New Zeeland; but the ſequel convinced us that our ideas were very premature on this ſubject, and that the hiſtory of the human ſpecies in the South Seas cannot yet be unravelled with any degree of preciſion.

Before it was dark, three ſailing canoes were ſeen coming off from the ſhore. Perhaps the natives had taken our ſhip to be a canoe, and upon this ſuppoſition had miſtaken the

the diſtance, for ſoon after they put about and returned. The land to the weſtward ſeemed to be divided into ſeveral iſlands, and a-head of the ſhip we obſerved ſome breakers, which gave us reaſon to conclude that a reef of coral ſurrounded the land at a conſiderable diſtance from it. 1774. SEPTEMBER.

Early the next morning, having a fine breeze, we ſtood towards the ſhore, and ſoon diſcovered the reef, which ran parallel to the coaſt, at the diſtance of three leagues. Within it we ſaw ſeveral canoes, each provided with two large ſails, one behind the other, and ſome natives on board of them employed in fiſhing. A few other canoes put off from the ſhore ſome time after, and, paſſing the reef, came towards the ſhip. We called to them as ſoon as we could be heard, but they only looked at us, and ſoon returned the way they came, making however no unfriendly geſtures. Having obſerved an entrance into the reef we hoiſted two boats out, which we ſent to ſound. In a little time they made the ſignal of having found a convenient and ſafe paſſage into the ſmooth water within the reef, and we could obſerve them converſing upon very amicable terms with a canoe full of the natives. Our ſhip ſtood into this ſmooth baſon through a gap in the reef, which was about a mile in breadth. The natives laid ſome of their canoes on both ſides of the paſſage, in a place where it was narrow, and beckoned to us to keep in the middle between, which gave us a very high opinion of their friendly and open diſpoſi- Monday 5.

1774. SEPTEMBER. tion. Our boats ſtill continued to proceed a-head of us, ſounding from time to time, and making ſignals of the depth of water. The face of the country looked rather barren as we approached, and was covered with a dry whitiſh graſs. Trees were very ſparingly ſcattered on the mountains, and ſeemed all to have white ſtems, and to reſemble willows; nor was any kind of ſhrubberies or underwood to be ſeen. Coming nearer, we diſcovered a ſmall border of flat land at the foot of the hills, covered with green and tufted trees and buſhes, amongſt which we ſaw now and then a coco-nut palm and a banana-tree. Some houſes likewiſe appeared, which had the ſhape of conical or round bee-hives, with a hole for the entrance, and exactly reſembled the houſes which are repreſented in Le Maire's and Schouten's voyage, and which they ſaw on Cocos and Hoorne Iſland *.

Lieutenant Pickerſgill, who had been out in the boat, now returned on board, and told us that the people in the canoes had been extremely friendly towards him, and ſhewed him one of their number whom they named *Teà-booma*, and ſtiled their *arèekee*, or king. He gave him ſome medals and other trifles, and likewiſe preſented the other people in the canoe with the ſame; but they all delivered what they received immediately into the hands of Teà-booma. Mr. Pickerſgill brought on board four or five fiſh, of which

* See the plates in Mr. Dalrymple's Collection of Voyages, vol. II.

theſe

theſe good people had made him a preſent; but unfortunately they were already putrid and unfit to be eaten. 1774. SEPTEMBER.

We ſaw a ſmall iſlet in the harbour, ſurrounded by reefs and ſhoals, near which we let go our anchor in a good bottom. This was no ſooner done than we were ſurrounded by about twenty canoes, each of which was provided with ſails, and conſiſted of two hulls, connected by a platform of boards, on which lay a heap of ſoil and aſhes, where the natives kept a conſtant fire. Many of theſe people immediately came on board, placing perfect confidence in us, and one of them exchanged a yam for a ſmall bit of red cloth. We ſat down to dinner, and a number of the natives were our ſpectators. They ate very heartily of the yams which we had obtained at Tanna, but refuſed to touch our ſalt pork, or to drink a drop of wine. Unfortunately, yams were ſuch a rarity upon our table, that we could not conveniently part with them. They admired every thing that had a red colour, particularly red cloth or baize, but did not chooſe to give us any thing in exchange. Their language, if we except the word areekee and one or two more, had no affinity with any one of the various languages which we had heard in the South Sea before. This was the more ſurpriſing to us, as we had found one language, or at leaſt dialects of it, in all the eaſterly iſlands of the South Sea, as well as at New Zeeland. The people were likewiſe different from any we had ſeen. They were very ſtout, tall, and

1774. SEPTEMBER. and in general well proportioned; their features mild, their beards and hair black and ſtrongly frizzled, ſo as to be almoſt woolly in ſome individuals, and their general colour ſwarthy or a dark cheſnut brown, nearly the ſame with that of the people of Tanna.

After dinner we proceeded to a flat point on the ſhore, where we ſaw a great croud of the natives aſſembled. Two boats filled with people went on this expedition, and among them were twelve marines, well armed. We landed without the leaſt oppoſition among the natives, ſome of whom were armed, but others entirely defenceleſs. Our marines drew up in a line, whilſt we went up and down before them, and deſired the natives to give us ſome room, to which they readily conſented. A handſome young man, who, according to Mr. Pickerſgill, was the chief Teà-booma, held a ſpeech almoſt as ſoon as we had ſtepped aſhore. Previous to this, another of the natives pronounced ſome words very loud, upon which a general ſilence immediately enſued. The ſpeech was very moderate, though ſerious, and from time to time delivered in a loud tone. Sometimes the orator ſeemed to propoſe ſeveral queſtions, which were always anſwered by ſome old men in the croud, and the whole laſted two or three minutes. A little while after another chief arrived, who likewiſe held a ſpeech of the ſame nature to us; after which we mixed freely in the croud, and had an opportunity of examining their arms and ornaments.

Our

Our principal enquiry, which we expreſſed by ſigns, was whether they had any freſh water, upon which ſome pointed to the weſt, but the greateſt number to the eaſtward. Their perſons were tall and wholly of that character which I obſerved in thoſe who came on board at firſt. Many of them, however, had prodigious thick legs and arms, which ſeemed to be affected by a kind of leproſy. They all went naked, only tying a ſtring round the middle, and another round the neck. A little piece of brown cloth, made of the bark of a fig-tree, which is ſometimes tucked up to the belt, and ſometimes pendulous, ſcarcely deſerves the name of a covering; it ſeems indeed not to be intended for a veil, any more than the contrivance of the Mallicolleſe, and in the eyes of Europeans would rather be reckoned obſcene than decent. Every inhabitant of this iſland, therefore, like the natives of Tanna and Mallicollo, was an ambulant figure of the Roman Garden-God. The ideas of modeſty are different in every country, and change in different periods of time. Where all men go naked, for inſtance on New Holland*, cuſtom familiarizes them to each other's eyes, as much as if they went wholly muffled up in garments. The faſhionable dreſſes and ſuits of armour which were worn in the fifteenth and ſixteenth century at every European court, would at preſent be looked upon as the moſt indecent that

1774. SEPTEMBER.

* The natives of New Holland, of both ſexes, go entirely naked, and have not the leaſt covering from motives of ſhame. See Hawkeſworth, vol. III.

can

1774. SEPTEMBER. can poſſibly be contrived; and yet who will dare to aſſert that there was leſs modeſty in the world at that age than in this, or defame the virtuous characters of the invincible knights of that time, ſo famous for chaſtity, honour, and gallantry,—becauſe they wore breeches made after the faſhions of the times †?

The ſame piece of cloth, which the natives of New Caledonia have made ſo conſpicuous, is ſometimes of ſuch a length, that the extremity is faſtened to the ſtring round the neck. To this ſtring they alſo hang ſmall round beads, of a pale green nephritic ſtone, which is of the ſame ſpecies with that of Tanna, and nearly related to that of New Zeeland. On their heads many among them wear black cylindrical caps, made of a very coarſe matted work, and entirely open at both ends, being only a kind of ſtiff cloth, formed by a longitudinal ſeam into a cylinder, which has ſome reſemblance to the cap of an huſſar. The chiefs had ornamented theirs with many ſmall red plumes, and at the top with long black cock's feathers. In their ears, of which the extremity is ſtretched to a great length, and the whole cartilage cut out, as at Eaſter Iſland, they hang great numbers of tortoiſe-ſhell rings, as is cuſtomary at Tanna, and ſometimes place a ſcroll, made of a ſugar-cane leaf, in the

† In the arſenals at the Tower of London may be ſeen many complete ſuits of armour, which will better explain my meaning.

hole

hole. Their arms were clubs, ſpears and ſlings. The former were of different ſhapes and woods, but in general rather ſhort, ſeldom exceeding three feet in length, and reſembling that ſort of the clubs of Tanna, which is made of the *caſuarina*. Their ends are cut out in ſtars and various knobs, and ſome are formed almoſt like a ſcythe or pick-axe, with a very ſhort handle. Their ſpears are fifteen or twenty feet long, and black, or blackened over; and the beſt of them, ſomewhat before the middle, have a prominence, which is carved ſo as to bear a rude reſemblance to a human face. They throw them by the aſſiſtance of ſuch ſhort cords, knobbed at one end and looped at the other, as are uſual at Tanna, and which ſeamen call beckets. Thoſe of New Caledonia were of ſuperior workmanſhip, and contained a quantity of red wool, which we ſhould have taken for the covering of a new ſort of animal, if we had not formerly ſeen the vampyre, or great Indian bat, from whence it was taken. Their laſt weapons were ſlings, for bows and arrows were wholly unknown to them. Theſe ſlings conſiſted of a ſlender round cord, no thicker than a packthread, which had a taſſel at one end, and a loop at the other end and in the middle. The ſtones which they uſed were oblong, and pointed at each end, being made of a ſoft and unctuous ſoap-rock *(ſmectites)*, which could eaſily be rubbed into that ſhape. Theſe exactly fitted the loop in the middle of the ſling, and were kept in a wallet or pocket

1774. SEPTEMBER.

1774. SEPTEMBER. of coarſe cloth, ſtrongly woven, of a kind of graſs, which was tied on about the middle. Their ſhape gives them a ſtriking reſemblance to the *glandes plumbeæ* of the Romans *.

Captain Cook being deſirous to find a watering-place, ſoon returned to the boats, and proceeded along ſhore to the eaſtward, where he ſaw the whole coaſt lined with mangroves, growing in ſhallow water, and in ſwampy or marſhy ground. The natives on the beach, ſeeing us put off, diſperſed immediately, and went to their ſeveral homes. Two of them were ſeen walking with great difficulty along the mangroves; for which reaſon we rowed towards them, and took them into the boat. After we had proceeded near two miles, theſe two men pointed out an entrance between the mangroves, which looked like a river. As it was deep enough for our boats, we went in, and ſoon perceived, that, after ſeveral turns and windings, it led to a few habitations. In our way we ſaw ſome of the natives ſtanding on the ſhore, and a flock of wild ducks paſſing over our heads at the ſame time. I killed one of them, which one of our friends in the boat was ſo deſirous of poſſeſſing, that we readily made him a preſent of it. He, as well as thoſe on ſhore, expreſſed ſome admiration on obſerving the effect of our fire-arms, but did not betray the ſmalleſt ſymptom of fear. Before we reached their houſes, we re-

* See Count Caylus's Antiquit. III. 327. Tab. XCII. fig. 3.

peated

peated the experiment, much to their ſatisfaction, and were very well pleaſed to give them an idea of our power, by ſuch innocent means. At laſt, the river being not above twelve yards wide, we landed on its banks, which were raiſed about two feet above the water, it being near the flood tide. Here we found a few ſmall families, with their wives and children, who all came familiarly about us, without the leaſt marks of diſtruſt or ill-will. The women were in general of a dark cheſnut, or ſometimes mahogany brown colour; their ſtature was middle-ſized, ſome being rather tall, and their whole form very ſtout, and ſomewhat clumſy. Their dreſs was the moſt disfiguring that can be imagined, and gave them a thick ſquat ſhape. It was a ſhort petticoat or fringe, conſiſting of filaments or little cords about eight inches long, which were faſtened to a very long ſtring, which they had tied ſeveral times round the waiſt. The filaments or little ropes therefore lay above each other in ſeveral layers, forming a kind of thick thatch all round the body, which did not cover above a third part of the thigh. Theſe filaments were ſometimes dyed black; but frequently thoſe on the outſide only were of that colour, whilſt the reſt had a dirty ſtraw-colour. They wore ſhells, ear-rings, and bits of nephritic ſtones, like the men; and ſome had three black lines longitudinally from the under-lip to the chin, which had been punctured by the ſame methods practiſed at the Friendly 1774. SEPTEMBER.

1774. SEPTEMBER. and Society Iſlands. Their features were coarſe, but expreſſed great good-nature. The forehead in general was high, the noſe broad and flat at the root, and the eyes rather ſmall. Their cheek-bones were very prominent, and the cheeks commonly plump. Their hair was frizzled, and often cut ſhort, as among the natives of the Society and Friendly Iſlands. The huts, which ſtood about ten yards from the banks of the river, on a little riſing, were of a conical ſhape, about ten feet high, but not pointed at the top. Their innermoſt ſkeleton conſiſted of ſeveral poles placed nearly upright, and connected together by twiſted ſticks like hurdles. Over theſe we found a covering of matts from top to bottom, and upon that a thick and well-contrived thatch of ſtraw. What little light there is in theſe houſes, comes in through the entrance, which is a hole about four feet high; ſo that the inhabitants muſt ſtoop to go in or out. We found them full of ſmoke, and ſaw a heap of aſhes in the entrance; and concluded that they were obliged to light fires, in order to drive away the moſquitoes, which muſt infeſt the ſwamps in the neighbourhood; though this day being rather cool, we ſaw but few. The huts were ſurrounded by a ſmall number of cocoa-palms, deſtitute of fruit, ſome ſugar-canes, bananas, and eddoes, which the natives had ſupplied with water by ſeveral little trenches. Some of the eddoes were actually ſet under water, in the ſame manner as is cuſtomary through-

throughout the South Sea Iſlands. The whole plantation, however, had a very ſcanty appearance, and ſeemed to be inſufficient to afford nouriſhment to the inhabitants throughout the year. We entirely miſſed that variety of fruits, which we had hitherto met with in the tropical iſlands, and naturally recollected the poverty of the inhabitants of Eaſter Iſland, above whom it appeared, that the people before us enjoyed but few advantages. A native named Heebai, ſeemed to be the principal man among the few families which were here aſſembled; we made him ſome preſents, and walked about on the banks of the river towards the mangroves, meeting with a new plant by the way. Towards the hills, of which the firſt riſings were at the diſtance of about two miles, the country looked extremely dreary; here and there indeed, we ſaw a few trees, and ſmall cultivated ſpots, but they appeared to be loſt on the great extent of barren and unprofitable country, which reſembled our moors more than any thing elſe. Upon a large heap of embers and aſhes before the huts, lay a round earthen pot, which could hold four or five gallons. It was very clumſily ſhaped, had a large belly, and conſiſted of a reddiſh ſubſtance, which was totally covered with ſoot both without and within. After a ſhort ſtay with the good people of this ſpot, whoſe proviſions were doubtleſs ſo ſcanty, that they could not ſpare any for us, we reimbarked in our boats. The natives came along ſide early the next morning

1774. SEPTEMBER.

1774. SEPTEMBER. morning in their canoes. They had fires upon every canoe, having laid ſome ſtones and aſhes on the platform, to prevent any accident. There were ſome women in the boats, who did not come into the ſhip, but many of the men came in without invitation, and began to ſell their arms for pieces of Taheitee cloth.

The boats were ſent aſhore again in ſearch of a nearer watering-place. We landed at the ſame point, where we had made our firſt landing the day before. Here we met with a few inhabitants, who on our making enquiry for freſh-water, pointed to the weſtward where we had not yet been. We walked along the beach, which was here ſandy, and bounded by a fine wild ſhrubbery: we ſoon came to a hut, from whence a number of plantations extended to the back of the beach and wild wood. We rambled into the country, and came to a canal that watered this plantation, but of which the water was very brackiſh. From hence however, we ran immediately to an eminence near us, where the nature of the country appeared evidently changed. The plain was covered with a thin ſtratum of vegetable ſoil, which being very poor was manured in the plantations with broken ſhells and corals. The eminence on the contrary was a rocky ground, conſiſting of large pieces of quartz and glimmer *(mica*)*. Here

* This kind of rock is called *geſtell-ſtein* by the German mineralogiſts. See Mr. Ferber's Letters to Baron Born, Engliſh edition, 8vo. 1776, p. 327. This name is particularly applied to that kind of rock, where the mica or glimmer lies in frequent and horizontal ſtrata.

grew

grew a quantity of dry graſſes, about two or three feet high, very thin in moſt places; and at the diſtance of fifteen or twenty yards aſunder, we ſaw large trees black at the root, but with a bark perfectly white and looſe, and having narrow long leaves like our willows. They were of the ſort which Linné calls *melaleuca leucadendra*, and Rumphius *arbor alba*, who ſays that the natives of the Moluccas make the oil of *cayputi*, from the leaves, which are indeed extremely fragrant and aromatic †. Not the leaſt ſhrub was to be ſeen on this eminence, and the trees did not intercept the diſtant proſpect. We diſcerned from hence a line of tufted trees and ſhrubberies, which extended from the ſea-ſide towards the mountains, and immediately concluded that they ſtood on the banks of a rivulet. We walked paſt a few other plantations, and ſoon found the rivulet we ſought, which about two hundred yards from the ſea, was unmixed with ſalt-water, ſo that we could fill our caſks without much trouble. Here we ſaw the chief Teabooma, and gave him ſeveral medals and other trifles, for which he made us a preſent of a ſling, and ſome clubs. The banks of the river were lined with mangroves, beyond which a few other ſorts of plants and trees occupied a ſpace of fifteen or twenty feet, which had a layer of vegetable mould, charged with nutritive moiſture, and covered with a green bed of graſſes, where the eye gladly repoſed

1774. AUGUST.

† Herb. amboin. vol. II. T. 16, 17. p. 72.

itſelf

1774. SEPTEMBER. itſelf after viewing a parched proſpect. The border of ſhrubberies and wild trees which lined the ſea-ſhore, was the moſt advantageous to us as naturaliſts; here we met with ſome unknown plants, and ſaw a great variety of birds of different claſſes, which were for the greateſt part entirely new. But the character of the inhabitants, and their friendly, inoffenſive behaviour towards us, gave us greater pleaſure than all the reſt. We found their numbers very inconſiderable, and their habitations very thinly ſcattered. They commonly had built two or three houſes near each other, under a group of very lofty fig-trees, of which the branches were ſo cloſely entwined, that the ſky was ſcarcely viſible through the foliage, and the huts were involved in a perpetual cool ſhade. They had another advantage beſides, from this pleaſant ſituation; for numbers of birds continually twittered in the tufted tops of the tree, and hid themſelves from the ſcorching beams of the ſun. The wild note of ſome ſpecies of creepers was very agreeable, and conveyed a ſenſible pleaſure to every one who delighted in this kind of artleſs harmony. The inhabitants themſelves were commonly ſeated at the foot of theſe trees, which had this remarkable quality, that they ſhot long roots from the upper part of the ſtem, perfectly round, as if they had been made by a turner, into the ground, ten, fifteen, and twenty feet from the tree, and formed a moſt exact ſtrait line, being extremely claſtic, and as tenſe

as

as a bow-ſtring prepared for action. The bark of theſe trees ſeems to be the ſubſtance of which they make thoſe little bits of cloth, ſo remarkable in their dreſs. They communicated a number of words of their language to us, which had no affinity with thoſe we had learnt before in other iſlands; a circumſtance ſufficient to diſcourage the greateſt and moſt indefatigable genealogiſt. Their temper ſeemed to be as indolent, as it was good-natured and harmleſs. It was very rare indeed, that any one of them choſe to follow us on our rambles; if we paſſed by their huts, and talked to them, they anſwered us, but if we went on without addreſſing them, they took no farther notice of us. The women were rather more curious, and ſometimes ſtrayed in the buſhes to obſerve us, but would not venture to come near, except in the preſence of the men. 1774. SEPTEMBER.

We ſhot a number of birds, without giving the leaſt offence by this amuſement to any of the natives; on the contrary, when we came near their houſes, the young men readily pointed them out to us. It appeared that they had very little occupation at this time of the year, having now prepared the ground, and planted roots and bananas, of which they expected a new crop the enſuing ſummer. Perhaps from the ſame reaſon, they were at preſent more unable than at any other time, to part with their proviſions to us, though their infuſpicious, open diſpoſition, gave us the greateſt room to believe that they were not ſtrangers to

1774. SEPTEMBER. the principles of hoſpitality, which render all the natives of the South Sea ſo amiable in the eyes of their viſitors.

We walked about till noon, when the boats returned on board with a load of water, having only left a ſmall party with the caſks; a precaution, which the honeſty of the natives perhaps did not render neceſſary. Mr. Wales, our aſtronomer, had in the meanwhile fixed ſome inſtruments on the little ſandy iſlet, in order to obſerve an eclipſe of the ſun, which happened this day. The captain joined him there, and from this, as well as ſubſequent obſervations, they deduced the ſituation of this little iſland to be in 20° 15′ S. and 164° 40′ E.

In the evening we went on ſhore with captain Cook to the watering-place. The cayputi-trees *(melaleuca)*, of which we found ſeveral in flower, had a looſe bark, which in many places burſt off from the wood, and concealed within it beetles, ants, ſpiders, lizards, and ſcorpions. We thought we obſerved quails among the tall dry graſſes this day, but could not be certain; we walked about till ſunſet, on the hillocks neareſt to our watering-place, where we ſaw but very few natives, who ſold ſome of their arms to us. We endeavoured to repreſent to them that we ſtood in need of proviſions, but they lent a deaf ear to every hint of that kind, ſince it was plain they had barely enough for their own ſubſiſtence. The ſoil of New Caledonia is indeed very unfit for

for agriculture, and poorly rewards the labours which the natives beſtow upon it. 1774. SEPTEMBER.

Early in the morning, before any natives come on board, we ſent a boat to the offing with the body of one of our ſeamen, who had acted as butcher on board the ſhip, but died the day before, of a hurt which he had received on the 5th of September by a fall. He was a laborious man, indefatigable in his employment, though he ſeemed to be near ſixty years old. This was the third man whom we loſt on this voyage, one having been drowned, and another dying of a dropſy.

We ſet out with the captain, the maſter, two midſhipmen, and three ſailors, after breakfaſt, and aſcended the hills from whence the rivulet ſprung, at which we watered. We found a convenient path all the way, though the mountain was very ſteep in ſome places. The rock was every where of the ſame nature; it was always a mixture of a kind of glimmer and quartz, more or leſs tinged with an ochreous or reddiſh colour, which owed its origin to particles of iron. We found the cayputi trees all the way up; but as we came higher, we met with various ſorts of ſhrubs, though thinly ſcattered, which offered new ſpecies of flowers to our eyes. The higher we came, the more the trees dwindled into ſhrubs, except in a few deep glens, where we obſerved ſome ſmall rills guſhing down, which fertilized the ground ſo much, that a variety of plants ſhot up in

1774. SEPTEMBER. them with luxuriance. We had not aſcended an hour, when we met a body of near two hundred men of the natives deſcending, moſt of them well armed, who ſeemed to have come on purpoſe to ſee the ſtrangers. The greater part turned back with us, ſeeing us advance towards the ſummit of the hill. Being near the ſummit, we ſtopped to look at ſome ſtakes placed here and there in the ground, with dry branches of trees and dry graſſes laid acroſs them. The natives told us they buried their dead on this hill, and that the ſtakes indicated the places where every one was interred. In the meanwhile, captain Cook, with the maſter, had reached the ſummit of the hill, from whence he beheld the ſea on the ſouth ſide, at no greater diſtance from the mountains than that to the north. A plain appeared on that ſide watered by various rivulets, and ſome plantations could be diſcerned; but upon the whole, no material difference was obſerved between the two ſides of the ridge. The natives ſeeing us very dry, and tired by the immenſe heat of the day, brought us ſome ſugar-canes; though I cannot conceive where they found them ſo ſoon, as we could not ſee, or indeed ſuppoſe, any growing in the neighbourhood. The tops of the hills were almoſt entirely barren, but ſtill conſiſted of the ſame kind of ſtone, which ſeems to indicate, that New Caledonia contains ſome valuable minerals. Their height, from the time which the aſcent took up, and all other circumſtances conſidered, appears not to be very

con-

1774. SEPTEMBER.

conſiderable, and muſt be inferior to the height of the Table-mountain at the Cape of Good Hope, which, according to abbé la Caille *, is ſaid to be 3350 Rhinland feet high. We deſcended by a different path, which was more ſteep and rugged than the firſt, but likewiſe brought us down on the plain in a much ſhorter time. We found a number of plantations on that part of the plain where we came down, which was a conſiderable way to the weſtward of our watering-place. A few habitations of the natives were ſituated in the midſt of theſe cultivated ſpots, without being ſheltered againſt the ſun. Their inhabitants came out, and offered us ſome cups full of freſh water, which the heat rendered very acceptable. This friendly action is fully ſufficient to prove that the people have a kind and hoſpitable diſpoſition, which nothing but their indigence, and their ungrateful ſoil, prevented them from manifeſting in a more ſtriking manner. In our poliſhed regions we ſometimes ſee real generoſity ſhine through the cracks of a ruinous cottage, while it faintly glimmers in ſumptuous palaces.

Having rejoined our watering party, we returned on board, where we found a number of natives, who viſited every part of the ſhip, and diſpoſed of their clubs, ſpears, and ornaments. One among them was prodigiouſly tall, and ſeemed at leaſt ſix feet five inches high, and the black

* See his Voyage, p. 237.

cylindrical

1774. SEPTEMBER. cylindrical cap which he wore, made him appear at leaſt eight inches higher. Many of theſe caps were ornamented with the feathers of the Ceyloneſe owl, which is alſo to be met with here and in the woods of Tanna; and it was almoſt a general cuſtom to tie the ſling round them, letting the taſſel hang down on the ſhoulder. Fern leaves were likewiſe no uncommon ornament about theſe caps, which the natives ſold us for Taheitee cloth, though they ſet a great value upon them. The number of ear-rings, which many of them wore, was remarkable; we obſerved one who had no leſs than eighteen, made of tortoiſe-ſhell, an inch in diameter, and a quarter of an inch in breadth. They brought a muſical inſtrument, a kind of whiſtle, for ſale this day. It was a little poliſhed piece of brown wood, about two inches long, ſhaped like a bell, though apparently ſolid, with a rope fixed at the ſmall end. Two holes were made in it near the baſe, and another near the inſertion of the rope, all which had ſome communication with each other, and by blowing in the uppermoſt, a ſhrill ſound, like whiſtling, was formed at the other. Beſides this, we never obſerved any inſtrument among them which had the leaſt relation to muſic. They had now begun to take our large ſpike-nails; but ſeeing ſome round iron bolts in the ſhip, to which ſome of the cordage is faſtened (commonly called belaying-pins), they conſtantly ſhewed a great deſire of poſſeſſing them. They did not attempt to take the leaſt

trifle

trifle by ſtealth, behaving with the ſtricteſt honeſty and pro- 1774. SEPTEMBER.
priety on board. Many came ſwimming from the ſhore, which was better than a mile off, holding their piece of brown cloth out of the water with one hand, whilſt with the other they moved forwards, and brought with them a ſpear, or a club, though not of the ſort which is made of caſuarina wood, that being too heavy to be conveyed in ſuch a manner.

We embarked in a boat after dinner, and landed near two miles to the weſt of our watering-place, on a point which formed the bay where our ſhip lay at anchor. Here captain Cook took ſome bearings, whilſt we purſued our reſearches. Immediately on the beach we found a large irregular maſs of rock, not leſs than a cube of ten feet, which conſiſted of a cloſe-grained horn-ſtone, ſpeckled full of garnets, ſomewhat bigger than pins heads. This diſcovery confirmed what we had before conjectured, viz. that there was ſome probability of meeting with rich and uſeful minerals upon this iſland, which, as far as we ſaw, diſtinguiſhed itſelf from all thoſe we had hitherto examined in the South Seas, in being entirely deſtitute of volcanic productions. From this rock we ſtruck into the woods which lined the ſhore, and which happened to be very thick in this part to a ſhort diſtance on all ſides. Here we found a few young bread-fruit-trees, not yet ſufficiently grown to bear fruit; but they ſeemed to have come up without

1774. SEPTEMBER. without culture, and were perhaps indigenous wild trees of the country. We likewiſe met with a new ſpecies of paſſion-flower, which was chiefly extraordinary on this account, that all its ſpecies formerly known to the learned world were confined to America. I ſeparated from my company during this ſearch, and came into a hollow ſandy way, which was hung with bindweeds and ſweet-ſcented ſhrubs on both ſides, and ſeemed to have been the bed of a torrent or rivulet. It brought me to a group of two or three huts, ſurrounded by coco-nut trees. Before one of them I obſerved a man ſeated with a little girl of eight or ten years old on his lap, and examining her head. He was ſomewhat ſurpriſed at ſight of me, but preſently recovering his tranquillity, proceeded in his occupation. He had a piece of fine tranſparent quartz in his hand, which having a very ſharp edge, he made uſe of inſtead of ſciſſars to cut the girl's hair. I made her a preſent of ſome black beads, and alſo gave him a few, with which he ſeemed much pleaſed. I now went on to the other huts, and found two placed ſo near together, as to incloſe an area of about ten feet ſquare, which was partly ſhut in with a fence. Here I found three women, one middle-aged, and the others ſomewhat younger, who made a fire under one of thoſe large earthen pots which I have already mentioned. As ſoon as they ſaw me, they made ſigns that I ſhould leave them; however, being deſirous to ſee their method of cooking,

ing, I came in, and ſaw that they had ſtuffed the pot full of dry graſſes and green leaves, in which they had wrapped up a few ſmall yams. Theſe roots are therefore in a manner baked in this pot, or undergo the ſame operation which the natives of Taheitee perform by burying them under a heap of earth, among heated ſtones. It was with difficulty they would give me time to intrude ſo far; they repeated their ſigns that I ſhould go away, and pointing to the huts, moved their fingers ſeveral times under their throat; which I interpreted, that if they were obſerved to be thus alone with a ſtranger, they would be choaked or killed. I left them after they had made this geſture, and peeped into the huts, which I found quite empty. Returning into the wood, I met Dr. Sparrman; and we went to the women again, in order to look at their work once more, and to be convinced whether I had properly interpreted their ſigns, or whether they had only ſome particular objection to my appearance. We found them in the ſame place, and walking up to them, immediately made them a preſent of ſome beads, which they accepted with great expreſſions of joy; but at the ſame time they repeated the geſtures which they had made when I came alone, and looked at us as if they would add entreaties to their ſigns, with which we immediately complied, and retired. We met the reſt of our company ſome time after, and being athirſt, aſked the man who cut his daughter's hair for a little water. He ſhewed 1774. SEPTEMBER.

1774. SEPTEMBER. us a tree, on which he had hung about a dozen coco-nut ſhells, filled with freſh water, that element being to all appearance rather ſcarce in the country. We emptied ſome of theſe cups, and made him a preſent of a bit of Taheitee cloth, with which he ſeemed to be well pleaſed. From hence we proceeded to the watering-place, ſome by land, and ſome in the boat. We ſhot ſome curious birds by the way, with which the country abounds; and among the reſt a ſpecies of crow, which is common in Europe. At the watering-place we found a conſiderable number of natives, ſome of whom, for a little rag of Taheitee cloth, carried our people into and out of their boats about forty yards, the water being too ſhallow for boats at that diſtance from the ſhore. Here we alſo ſaw ſome women, who, far from expreſſing any dread of the jealouſy of their men, came among the croud, and ſometimes amuſed themſelves in encouraging the propoſals of our ſeamen. They commonly beckoned them to come into the buſhes, but as ſoon as the ſailors followed, they gave them the ſlip, and ran with ſuch agility, that they could not be overtaken. Thus they took pleaſure in diſappointing their new adorers, and laughed very heartily as often as they had put their little arts in practice. There was not a ſingle inſtance, during our ſtay upon the iſland, of their ever having condeſcended to permit any indecent familiarity from an European; an innocent recreation, which ſhewed them good humoured,

and

and not deſtitute of ingenuity, was what they ſtrictly adhered to. 1774. SEPTEMBER.

The captain's clerk purchaſed a fiſh on ſhore, for a piece of Taheitee cloth, from one of the natives, who had killed it with a ſpear. As ſoon as he came on board, he ſent it to the captain; and as I found it to be a new ſpecies, I made a drawing and deſcription of it. It was of the genus, by Linnæus named *tetraodon*, of which ſeveral ſpecies are reckoned poiſonous. We hinted this circumſtance to captain Cook, eſpecially as the ugly ſhape, and large head of the fiſh, were greatly in its disfavour; but he told us he had eaten this identical ſort of fiſh on the coaſt of New Holland, during his former voyage, without the leaſt bad conſequences. It was accordingly preſerved for the next day, and we ſat down very chearful, in expectation of a freſh meal. At ſupper the liver of this fiſh was ſerved up, which was very large and oily. For this reaſon the captain, my father, and myſelf eat only a morſel or two of it, and thought it had no other bad taſte, than what aroſe from the oil. Our meſſmate, Dr. Sparrman, fortunately did not touch it. We went to bed upon this ſomewhat early, intending to reviſit the ſhore at day-break; but at three o'clock in the morning, my father awaking, found himſelf extremely giddy, and his hands and feet entirely, as it were, benumbed. He got up, and was ſcarcely able to ſtand. He came into the ſteerage, where Dr. Sparrman ſlept, and

1774. SEPTEMBER. acquainted him with his illneſs. Captain Cook's apartment was only ſeparated by a thin partition: he was awake, and feeling the ſame ſymptoms of which he heard my father complain, got out of bed, and found himſelf unable to walk without holding. I was in the ſame ſituation, upon being awakened by my father, and crawled into the cabin, where the ſurgeon, Mr. Patton, immediately appeared, to aſſiſt us. Our diſorder had indeed a moſt ſerious aſpect; the blood had left our cheeks, all our limbs were benumbed, and without ſenſation, and a great degree of languor and oppreſſion had taken place. Emetics were adminiſtered, which gave my father and myſelf ſome relief, but had not much effect upon captain Cook. We took a ſudorific after this, and went to bed again.

In the morning, about eight, we got up, very giddy and heavy; however I found myſelf well enough to paſs the whole morning in ſketching the outlines of ſix or eight plants, and ſome birds, which we had collected on our former excurſions. Dr. Sparrman, in the mean while, went on ſhore to collect farther ſupplies. Towards noon my father endeavoured to converſe with ſome of the natives who came into the ſhip. At ſight of the fiſh, which was hung under the half-deck, they made ſigns that it occaſioned pain in the ſtomach, and by leaning their heads upon one hand, and ſhutting their eyes, expreſſed that it cauſed ſleep and drowſineſs, and death. Still thinking they might only make

theſe

theſe geſtures in order to obtain the fiſh, we offered it to them, but they refuſed it with the ſtrongeſt marks of averſion, holding both their hands out before them, and turning away the head. They afterwards deſired us to throw it into the ſea, but we determined to preſerve it in ſpirits of wine. 1774. SEPTEMBER.

I was ſeverely puniſhed about noon for making light of my complaint, and paſſing the morning at work; for I was ſuddenly ſeized with ſickneſs, and forced to go to bed, by a returning fit of dizzineſs. The only remedies which gave any relief, were ſudorifics; but the poiſon was of too virulent a nature, to be ſubdued in a ſhort time. It prevented our making thoſe reſearches, which from the nature of the country before us, would doubtleſs have teemed with a variety of intereſting diſcoveries in every branch of natural hiſtory. The next morning lieutenant Pickerſgill, was ſent with the launch and another boat, to an iſland to the weſt, about eight leagues diſtant, which the natives named Balabeea; in order to examine the ſituation and direction of the coaſts in that part. We ſaw theſe boats put off with the greateſt regret, being obliged by the continuance of our dizzineſs, to forego this opportunity of examining an extenſive tract of unknown country. Abſolute inability to ſtand or walk longer than five minutes at a time, was the only circumſtance which with-held us from embarking on this excurſion. The poiſon which had been thus Friday 9.

1774. SEPTEMBER. thus fatal to us, had likewiſe affected ſeveral dogs, taken on board at the Society Iſlands; theſe creatures having ſeized upon the remains of the liver, were extremely ill, and had the ſame ſymptoms as thoſe which were poiſoned at Mallicollo. A little pig, the only one which we obtained at Tanna, having eaten the entrails of the fiſh, died ſoon after, being ſwelled to an unuſual ſize.

The natives who came on board, began now to admire our iron ware, and readily took nails, knives, and hatchets. Tea-booma, the chief, ſent captain Cook a preſent of ſome ſugar-canes and yams, which, conſidering the poverty of the country, was indeed a kingly preſent. He was complimented in return with a hatchet, a gimlet, and a Taheitian dog of each ſex, theſe animals being entirely unknown in the country. We endeavoured to obtain the name of this great iſland from the natives, but we could not ſucceed, being always put off with the appellations of particular diſtricts. Thus for inſtance, they called the part oppoſite to the ſhip, Baladd; the obſervatory iſland, Poozooe; and the diſtrict beyond the hills on the S. W. coaſt, Teabooma; which being alſo the name of the chief, occaſioned ſeveral conjectures. The general name of New Caledonia was therefore preſerved, particularly as it ſuited not only with the good diſpoſition of the people, but alſo with the nature of the country.

We

We ventured, though exceſſively weakened, to go on ſhore the next morning. Having landed to the eaſtward of the watering-place, we walked acroſs a part of the plain, which was wholly uncultivated, and covered with thin dry graſſes. A path brought us into a fine wood at the foot of the hills, which abounded with new plants, birds, and inſects. Every thing conſpired here, to make us look upon the country as a ſolitude. We ſaw the hills before us, and on both ſides, without a ſingle habitation upon them, and the plain which we had croſſed, was in this neighbourhood equally deſtitute of inhabitants. The population of New Caledonia muſt indeed be extremely thin; for the ſoil is unfit for cultivation on the mountains, and the narrow plain itſelf, is for the greateſt part very barren and deſert. We proceeded to the eaſtward, till we came near a few houſes, placed among ſwamps. Some of the inhabitants came to us with great good-nature in their countenances, and pointed out the places where we might walk with ſafety without ſinking into the mud. We obſerved that their houſes had not only a covering of mats made of coco-nut leaves, but that the innermoſt coating ſometimes conſiſted of the bark of the cayputi-tree. Before one of the huts, ſome of the natives were eating a few leaves which had been ſtewed; and others ſucking the bark of the *hibiſcus tiliaceus*, after they had broiled it over the fire. We taſted of this bark, but found it extremely inſipid, nauſeous, and

1774. SEPTEMBER. Saturday 19.

1774. SEPTEMBER. and affording little nutriment. Neceſſity ſeems to have forced the people to content themſelves with the moſt ſcanty means of ſubſiſtence, at certain ſeaſons; and no time of the year is more likely to be ſeverely felt, than that of ſpring, when their winter ſtores is exhauſted, and the new crop is not yet come up. They doubtleſs ſupply the deficiency by fiſhing, for which the extenſive reefs round their iſland furniſh the beſt opportunity; but ſince our arrival in the harbour it had blown rather freſh, and the wind daily encreaſed to ſuch a pitch, that it would have been to no purpoſe to venture from the ſhore. Mahine, whilſt he accompanied us, frequently uſed to mention, that even the opulent natives of Taheitee and the Society Iſlands, ſometimes, though rarely, feel the inconveniences of a dry or barren year, and are obliged during ſome months, to have recourſe to fern-roots, the bark of various trees, and the fruit of wild buſhes, to ſatisfy the cravings of hunger.

We found near theſe huts a number of tame fowls of a large breed, and bright plumage, which were the only domeſtic animals of any kind, belonging to the natives; and alſo ſaw heaps of ſhells, which they had collected on the reefs, and of which they had eaten the fiſh. The temper of theſe people in general was indolent, and almoſt deſtitute of curioſity; the greater part of them did not ſtir from their ſeats, when we paſſed by their huts, ſpoke very ſeldom,

ſeldom, and almoſt always in a ſerious tone. The women were ſomewhat more cheerful, and thoſe who were married, carried their infants on their backs in a kind of ſatchel.

We returned on board about one o'clock, but landed again after dinner. Having obſerved that the buſhes and trees near the ſea ſide, were better ſtocked with birds than thoſe in the interior country, becauſe they afforded more ſhade and more food, we confined our excurſion to the plain, being deſirous of encreaſing our zoological collection. We fell in with another group of huts, cloſe to the water; here the natives had put one of their large earthen pots over the fire, and filled it with ſhells, of which by this means they roaſted the fiſh. We ſaw one of them who had a hatchet in his hand, of a very remarkable ſhape. It was made of a crooked piece of wood, which forms a great knob, but has a ſhort handle, not exceeding ſix inches. The other end is hollowed out, and a black ſtone juſt fitting the cavity is placed in it, without being tied on, as is the caſe with the hatchets of the Society and Friendly Iſlands. We purchaſed this hatchet, it being the firſt inſtrument relating to agriculture which we had ſeen in this country. We likewiſe made an acquiſition of ſome clubs, ſlings, and ſpears, and had an opportunity of admiring the ſkill of ſeveral youths, who made uſe of their ſlings with the greateſt preciſion. In the courſe of our rambles, we came to an encloſure of ſticks, round a little hillock or mound, four

1774. SEPTEMBER. feet high; within the encloſure the natives had ſtuck in the ground ſome other ſticks beſet with large trumpet-ſhells. We enquired for what purpoſe this ſpot was ſo encloſed, and were told that the chiefs of the diſtrict were buried in that ground. As we found numerous burying-places on the hills, it appears to be a general cuſtom with the natives, to commit their dead bodies to the earth. This manner of diſpoſing of the dead, ſeems indeed much more judicious than that of Taheitee, where they expoſe them above ground, till all the fleſh is perfectly putrified. If the mortality were more conſiderable, than we have reaſon to believe it in that happy iſland, this cuſtom might have the moſt pernicious conſequences, and produce a dreadful epidemical diſtemper. Europeans, above all, ſhould be extremely cautious of communicating any contagious diſorder to the people whom they viſit in the South Seas. Such a diſeaſe as the ſmall pox, for example, would undoubtedly make dreadful havock, and go near to deſtroy the whole race of Taheitians.

The acrimony of the poiſon which we had received into the body, by taſting the liver of the fiſh, had ſo much weakened us, that we were entirely exhauſted towards evening, and obliged to ſit down repeatedly, in order to recruit our waſted ſpirits. We ſtill felt returns of dizzineſs which made us unfit for any kind of reſearches, in ſpite of ourſelves, and even deprived us of the power of thinking, judging,

judging, and remembering, as well as of the perfect uſe of our external ſenſes. I cannot mention this misfortune, without lamenting once more, that it befell us in a country newly diſcovered, where we had more need than ever of perfect health, and of all our attention and diſcernment, in order to make the moſt of the few moments which we were allowed to ſpend among a people wholly different from all we had hitherto ſeen. The reader, who perhaps may find leſs food for his curioſity in this part of our narrative, than he expected, is requeſted to conſider our unhappy ſituation at that time, when all our corporeal and intellectual faculties were impaired by this virulent poiſon. We came back before it was dark to the ſhip, which the natives left ſoon after our return. A few of them only went off in canoes; for, as the wind blew very hard, the greateſt number had come on board ſwimming, and returned the ſame way. We ſaw forty or fifty put off together, and in ſpite of the great agitation of the water, ſwim to the ſhore; it blew ſo hard the next morning, however, that none of them came back to the ſhip. 1774. SEPTEMBER.

We went aſhore again, though we were much wetted in our paſſage thither, and took a walk to the weſtward. On this excurſion we ſaw a great number of birds, and enriched our collection with many new ſpecies. It is not to be doubted, that the vicinity of ſuch an extenſive continent as that of New Holland, contributes to encreaſe the variety of animal Sunday 11.

1774. SEPTEMBER.

and vegetable ſpecies in this iſland. To confirm this aſſertion, we may quote the teſtimony of captain Cook, and of all thoſe perſons who had ſeen New Holland with him in the Endeavour, and who, upon examining New Caledonia, unanimouſly pronounced that in its general appearance it perfectly reſembled that continent. New Holland is ſaid to differ from New Caledonia only in having a more fertile ſoil in ſome places, conſiſting of a ſtratum of vegetable earth; but there is no difference in the growth of the trees, the want of ſhrubbery in the foreſts, and the general dryneſs or parched appearance of the country. We ſtopped at ſeveral houſes of the natives, ſituated in a group of ſhady trees; the inhabitants of theſe huts were ſeated on the ground, without any occupation, and none but young people roſe from their ſeats at our approach. We found here a man who had perfectly flaxen hair, a complexion much fairer than common, and his face covered with freckles. Anomalous individuals have been found among the Negroes of Africa, and the inhabitants of America, the Moluccas, and the tropical iſlands of the South Sea; but their weak habit of body, and particularly a weakneſs in their eyes, have given the greateſt room to believe, that a diſeaſe of the parents occaſioned theſe varieties *. In the man whom we

* This opinion is very ably ſet forth by M. Paauw, in the Recherches Philoſophiques ſur le Americains, vol. II. ſect. 1. Des Blafards & des Negres blancs.

ſaw,

ſaw, no ſymptom of weakneſs, and no defect in the organs of ſight could be obſerved; and therefore ſome ſlighter cauſe muſt have influenced the colour of his hair and ſkin. A gentleman cut off a lock of his hair, as well as another from a man of the common colour, and gave them both to us. The natives expreſſed ſome diſlike on loſing their lock of hair, but as he had performed the operation before they were aware, he ſoon pacified them with a few trifles. Their good temper, and their indolence, ſeem to make their reſentment very ſhort-lived, eſpecially upon trifling occaſions. 1774. SEPTEMBER.

After leaving theſe huts, we rambled ſeparately all the morning, and did not rejoin each other till it was time to return. Dr. Sparrman, with my father, had gone upon the hills, whilſt I remained in the woody ſkirts of the plain, and converſed as well as I could with the natives. They gave me the names of many diſtricts upon their iſland, of which we had not heard before, and of which we could not make uſe, for want of knowing their proper ſituations. Here I ſaw again many individuals with one leg, or arm, of an enormous ſize, in the ſame manner as I had obſerved ſome at our firſt landing, (ſee p. 383.) and one had both his legs afflicted in the ſame manner. I touched this ſwelling, and found it extremely hard; but the ſkin was not harſh and ſcaly alike in all the ſick perſons. The preternatural expanſion of the leg or arm did not appear to be a great inconvenience to them, and, as

far

1774. SEPTEMBER. far as I underſtood, they rarely feel any pain it; but in ſome the diſorder cauſed a kind of excoriation, and began to form blotches, which were marks of a greater degree of virulence. The leproſy, of which this elephantiaſis, or prodigious ſwelling, according to the opinion of the medical faculty, is a ſpecies, ſeems to be a diſeaſe particularly incident to dry, parched climates. The countries where it commits the greateſt ravages, as the coaſt of Malabar, Egypt, Paleſtine, and all Africa, are remarkable for droughts, and contain in many places vaſt tracts of ſandy deſarts. I do not mean to ſuppoſe that leproſy is the natural effect of a dry climate, but only to hint, that heat and drought may contribute to make the human body more liable to its attacks. I obſerved this day that the women of New Caledonia are hardly ſo much eſteemed by the men as thoſe of Tanna. They commonly kept at a diſtance from the men, and ſeemed fearful of offending them by a look or geſture; they were the only perſons in the family who had any employment, and ſeveral of them brought bundles of ſticks and fuel on their backs. Their inſenſible huſbands ſeldom deigned to look upon them, and continued in a kind of phlegmatic indolence, whilſt the women ſometimes indulged that ſocial cheerfulneſs, which is the diſtinguiſhing ornament of the ſex. Thus, in every country, mankind are fond of being tyrants, and the pooreſt Indian, who knows no wants but thoſe which his exiſtence requires, has already learnt

learnt to enſlave his weaker helpmate, in order to ſave himſelf the trouble of ſupplying thoſe wants, and cruelly exacts an obedience from her, which has been continued among ſavages as a curſe upon the ſex*. Conſidering theſe humiliations and cruel oppreſſions of the ſex, we have ſometimes the greateſt reaſon to admire, that the human race has perpetuated itſelf, and that the Creator has wiſely planted a motive in the female breaſt, which ſtands the teſt of every outrage, which makes them patient to ſuffer, and prevents their withdrawing from the power of their tyrants. 1774. SEPTEMBER.

After dining on board, we paſſed the afternoon aſhore again, and were ſo far ſucceſsful in our reſearches, as to obtain a beautiful ſpecies of parrot, which was entirely new to zoologiſts. It was ſhot in a plantation far exceeding every thing I had ſeen upon New Caledonia for extent, as well as for the variety and flouriſhing ſtate of the vegetables in it. There were ſeveral walks of bananas, ſeveral fields of yams and eddoes, together with ſugar-canes, and likewiſe ſome ſpecies of yamboo-trees *(eugenia)*, which we had never ſeen before. Different parts of it were ſeparated by paths, and the whole was kept in good order. Induſtrious individuals are therefore to be met with even among theſe indolent people; and when navigators have an opportunity of becoming the benefactors of ſavages, for example, by

* Gen. iii. ver. 16.

giving

1774. SEPTEMBER. giving them domeſtic animals, they ſhould ſelect ſuch people as are moſt likely to make a good uſe of their preſents.

We returned on board in the evening, after ſhooting at a mark to amuſe ſome of the natives, who ſet up their clubs for that purpoſe, and were much pleaſed with our ſuppoſed ſkill. Soon after arrived the two boats which lieutenant Pickerſgill had conducted to the weſtward, and which had been detained by contrary winds. We were fortunate enough to collect the following particulars of that intelligent officer's excurſion. Having ſet out from the ſhip, he did not approach the ſhore till he had advanced ſeveral leagues, and ſaw many turtles on the water, of which he could not ſtrike one, on account of the violence of the wind. The boats putting aſhore, found the face of the country, towards the N. W. end of the iſland, very like the part oppoſite our anchoring place, though conſiderably more fertile and cultivated, and covered with many coco-trees. The natives were as civil and inoffenſive in this place as we had found them from the beginning. Two of them, who had already been on board the ſhip, hearing that our people intended to croſs over to the iſle of Balabeea, more to the northward, took a paſſage in the cutter. One of them, whoſe name was Boobik, was a merry fellow, different in this reſpect from moſt of his countrymen; he talked a great deal to our people at firſt, and taught them is name, which they

they pronounced *booby*, with the ſame pleaſure with which he heard it. After ſome time, however, the waves riſing, and frequently waſhing into the boat, he became very ſilent, and crept into a boat-cloak, to ſcreen himſelf from the wet, and recover from the chilline ſs which the wind occaſioned on his naked body. He likewiſe grew very hungry, having taken no proviſions with him, and very thankfully received what our people offered him. His ſituation, and that of all his companions, however, became very ſoon alarming to the higheſt degree. The cutter ſprung a leak, which admitted ſuch quantities of water, that it was impoſſible to free the boat, though every body baled with his hat, or ſuch utenſil as he could find moſt fit for the purpoſe. They were preſently reduced to heave over-board a caſk of freſh water, and many other articles, in order to lighten the boat; but all was to no purpoſe, till having cleared away ſome bundles, they found the leak, which they ſtopped as well as they could for the preſent with their caps, and with rags, and proceeded for the iſle of Balabeea with all poſſible diſpatch. Mr. Pickerſgill, in the launch, met a canoe of that iſland with a few natives, who had caught a large quantity of fiſh, of which they readily ſhared out a part to him for a trifling conſideration of iron-ware. It was late in the afternoon when he arrived upon the iſland. The natives, being exactly of the ſame race as thoſe of New Caledonia, were not leſs good-tempered, and freely parted with their

1774. SEPTEMBER.

1774. SEPTEMBER. arms to our people for trifles of iron-ware, or Taheitee cloth. They alſo, at the deſire of Mr. Pickerſgill, brought him ſome freſh water.

In the evening our party retired to a few buſhes, and made a great fire, by which they broiled the fiſh which had been preſented to them, and ate their ſuppers. A number of the natives ſtill remained with them, and ſpoke of a great land to the northward, which they called Mingha, of which the inhabitants were their enemies, and very warlike. They likewiſe pointed out a ſepulchral mound or *tumulus*, where one of their chiefs lay buried, who had been killed in defence of his own country, by the hand of a native of Mingha. The appearance of a large beef-bone, which ſome of our people began to pick towards the concluſion of their ſupper, interrupted this converſation. The natives talked very loud and earneſtly to each other, looked with great ſurprize, and ſome marks of diſguſt, at our people, and at laſt went away all together, expreſſing by ſigns that they ſuſpected the ſtrangers of eating human fleſh. Our officer endeavoured to free himſelf and his ſhipmates from this ſuſpicion; but the want of language was an unſurmountable obſtacle to this undertaking, even ſuppoſing it poſſible to perſuade a ſet of people, who had never ſeen a quadruped in their lives. The next morning they went about to mend their boat, and ſpread their wet cloaths upon the ground to dry in the ſun. The natives gathered about them

them in great crouds from all parts of the iſland, and Mr. Pickerſgill found it adviſeable to draw lines on the ſand, in order to ſecure the cloaths of his people. The natives very readily came into his propoſal, and never croſſed the lines. One of them, however, ſeemed to be more ſurpriſed than all the reſt at this contrivance, and with a great deal of humour drew a circle round about himſelf, on the ground, with a ſtick; and intimated, by many ludicrous geſtures, that every body preſent ſhould keep at a diſtance from him. This little ſally was the more ſtriking, as it was extremely uncommon among the grave inhabitants of theſe countries. They ſpent the day in repairing their boats, and examining the iſland on which they had landed; and the next morning before day-break put off, in order to return. They were, however, unfortunate enough to find their repairs to little purpoſe, and therefore, in order to lighten the boat, landed on New Caledonia at ſix in the morning. They left only the rowers in the boat, and proceeded on foot, along a coaſt of near twenty-four miles, to the land abreaſt of the ſhip. One of the ſurgeon's mates, who went on this excurſion, collected a prodigious variety of new and curious ſhells upon the iſland of Ballabeca, and likewiſe met with many new ſpecies of plants, of which we did not ſee a ſingle ſpecimen in the diſtricts we had viſited; but the meaneſt and moſt unreaſonable envy taught him to conceal theſe diſcoveries from us, though he was utterly incapable of

1774. SEPTEMBER.

1774. SEPTEMBER. making uſe of them for the benefit of ſcience *. We had therefore more reaſon than ever to regret that our illneſs diſabled us from ſharing the perils of this little excurſion.

We accompanied captain Cook the next morning into the river to the eaſtward, where he went to give his friend

* It will not be improper to acquaint the reader, that we were ſo ſituated on board the Reſolution, as to meet with obſtacles in all our reſearches, from thoſe who might have been expected to give us all manner of aſſiſtance. It has always been the fate of ſcience and philoſophy to incur the contempt of ignorance, and this we might have ſuffered without repining; but as we could not purchaſe the good will of every petty tyrant with gold, we were ſtudiouſly debarred the means of drawing the leaſt advantage to ſcience from the obſervations of others, who of themſelves did not know how to make the proper uſe of a diſcovery when they had made it. Circumſtances which were known to every perſon around us, remained impenetrable myſteries to us; and it was aſſuredly not owing to the good nature of our ſhipmates, if we have been fortunate enough to obtain even ſuch trifling information, as has enabled me to give the true and exact ſituations of every place in this narrative, and in my chart. If it had been poſſible, they would have deceived even our eyes. It may ſeem extraordinary, that men of ſcience, ſent out in a ſhip belonging to the moſt enlightened nation in the world, ſhould be cramped and deprived of the means of purſuing knowledge, in a manner which would only become a ſet of barbarians; but it is certain, that the traveller who viſits the ruins of Egypt and Paleſtine, cannot experience greater mortification from the ignorant ſelfiſhneſs of Bedouins and other Arabs, than fell to our lot; ſince every diſcovery we attempted to make, was ſuppoſed to contain a treaſure, which became the object of envy. The world will, however, derive one advantage from this proceeding; we ſhall have little to offer, but what we have ſeen with our own eyes, and for the truth and preciſion of which we can be anſwerable. If there had not been a few individuals of a more liberal way of thinking, whoſe diſintereſted love for the ſciences comforted us from time to time, we ſhould in all probability have fallen victims to that malevolence, which even the poſitive commands of captain Cook were ſometimes inſufficient to keep within bounds.

Heebai

Heebaï a little pig of each ſex, in order to provide, if poſſible, a ſtock of domeſtic animals for a nation, whoſe good, inoffenſive temper ſeemed highly to deſerve ſuch a preſent. We found this man and his family at the huts where we had firſt ſeen him; and captain Cook having delivered the pigs to him, each of us contributed his mite of knowledge of the language, in order to make it intelligible to him, that the propagation of theſe animals would ſupply him, in courſe of time, with conſtant food, and that they deſerved to be carefully nurſed. He, as well as the whole family, were ſurpriſed at the ſight of theſe creatures, and at firſt expreſſed ſo much diſlike and dread of them, that they made ſigns to us to take them back. We now redoubled our efforts to convince them of their error, and at laſt prevailed upon them to keep the pigs. It muſt be allowed, that ſwine are far from being well-looking quadrupeds, and that thoſe who have never ſeen an animal of that claſs, cannot be ſuppoſed to like them at firſt ſight. Men ſeem to have had recourſe to animal food through neceſſity at firſt, as the depriving any creature of life is an act of violence, which demands a powerful cauſe, before it is made familiar by habit. When they had the choice, it ſhould ſeem that ſuch ill-looking animals as hogs were commonly rejected, till a more urgent opportunity proved, that, in ſpite of their appearance, their fleſh was as delicious as that of ſheep and oxen. The poor natives of New Cale- 1774. SEPTEMBER.

1774. SEPTEMBER. Caledonia had hitherto taſted no other animal food than fiſh and birds, and therefore the introduction of a quadruped into their œconomy, could not fail to ſurpriſe them. We walked about for ſome time among the marſhes and plantations, and came to a houſe detached from the reſt, which was encloſed by ſtakes, and behind which we ſaw a row of wooden pillars. Each of them was about a foot ſquare, and nine feet high; and on the top of each a human head was rudely carved. Here we found a ſolitary old man, who, on our pointing to theſe pillars, made ſigns that they indicated his burying-place. Nothing is more remarkable in the hiſtory of mankind, than the general concurrence of different nations, to erect a monument on the ſpot where they lie buried. To dive into the original motives for this cuſtom, with various people, would be a curious and intereſting purſuit, and might perhaps lead us to diſcover, among all nations an univerſal idea of a future ſtate.

After leaving this ſpot, we paſſed a plantation, where the natives, and particularly the women, were at work to clear, and dig up a piece of ſwampy ground, probably in order to plant it with yams or eddoes. They had an inſtrument with a long crooked, and ſharp-pointed bill, like the bill of a bird, with which they ſtirred up the ſoil. The ſame tool they frequently make uſe of as an offenſive weapon, and as ſuch I mentioned it page 385. It ſeems the

ſoil

ſoil of this country is ſo poor, as to require more than ordinary pains to make it fit for planting, eſpecially as I never obſerved the people digging in this manner, in any of the iſlands of the South Sea. We ſhot ſome curious and beautiful birds at this place, and then returned to the ſhip, where we found all the other boats hoiſted in. We landed at the watering-place after dinner, where captain Cook ordered the following inſcription to be cut into a remarkable large and ſhady tree on the beach, cloſe to the rivulet; "His Britannic Majeſty's Ship Reſolution, Sept. 1774." This being done, we rambled for the laſt time along the brook, which had ſupplied us with as much water as we had expended ſince our departure from Tanna; and having ſnatched a few plants, which our diſorder had cauſed us to overlook before, we took our laſt leave of this large iſland, and were hurried on board from our ſcene of action. 1774. SEPTEMBER.

At day-light the next morning, the ſeamen weighed the anchors, the ſhip ſoon cleared the reefs, and we ſtood along ſhore to the N. W. We had lain in this harbour exactly ſeven days and a half; but on the third night after our arrival, we were poiſoned by eating of the fiſh, by which means we loſt the opportunity of making the moſt of this ſhort ſtay. On leaving this place, we were far from being recovered, but had daily acute head-aches, and ſpaſmodic pains over the body, together with an eruption on our lips. Tueſday 13.

1774. SEPTEMBER. lips. We alſo felt ourſelves much weakened, and unfit to go through our uſual occupations; whilſt the want of freſh food greatly contributed to keep us in a lingering ſtate, and retarded our recovery. Thus we left an iſland ſituated in the weſternmoſt part of the South Pacific Ocean, not above 12 degrees diſtant from the coaſt of New Holland, and inhabited by a race of men very diſtinct from all we had hitherto ſeen in the ſame ocean. From their vicinity to New Holland, one might have been apt to ſuppoſe, that they had the ſame origin with the people of that continent; but upon comparing all the accounts of former voyagers, who have viſited New Holland, its inhabitants bear no reſemblance to one another, and as a farther proof, the vocabulary of both nations is totally different *. Their numbers appear to be very inconſiderable, and the moſt probable gueſs we would form of them, after ranging the whole northern coaſt of the iſland, does not make them amount to fifty thouſand, upon a ſea-coaſt of near two hundred leagues. The country which they inhabit, ſeems indeed to be very unfit for cultivation in moſt parts. The narrow plain which ſurrounds it, is full of ſwamps on the ſea-ſide, covered with mangroves; and this part is with much trouble drained by ditches, and dug till it is made fit for the purpoſes of

* A vocabulary of the New Holland language was obligingly communicated to us by captain Cook.

agri-

agriculture. The reſt of the plain is ſomewhat higher, but in return exceſſively dry, ſo that they are obliged to moiſten it by means of canals which conduct the water from the rivulets or pools. Beyond this ſeveral hillocks riſe, covered with a dry parched earth, where ſome ſpecies of ſhrivelled graſs, the cayputi-tree, and a few ſhrubs thrive, at a great diſtance aſunder; and from thence upwards, the interior mountains are almoſt entirely deſtitute of vegetable earth in many places, and conſiſt of a ſhining red glimmer, and large pieces of quartz. The nature of this ſoil cannot give luxuriance to the growth of vegetables; on the contrary, it is rather ſurpriſing, that ſuch a variety of ſpecies ſpring up in it, as we met with, though they are for the greateſt part dry, and of a very homely appearance. Only the woods on ſome parts of the plain, are filled with ſhrubberies, bind-weeds, gay flowers, and tufted ſhady trees. It is eaſy to be conceived, that the contraſt between Nova Caledonia, and the New Hebrides, was very ſtriking to us, who had ſo lately viſited thoſe rich and fertile iſlands, where the vegetable kingdom glories in its greateſt perfection. The difference in the character of the people was no leſs ſurpriſing. All the natives of the South Sea iſlands, excepting thoſe only which Taſman found on Tonga-Tabboo and Namoka *, made ſome attempt to drive away the ſtrangers

1774. SEPTEMBER.

* And thoſe perhaps had been informed of what had paſſed between le Maire, and the natives of Horne, Cocos, and Traitors Iſland, ſome years before.

1774. SEPTEMBER. who came to viſit them. But the people of New Caledonia at the firſt ſight of us, received us as friends; they ventured to come on board our ſhip, without the leaſt marks of fear or diſtruſt, and ſuffered us to ramble freely throughout their country as far as we pleaſed. They reſembled moſt the people of Tanna in colour, and the woollineſs of their hair; but their ſtature was ſuperior, their limbs in general more ſtout, their features more mild, open, and inoffenſive; and their cuſtoms in many reſpects very different. The peculiar character of their faces may be ſeen in the accurate portraits which Mr. Hodges has drawn of each ſex, and which are engraved for captain Cook's account of this voyage. A juſt idea of the country may likewiſe be formed, by conſulting the views which that ingenious artiſt has copied from nature. There is, however, ſome ſimilarity between their manufactures, and thoſe of Tanna; eſpecially in the ſhape of their arms, in the uſe of the rope or *becket*, (ſee p. 279.) to throw the ſpear, in the nature of the ornaments which they wear, and particularly in what I have mentioned p. 277, and p. 383*. The language, which on theſe occaſions is the ſureſt guide, is totally diſſonant; their dwellings are of a different conſtruction, and their mode of living ſeems to correſpond only in a few inſtances. The

* Their arms, their cap, their becket, and various other articles have been accurately drawn and engraved, under my father's inſpection, for captain Cook's account of this voyage.

people

people of Tanna are rich, in compariſon with thoſe of New Caledonia; their plantations furniſh them with abundance of vegetables, and if theſe ſhould fail, the woods on their ſea-ſhore are full of coco-palms, which offer an ample ſtore of fruits. At New Caledonia, the plantations yield in moſt places a ſcanty produce; and the wild country, as far as we had an opportunity of examining it, does not contain a ſingle article which could be deemed of great ſervice. On the other hand, the people of New Caledonia ſeem to be great fiſhermen, and the reefs round their iſland, give them excellent opportunities for this purpoſe, and are doubtleſs at certain ſeaſons, the reſort of turtles. As nature has been ſo ſparing here of her gifts, it is the moſt ſurpriſing, that inſtead of ſeeing the inhabitants ſavage, diſtruſtful, and warlike as at Tanna, we ſhould find them peaceable, well-diſpoſed, and unſuſpicious. It is not leſs remarkable, that in ſpite of the drought which prevails in their country, and the ſcanty ſupply of vegetable food, they ſhould have attained to a greater ſize, and a more muſcular body. Perhaps inſtead of placing the cauſes which effect diſparity of ſtature among various nations in the difference of food, this inſtance ought to teach us, to have ſome retroſpect likewiſe to the original races from which thoſe tribes are deſcended, that fell under our examination. Let us for inſtance ſuppoſe, that the people of New Caledonia are the offspring of a nation, who by living in affluence, and in a genial

1774. SEPTEMBER.

1774. SEPTEMBER. climate, have not been ſtinted in their growth; the colony which removed into the barren ſoil of New Caledonia, will probably preſerve the habit of body of their anceſtors for many generations. The people of Tanna may have undergone a contrary revolution, and being deſcended of a ſlender and ſhort race, like the Mallicolleſe, the richneſs of their preſent country may not yet entirely have taken effect. Theſe hints are ſubmitted to the learned, whoſe province it is to confirm or refute them; but on which ſide ſoever the truth may fall, I ſhall reſt equally contented, as I have adopted no particular ſyſtem.

The inoffenſive character of the people of New Caledonia appears to great advantage in their conduct towards us. They are the only people in the South Seas who have not had reaſon to complain of our arrival among them. When we conſider how eaſy it is to provoke the mariner to ſport with the lives of Indians, from the numerous examples throughout this narrative, we muſt acknowledge that it required an uncommon degree of good temper, not to draw upon themſelves a ſingle act of brutality. Thoſe philoſophers who are of opinion that the temper, the manners, and genius of a people, depend entirely upon the climate, will be at aloſs to account for the peaceful character of the inhabitants of New Caledonia. If we admit that they are only ſtrangers to diſtruſt, becauſe they have little to loſe, we ſhall not ſolve the difficulty; ſince the people of New Holland,

land, under the influence of a ſimilar climate and ſoil, and in a more wretched ſituation than the inhabitants of New Caledonia, are ſavage and unſociable. The different characters of nations ſeem therefore to depend upon a multitude of different cauſes, which have acted together during a ſeries of many ages. The inhabitants of New Caledonia do not owe their kind diſpoſition to a total ignorance of wars and diſputes; the variety of their offenſive weapons being alone ſufficient to put this matter out of doubt. By converſing with them we learnt that they have enemies, and that the people of an iſland called Mingha had a very different character from their own. I was once in a boat with captain Cook and Mr. Wales, when one of the natives acquainted us by very ſignificant and intelligible geſtures, that they had enemies who feaſted on human fleſh; and the behaviour of the inhabitants of Balabeea, on ſeeing our people eat ſalt beef, which they miſtook for human fleſh, contributes to prove that ſuch a cuſtom is not unknown to them, and that they look upon it with horror and deteſtation. Civilization is therefore much farther advanced in this reſpect among them, than with their more opulent neighbours. That higher degree of culture, where the underſtanding is ſufficiently enlightened to remove the unjuſt contempt ſhewn to the fair ſex, is however unknown to them; their temper is too grave to be captivated by female blandiſhments, or to ſet a proper value upon the refined enjoyments

1774. SEPTEMBER.

1774. SEPTEMBER. joyments of life. They are obliged to work hard, at times, for the means of ſubſiſtence; but their leiſure hours are ſpent in indolence, without thoſe little recreations which contribute ſo much to the happineſs of mankind, and diffuſe a ſpirit of cheerfulneſs and vivacity throughout the Society and Friendly Iſlands. Beſides the little whiſtle which I have mentioned above, we never ſaw a muſical inſtrument among the people of New Caledonia. Their dances and ſongs are equally unknown to us; and what we obſerved during our ſhort ſtay, gave us reaſon to ſuppoſe, that even laughter is an uncommon gueſt among them. They are likewiſe niggards of ſpeech, and we rarely met with individuals among them, who took a pleaſure in holding converſe with us. Their language therefore ſeems to be uncultivated, and their pronunciation ſo indiſtinct, that the vocabularies which ſeveral of our ſhipmates collected, diſagreed remarkably. Though they have few harſh conſonants, they have a frequent return of gutturals and ſometimes a naſal ſound, or *rhiniſmus*, which commonly puzzled thoſe who were not acquainted with any other language than the Engliſh. Perhaps, their plantations lying remote from each other, are the means of preventing that familiar intercourſe which would gradually give life to the pleaſures of ſociety. As their country ſeems not to be very fit for agriculture, the beſt means to forward civilization among them might be the introduction of quadrupeds, ſuch as they

they ſhould not find it difficult to maintain ; for inſtance, a few hogs, to keep near their huts, and goats to run wild. The latter in all probabilily would thrive extremely well in that dry climate, and afford an excellent article of food. 1774. SEPTEMBER.

That ſimplicity which is remarkable in their domeſtic life, cannot fail to be conſpicuous in their government. Teàbooma was acknowledged as a chief in the diſtrict oppoſite the ſhip's anchoring-place; but the poverty of the country did not afford him great and excluſive advantages, and luxury being hitherto unknown, he lived like the reſt of his countrymen. Among a people ſo ſimple we cannot expect exterior marks of deference ; and the only act which ſeemed to indicate a certain degree of homage on their part, conſiſted in delivering to the chief, the preſents which they had received from Mr. Pickerſgill at their firſt interview. The neighbouring diſtricts are not under the government of Teàbooma, and probably have their own chiefs ; or perhaps each family forms a little kingdom of its own, which is directed by its patriarch, as muſt be the caſe in all infant ſtates. We cannot attempt to extend our obſervations to the religion of the natives, of which, in the ſpace of eight days, we had no opportunity of acquiring any information. We did not obſerve any thing which might diſtantly be conſtrued into a religious act, nor remark a ſingle cuſtom which had the leaſt colour of ſuperſtition. Probably the

ſimplicity

1774. SEPTEMBER.

ſimplicity of their ideas on this ſubject, correſponds with the whole tenour of their character. There is nothing to diſprove this ſuppoſition, unleſs the ſlight marks which point out their burying-places, ſhould be deemed indications that ſome ceremonies attend their funerals. Death, the moſt remarkable ſcene in the oeconomy of human affairs, is commonly honoured with ſome unuſual act by the ſurvivors; and grief is particularly apt to be extravagant. It remains unknown whether the mortality is great or moderate at New Caledonia, and what diſeaſes are moſt fatal in that iſland. We ſaw no other than the elephantiaſis, a ſort of leproſy, which I have already mentioned, and which was very common. However, I never obſerved this evil in ſo violent a degree, that the patient ſeemed to be in danger of loſing his life by it. Upon the whole, a great multitude of diſeaſes are the conſequences of unbounded luxury, and cannot take place among perſons ſo little refined as thoſe of New Caledonia. I ſaw ſome among them whoſe grey hair and wrinkles indicated a great age; but it was impoſſible to converſe with them upon ſuch an abſtract idea as age, ſuppoſing they took the pains to number their years. We were not able to make ourſelves underſtood when we attempted to make enquiries at Taheitee concerning the age of the inhabitants, though our knowledge of their language was very extenſive, when compared with the few words which we had ſnatched up in haſte on New Caledonia.

Caledonia. After theſe few remarks, I reſume the narrative of the voyage. 1774. SEPTEMBER.

We ſteered between the north and weſt, along the reefs which encloſe New Caledonia, in order to aſcertain the poſition of lands which we had indiſtinctly ſeen in that quarter. Having advanced towards Balabeea, we found the reefs running northerly, and in ſome places near ſix leagues from the ſhore. Man of war birds, boobies, and tropic birds frequented this part of the ſea in great numbers, hovering about our ſhip. We diſcovered on the 15th, that Thurſday 15. there were three iſlands to the north of the weſt end of New Caledonia; but, as the reef extended very far to the eaſt of them, and we could find no paſſage, it was impoſſible to form an exact idea of their figure and extent. The largeſt of them might be about ſeven leagues long. We were becalmed on the 15th, within four miles of the reef, towards which a heavy ſwell drifted us very viſibly. In order to prevent ſtriking on theſe dangerous rocks, we hoiſted out two boats, and the crew were obliged to labour very hard to tow the ſhip off. A faint breeze in the evening gave them ſome reſpite, but at midnight they were obliged to return to their work, releaſing each other from time to time. The morning was ſo calm that we went out Friday 16. to ſhoot birds, but had little ſucceſs. We did not obtain a breeze till the evening came on, and then, inſtead of loſing our time in farther reſearches to the northward, where we

1774. SEPTEMBER. tried in vain to find a paſſage, we left that part, and prepared to range the ſouth-eaſt end of New Caledonia. The northernmoſt lands, which we had ſeen, lie in 19° 37′ S. and 163° 40′ E.

Saturday 17. The next morning we paſſed the diſtrict of Ballàdd, where we had lain at anchor. Repeated calms rendered our courſe very tedious; we did not advance above twenty leagues in two days, and ſtill ſeeing the land to the ſouth of us, were apprehenſive of coming late to New Zeeland, where it was now ſaid we ſhould prepare for the laſt ſouthern cruize. We continued however ſtanding to the eaſtward, and ſomewhat ſoutherly, having gentle breezes which laſted ſeveral hours, between the calm intervals. On the

Thurſday 22. 22d, in the evening, we ſaw a remarkable bluff point on the land, which was named Cape Coronation, in commemoration of that day. The reefs which had encloſed the northern coaſts of New Caledonia, did not extend to this part; but as we had hitherto kept at the diſtane of four or five leagues, we could not diſcern any thing of the nature of the country, except that the ridge of mountains continued to run along of the ſame height as near our anchoring-place, and without any remarkable prominences or peaks. In the morning we ſaw a ſpot of ground, which could not be leſs than half a mile in length, from whence a quantity of ſmoke aſcended. The ſea coaſt near it was covered with innumerable columnar forms, of a conſiderable height, which

which we diſtinguiſhed by the help of our glaſſes. Some of them ſtood remote from each other, but far the greater part were placed in cloſe, and ſeemingly compact, groups. The nature of the pillars of Baſaltes, which are found in many parts of the world *, gave us ſome reaſon to look upon theſe extraordinary appearances as ſo many colonnades of Baſaltes; and having ſo lately ſeen ſeveral volcanoes in the neighbourhood, and one ſo near as Tanna, we were greatly ſtrengthened in this opinion, it being aſſerted by the moſt judicious and experienced mineralogiſts, that baſaltes is a volcanic production. In the evening, having left Cape Coronation aſtern, we diſcerned a vaſt quantity of theſe columnar forms projecting into the ſea, on a flat point. 1774. SEPTEMBER.

Early on the 24th, we came in ſight of a cape which terminated New Caledonia to the eaſt; it was rather ſteep, but of no great height, and perfectly level at the top to a conſiderable diſtance. A number of pillars ſtood upon it, which ſomething invalidated the opinion of their being baſalt-columns. This cape, which captain Cook named Queen Charlotte's Foreland, lies in 22° 15′ S. and 167° 15′ E. In the evening, towards ſix o'clock, another iſland was diſcovered far to the ſouth-eaſt from the maſt-head, and the next morning ſeveral ſmall iſlands appeared between

* Near Aſſuan, or Syene, in Upper Egypt; at Bolſena in Italy; near Hadié in Arabia Felix; at Hildeſheim, Stolpen, and Yauer, in different parts of Germany; in the Hebrides of Scotland; and in the county of Antrim in Ireland.

1774. SEPTEMBER. New Caledonia and this new diſcovery, which the inſtability of the wind would not permit us to examine. We obſerved, however, that a great reef encloſed theſe iſlands, which ſeemed entirely to preclude a paſſage, and obliged us to ſtand on to the eaſtward, in order to weather all the diſtant land in ſight. This part of our cruize was extremely diſagreeable and tantalizing; we longed to have an opportunity of examining the country, and were at preſent in great diſtreſs for freſh food. A ſcanty portion of yams remained, which were eaten as dainties at the officers tables; but the crew had not taſted any refreſhments ſince our departure from Namoka. The appearance of new lands made but little amends for the involuntary faſt which we kept, and only ſupported our hopes of making ſome fortunate diſcovery, which might perhaps offer us freſh ſupplies.

We did not obtain a ſettled breeze till the 26th in the evening, when we immediately began to ply to windward, in order to double the large iſland before us. It conſiſted of a mountain of leſs elevation than New Caledonia, and eaſy of aſcent, every where ſurrounded by flat land, on which the columnar bodies were innumerable. As we made ſeveral trips within two miles in-ſhore, we were at laſt convinced that they were nothing elſe than trees, which on a prodigious tall ſtem had ſhort and ſlender branches, not diſcernible at a diſtance.

We

We doubled the eaſtermoſt extremity of this iſland, and of its reefs, on the 28th, at day-break, and then bore away along its ſouth-eaſt ſhore. Captain Cook gave it the name of Iſle of Pines, ſuſpecting the columnar trees upon it to be of that kind. It ſeems to be about eighteen leagues in circumference, and the middle is ſituated in 22° 40′ S. and 167° 40′ E. The ſouth-eaſt wind, which had now ſet in very freſh, cooled the air ſo much in this latitude, that the thermometer ſunk to 68°, which cauſed a diſagreeable ſenſation to our bodies, long uſed to a warmer climate. The next day we found a paſſage between ſeveral reefs, and came to an anchor off a little iſland, not above two miles in circuit, which was covered with tall columnar trees, though it was intirely flat and ſandy. The ſouth end of New Caledonia was not above ſix leagues diſtant from hence, and the ſouthern coaſt of that iſland ſeemed to run nearly parallel to the northern, giving the whole a long, narrow ſhape. This ſouth point, which was called the Prince of Wales's Foreland, lies in 22° 30′ S. and 166° 58′ E.

1774. SEPTEMBER.

Thurſday 29.

We hoiſted a boat out immediately, and rowed to the little iſlet, which was about a mile and a half from us. It was ſurrounded with a ſmall reef of its own, in which we found a narrow paſſage, containing many rocks, notwithſtanding which we landed with ſafety. The tall trees immediately demanded our firſt attention, and we found that they

1774. SEPTEMBER. they belonged to the genus of cypreſſes. They were remarkably ſtrait, and at leaſt ninety or a hundred feet high. Their branches grew round the ſtem, forming little tufts, but ſeldom exceeded the length of ten feet, and were very ſlender in proportion. A variety of other trees and ſhrubs grew up between them, and rendered this little ſpot the reſort of a great number of birds. We ſaw here alſo ſome ſcurvy-graſs, and another plant *(tetragonia)*, which we commonly made uſe of at New Zeeland in our ſoups. Captain Cook returned to the ſhip with us, after this diſcovery, intending to land again after dinner, in order to cut down ſome of the trees, and to collect ſome greens. We met with a variety of plants in the afternoon, which quite ſurpriſed us, on ſuch a confined ſpot. We alſo ſaw ſome fire-places on its ſandy ſhores, on which lay the remains of ſeveral turtles, which had probably afforded a delicious repaſt to ſome of the natives. A ſpecies of hawk was ſhot, which proved to be the common *falco haliaëtos*, or oſprey *; a kind of fly-catcher likewiſe fell into our hands, which was not known before; but beſides this we ſaw ſeveral large beautiful pigeons, which we could not ſhoot. Flat-tailed water-ſnakes *(anguis platura)* were likewiſe numerous upon the iſland. The cypreſs-trees were found to be exceeding good timber, and the younger ones were very elaſtic, and fit for ſtudding

* See Mr. Pennant's Britiſh Zoology.

ſail-

ſail-booms. After rambling about this little ſpot till near ſun-ſet, we all returned on board, and at day-light the next morning, weighed the anchor, and ſailed ſlowly on to clear the reefs. Captain Cook gave this little iſlet the name of Botany Iſland, becauſe it contained in ſo ſmall a ſpace a *flora* of near thirty ſpecies, among which we ſaw ſeveral new ones. Its ſituation is nearly 22° 28′ S. and 167° 16′ E. Its ſoil is very ſandy on the ſhores, but in the interior part mixed with vegetable earth, from the trees and plants which continually decay on it, without being cleared away by human induſtry. Whilſt we lay at anchor, the firſt lieutenant caught a fiſh, exactly of the ſame ſpecies with that which poiſoned captain Cook, my father, and myſelf. He ordered it to be cleaned and boiled, in ſpite of the earneſt repreſentations of all his meſſmates, who warned him againſt its pernicious effects. It was at laſt ſet before him, by his poſitive orders, and his friends found no other means to ſave him, than to ridicule his mad deſign. Their humorous and ſatirical remarks had a better effect than friendly admonitions, and he deſiſted from the attempt. A little dog was, however, unfortunate enough to eat of the entrails of the fiſh, and lay ſeveral days in ſuch exquiſite torments, that it was at laſt thrown overboard, to put an end to its pain and miſery. This circumſtance proves to what great diſtreſſes we were now driven for want of freſh food, ſince even the riſk of being poiſoned was made light of,

1774. SEPTEMBER. Friday 30.

1774. SEPTEMBER. of, for the ſake of a ſingle meal. All our officers, who had made ſeveral voyages round the world, and experienced a multiplicity of hardſhips, acknowledged at preſent, that all their former ſufferings were not to be compared to thoſe of the preſent voyage, and that they had never before ſo thoroughly loathed a ſalt diet. Captain Cook had made a proviſion of dried hams for the voyage, which by length of time were much corrupted; all the fat being converted into a rancid oil, and the ſalt having filled the fleſh with a quantity of alkaline concretions like tartar. However, as often as this putrid and loathſome meat was carried to table, which happened once a week, the petty officers devoured it with wiſtful looks, and ſpoke of our good fortune ſo feelingly, that it would have given pain to a ſavage. It was owing to our having ſuch an excellent preſervative as ſour-krout on board, that the ſcurvy did not at this time make any conſiderable progreſs amongſt us; but our ſituation was indeed wretched enough, without the additional horrors of diſeaſe.

We were becalmed in the evening among the reefs, which ſurrounded us on all ſides, and made our ſituation dangerous, on account of the tides and currents, as well as for want of anchoring-ground, having ſounded in vain with a line of 150 fathoms. At half paſt ſeven o'clock we ſaw a ball of fire to the northward, in ſize and ſplendor reſembling the ſun, though ſomewhat paler. It burſt a few

few moments after, and left behind it ſeveral bright ſparks, of which the largeſt, of an oblong ſhape, moved quickly out of our horizon, whilſt a kind of bluiſh flame followed, and marked its courſe. Some heard a hiſſing noiſe, which accompanied the ſwift deſcent of this meteor. Our ſhipmates expected a freſh gale after its appearance, having frequently obſerved the ſame to enſue upon ſimilar occaſions. And in fact, whatever may be the relation between this phænomenon, and the motion of the atmoſphere, or whether it was accident, their predictions were verified the ſame night. A briſk gale ſprung up, which ſettled at ſouth, the next morning, and permitted us to direct our courſe E. by S. and S. S. E. from New Caledonia. This iſland, the largeſt hitherto diſcovered in the South Seas between the tropics, remains entirely unexplored on its ſouth ſide. The direction and outline of its northern coaſt, was ſketched out during the ſhort time which we could afford to ſpend on this valuable diſcovery; but its animals, vegetables, and minerals ſtill remain untouched, and offer an ample field to the naturaliſt. The appearance of cypreſs-trees on the eaſtern part, ſeems to prove that the nature of the ſoil, and the mineral productions are totally different in that part, from thoſe of Balladd, of which we had a curſory view; and from what we ſaw on the little ſandy Botany Iſland, a diſtinct ſet of plants muſt there cover the ground, and various unknown birds inhabit the woods. Thus it ſtill

1774. SEPTEMBER.

OCTOBER. Saturday 1.

1774. OCTOBER. remains for future navigators, to continue our diſcoveries in the South Seas, and to take more time in inveſtigating their productions. Several parts of the Pacific Ocean are ſtill untouched by former tracks; for inſtance, the ſpace between 10° S. and the line, acroſs the whole ocean, from America to New Britain; the ſpace between 10° S. and 14° S. included between the meridian of 140° and 160° W. the ſpace included between the parallels of 30° and 20° S. and the meridian of 140° and 175° weſt; the ſpace between the ſouthernmoſt of the Friendly Iſlands, and New Caledonia, and that between New Caledonia and New Holland. M. de Surville's track, which I have mentioned vol. I. p. 238, is the only one which lies between theſe two countries. But New Guinea, New Britain, and all the lands in that neighbourhood, obviouſly require to be more minutely examined, and would doubtleſs reward the navigator by a world of new and important diſcoveries. All theſe diſtricts of the South Sea being ſearched, the northern part of the ſame ſea will require ſeveral voyages before it can be thoroughly explored.

Sunday 2. It fell calm again on the 2d in the forenoon, and ſeveral ſharks appearing about the ſhip, one of them was caught, and divided inſtantly among the whole ſhip's company. We had our ſhare of it, which the keen ſauce of hunger made very delicious to our palate, though it was in fact very oily.

We

We ſoon recovered a weſterly breeze, which permitted us to go to the S. S. E. after croſſing the tropic of capricorn. 1774. OCTOBER.

On the fifth in the afternoon, we had ſight of two albatroſſes again, being between the 26th and 27th degree of ſouth latitude. The calm which happened the day after, permitted our officers to go out in a boat, in order to ſhoot ſome birds; but after toiling the whole day, they brought on board only four, of which two were petrels, and two albatroſſes. We were now once more on the confines of the eaſterly trade-wind, which ſo near the ſolſtice became variable as ſoon as we had paſſed the tropic. On the 7th in the afternoon, we had a gentle breeze with which we ſailed between the ſouth and weſt; captain Cook being deſirous to fall in with the weſt coaſt of New Zeeland, in order to eſcape the ſame difficulties which we had experienced the year before in going into Cook's Strait. In the evening of the 8th, a numerous ſhoal of large porpeſſes paſſed the ſhip, and played about it, leaping frequently out of the water. One of them was ſtruck with an harpoon, and by giving it a great deal of line, we had time to hoiſt a boat out, and to kill it with five muſket ſhot. It was of that ſpecies which the ancients called the dolphin *, and which, with the common porpeſs, is found in every ſea. It was ſix feet long, and its dugs were full of Wedneſday 5.

* Δελφιν, Ariſtot. *Delphinus delphis*, Linn.

1774. OCTOBER. milk, it being a viviparous animal of the claſs which ſuckle their own young. It was cut up the next morning, and the meat diſtributed to the ſhip's company; its colour was not very inviting, being almoſt black; but its taſte after cutting away all the fat, was very like beef, only ſomewhat dry. We dined on it very heartily, and were very well contented with our good fortune. We ſaw land the ſame morning, which proved to be a ſmall iſland, of moderate elevation, wholly covered with cypreſs-trees, reſembling thoſe we had found on Botany Iſland. We had ſoundings at a good diſtance, in twenty fathom more or leſs, and about nine o'clock were abreaſt of it. It ſeemed to be about two or three miles long, was very ſteep, almoſt entirely covered with woods, and to appearance uninhabited. Many aquatic fowls of different ſpecies were obſerved about it, which gave us hopes of making at leaſt a proviſion of another freſh meal. We haſtened to finiſh our dinner, and went on ſhore with captain Cook in two boats. Several large broken rocks project into the ſea from the iſland, on all ſides. We were fortunate enough to find a little cove ſo well ſheltered by ſome of theſe rocks, that our boats lay very ſafe in it, and were able to land without wetting a foot. A heap of large ſtones formed a kind of beach, beyond which the ſhore roſe very ſteep, and in ſome parts perpendicular. We found a little rill which deſcended in a cleft between two hills; and following the courſe of it,

we

we penetrated into the woods with great difficulty, through a thick tiſſue of bindweeds and climbers. However, as ſoon as we had paſſed through this outward fence, we found the foreſt tolerably clear of underwood, and had not the leaſt difficulty to walk forwards. The rocks of this iſland conſiſted of the common yellowiſh clayey ſtone, which we had found at New Zeeland; and in ſome places we met with ſmall bits of porous reddiſh lava, which ſeemed to be decaying, but made us ſuſpect this iſland to have had a volcano. The vegetables which we found upon it, throve with great luxuriance in a rich ſtratum of black mould, accumulated during ages paſt, from decaying trees and plants. The greateſt number of ſpecies which we met with were well known to us, as belonging to the flora of New Zeeland, but they appeared here with all the advantages which a milder climate, and an exuberant ſoil could give them. The New Zeeland flag *(phormium tenax)*, ſhot ſtalks eight or nine feet high, having flowers much larger and brighter than we had ſeen at Queen Charlotte's Sound. The productions of New Zeeland were here united to thoſe of New Caledonia, and the New Hebrides; for the cypreſs of the one, and the cabbage palm which we had ſeen in the latter, flouriſhed here in the greateſt perfection. It was chiefly on theſe two ſpecies, that we beſtowed our attention; the former ſupplied the carpenter with ſeveral ſpare booms, and pieces of timber; and the

1774. OCTOBER.

latter

1774. OCTOBER. latter offered us a moſt welcome and palatable refreſhment. We cut down ſeveral of them, and took on board the central ſhoot, or heart, which in taſte more reſembles an almond than a cabbage. The animal creation, like the vegetable, conſiſted chiefly of the ſame ſpecies which we found at New Zeeland. The parrots and parroquets were infinitely brighter coloured, though evidently of the ſame ſpecies; but the pigeon was exactly the ſame. We found beſides theſe, a number of ſmall birds, peculiar to this ſpot, ſome of which were very beautiful. On the beach we found ſeveral ſucculent plants, ſuch as a ſpecies of *tetragonia*, and a *meſembryanthemum*, of which we gathered a quantity to boil in our ſoups. The melody of the birds was very pleaſing in this little deſerted ſpot, which if it had been of a greater ſize, would have been unexceptionable for an European ſettlement. We put off from it late in the evening, and when we arrived on board, we greatly regretted that we had not thought of leaving a hog of each ſex, which would doubtleſs have propagated undiſturbed, and in the ſpace of a few years ſtocked the iſland, ſo as to become uſeful to future navigators. Captain Cook gave this pretty little ſpot, the name of Norfolk Iſland; it is ſituated in 29° 2′ 30″ S. and 168° 16′ E. Whilſt we had examined the woods, ſome of the boats' crew had been no leſs buſy in catching fiſh, having been fortunate enough to meet with a pool, where they had come in at high water. The tops of the cab-

bage-

bage-palm, theſe fiſh, and the birds which we had ſhot, afforded us an excellent refreſhment for a day or two. We paſſed the S. E. end of the iſland the next morning, and ſaw a large ſingle rock off that end. We ſounded repeatedly all the forenoon, and found bottom at thirty and forty fathom, to the diſtance of eight leagues and upwards from the iſland. The vaſt number of boobies, and ſhearwaters, which were continually catching fiſh about us, by darting down into the ſea, indicated that this was a kind of fiſhing-bank. At one o'clock in the afternoon, we were out of ſoundings, and advanced with a freſh breeze towards New Zeeland, where we could expect to meet with regular refreſhments after our tropical cruize, which towards the latter end had greatly weakened the crew, by confining them to a putrid ſalt-diet, and which had proved particularly fatal to the officers and ourſelves, by means of the poiſonous fiſhes that unfortunately fell in our way. 1774. OCTOBER.

We made ſuch ſpeed, attended by flocks of pintadas, petrels, and albatroſſes, that we made the coaſt of New Zeeland on the 17th, early in the morning, after having heavy dews for two nights before, which are commonly reckoned ſigns of land. The part of New Zeeland which we now fell in with, was Mount Egmont, that prodigious peak which forms the north point of Cook's Strait coming from the weſt. It appeared to be covered with ſnow and ice nearly from the middle to the ſummit, of which we had only Monday 17.

1774. OCTOBER. only a glimpſe now and then, when the clouds broke which involved it. Its appearance is remarkably majeſtic, and the neighbouring hills look like dwarfs in compariſon. It ſtands upon, or rather its baſe gradually flattens into an extenſive plain on all ſides; and its ſummit, tapering gradually, terminates in a ſmall point. Its height is ſuppoſed to be not much inferior to the peak of Teneriff, from the ſpace which the ſnow occupies on it.

The breeze, which had hitherto been moderate, now changed into a hard gale, which carried us forward at the rate of eight knots an hour; and we felt the air very ſharp and uncomfortable, the thermometer ſtanding at 58°. We now eſteemed ourſelves happy to be on the weſt coaſt of New Zeeland, where this gale was favourable, which on the eaſt ſide would have been furiouſly againſt us. The next

Tueſday 18. morning it hurried us paſt Cape Stephens, Admiralty Bay, and Point Jackſon. As ſoon as we entered Queen Charlotte's Sound, it only blew in intermittent guſts, with the help of which we came ſafely to an anchor, the third time during this voyage, in Ship Cove, which we had left near eleven months before. The ſight of each well-known object, however bleak and ſavage its appearance, conveyed a pleaſing ſenſation, and the hope of recruiting our waſted ſpirits and ſtrength, inſpired unuſual chearfulneſs.

CHAP.

1774. OCTOBER.

CHAP. IV.

Third and laſt ſtay at Queen Charlotte's Sound, in New Zeeland.

REPEATED ſhowers, and chilling ſqualls of wind, gave us a rough reception on the wild ſhores of New Zeeland. The ſeaſon was not yet far advanced in this raw climate, and the withered foliage of the laſt year, had not made room on many trees for the verdure of ſpring. After dinner, we went on ſhore to examine the beach where we had twice before fixed our tents during this voyage, being deſirous of ſeeing what was become of the bottle which contained a letter to captain Furneaux. Before we landed we took notice of a ſmall flock of ſhags, which had built their neſts on ſome trees hanging over the water; a ſign that the cove had not lately been viſited by men. Indeed we have reaſon to ſuppoſe that the natives dwell in the interior receſſes of the bay during winter, thoſe parts being probably reſorted to by the fiſh at that inhoſpitable ſeaſon. After diſlodging the ſhags, and killing ſome of their young, which, though fledged, were yet too ſtupid to fly away, we landed, and were preſently convinced that an European ſhip had viſited this place after our departure in November laſt. Tueſday 18.

1774. OCTOBER. Many trees which we had left ſtanding were cut down with ſaws and other tools unknown to the natives; the bottle was removed, and other indubitable veſtiges of the new viſitation remained. The plantations which we had formerly made were almoſt entirely deſtroyed, being partly rooted out, and partly ſtifled by the indigenous weeds, which grew luxuriantly in the ſoil after it had been turned up. Our ſailors dragged a net ſeveral times, but to no purpoſe; however, we were ſomewhat more ſucceſsful after our return to the ſhip, where ſeveral fiſh were caught with the hook and line. Amongſt others, a fine ſea-bream *(ſparus pagrus)*, weighing eleven pounds, was taken, it being one of thoſe ſpecies which are to be met with in almoſt every ocean *. About ſunſet a cannon was fired, with a view to apprize the natives of our arrival, if any of them happened to be within hearing. It was our intereſt to have them near us, in order to ſupply us with fiſh, which our ſailors were not expert enough to catch in any quantity, ſuppoſing we could have diſpenſed with their labours in repairing the rigging, &c.

Wedneſd. 19. At day-break all our people began to warp the ſhip deeper into the cove, and about nine o'clock they had brought her into a convenient ſituation very near the ſhore. We profited by an interval of fair weather, in order to viſit

* It is caught on the coaſts of England, in the Mediterranean, at the Cape of Good Hope, and in the South Seas.

the

the beach, where we once more pitched our tents. The laſt year's generation of birds, unacquainted with the treacherous arms of Europeans, ſat patiently till we came near enough not to run the riſk of miſſing them; and thus we not only recruited our collection, but likewiſe provided a delicious refreſhment. The creepers in particular, and ſeveral ſmaller ſpecies, were to the full as grateful to the palate as ortolans; and every land-bird of this part of New Zeeland, hawks excepted, would have been reliſhed at the moſt luxurious tables. 1774. OCTOBER.

In the afternoon we accompanied captain Cook to Canibal Cove, the next to the northward of our anchoring-place. The ſhores of this cove we knew to be rich in celery and ſcurvy-graſs, which it was the captain's conſtant care to provide for his crew, wherever they were to be had. In our rambles through the woods at this place we found a true cabbage-palm *(areca oleracea)*, of the ſame ſort which we had ſeen at Norfolk Iſland. Its ſituation in this high latitude was ſomewhat ſurpriſing, and ſeems to prove that this ſpecies is of a more hardy nature than the reſt in the ſame claſs. We returned on board with a rich load of greens, very acceptable to all our ſhipmates, but eyed with peculiar pleaſure by all thoſe who had been poiſoned, and who hoped, by the uſe of this wholeſome diet, to be reſtored to health and ſtrength, which they had never enjoyed ſince that unfortunate event. Another cannon was fired in the

1774. OCTOBER. evening, as no natives had hitherto made their appearance.

The next day we experienced dreadful gales, which coming over the bleak and ſnow-capt alps to the ſouth of us, chilled the air moſt uncomfortably, and at laſt brought on heavy rains. The wind abated the day following, but ſhowers and thick fogs continued till the evening. A N. W. wind then ſpringing up, chaſed the clouds from the Saturday 22. mountains, &c. The ſun aroſe in all his ſplendor the next morning; the choir of feathered ſongſters was heard on all ſides for the firſt time ſince our arrival, announcing a mild vernal day, and ſummoned us into the woods. Many of our officers immediately embraced this opportunity of recreation, and we accompanied captain Cook in a boat, coaſting the ſhores towards Point Jackſon, and landing from time to time in the different coves on our way. The afternoon was ſpent in an excurſion to the Hippah-rock, on which we made a fire to allure the natives, being very deſirous of their company. We likewiſe viſited the cabbage-garden on Motu-Aro, and found the plants ſhot into ſeed, which had been for the greateſt part conſumed by the birds. In the evening all the ſportſmen returned loaded with birds; the different boats' crews had collected freſh ſupplies of greens, and the reſt had caught fiſh during the fair weather. All theſe ſucceſſes contributed to make a kind of general feſtival in the ſhip, which the levity of the mariners

mariners rendered the more chearful, as every paſt diſcomfort was already forgotten. 1774. OCTOBER.

Having waited in vain another day for the appearance of the natives, we reſolved to go in queſt of them into the ſouthern creeks on the 24th. That morning, however, at day-break, two canoes appeared off the point of Shag Cove with their ſails ſet; but they were no ſooner in ſight of the ſhip, than the ſail was inſtantly let down, and the people betook themſelves to paddling very faſt back again. Their reſerve only made us more deſirous to have ſome intercourſe with them, as it appeared to be a mark of fear or diſtruſt. Captain Cook ſet out in his boat with us, and we came into Shag Cove, where we paſſed ſome time ſhooting ſhags and ſea-pies, of which we found great numbers. At laſt, however, we heard ſome ſhouts on the ſouth ſhore of the cove, and coming towards that part, diſcerned ſeveral natives who had retired to the upper part of the hills, whilſt only three or four remained below on a riſing, where ſeveral huts were concealed in the woods. Here we found their canoes hauled on the beach, and immediately landing, made ſigns for theſe people to come to us. They heſitated a little; then one deſcended, and having joined noſes with us, the uſual ſign of friendſhip, the reſt came down, and thoſe who had aſcended the higher parts likewiſe joined us. They were all dreſſed in ſhaggy cloaks, which were old and ragged; their hair hung about their heads in diſ- Monday 24.

order,

1774. OCTOBER. order, and filth and ſtench announced them even at a diſtance. We did not remember to have ſeen above three or four of them at our former ſtay in this ſound; but having learnt their names, enquired concerning many of their countrymen who were better known to us. They gave us an anſwer which was infinitely too complex to be intelligible to us; but we could collect that they ſpoke of a battle, and mentioned the death of ſeveral of the natives. They continued from time to time to aſk if we were diſpleaſed with them, and ſeemed to be very apprehenſive that our preſent proteſtations of friendſhip were not quite ſincere. We ſuſpected from this circumſtance, that a fatal miſunderſtanding had happened between the natives and the crew of ſome European ſhip, and we naturally thought of our conſort the Adventure. However, far from confirming the natives in their fears, we endeavoured by every method to gain their confidence, in which we ſucceeded very well, by waving the ſubject of our diſcourſe, and aſking if they had any fiſh to ſell. They ran to their canoes immediately, and clearing away the mats with which they were covered, produced a vaſt quantity of fiſh, probably caught the ſame morning. For a few pieces of Taheitian cloth, a nail, ſome medals, and a bit of red baize, we bought a ſufficient quantity to ſupply our whole ſhip's company, and ſo far gained the confidence of the natives, that they promiſed to come to the ſhip the next day. One of them, of a middle age,

age, who ſeemed to be the principal man in this ſmall village, told us his name was Peeterré, and ſhewed himſelf the friendlieſt of them all. We parted from them, after admiring their bold ſpirit, which diſdained concealment, at the moment when they were filled with apprehenſions that we ſhould take advantage of our ſuperiority of numbers. We were indeed ignorant at that time how much reaſon they had to dread our reſentment, a circumſtance which gives ſtill greater luſtre to their bravery. 1774. OCTOBER.

They were indeed as good as their word, and came to us at ſun-riſe the next morning, in five canoes, ſelling a great quantity of fine fiſh, and thus reſtoring affluence on our tables. Having parted with their fiſh, they produced a number of pieces of green nephritic ſtone, wrought into chiſſels and various ornaments, which they eagerly exchanged for Taheitian and Engliſh cloth, as well as iron ware. Not content with what they could collect on board, ſome of them went to the beach, where a number of our people were employed in watering, wooding, &c. and where Mr. Wales had once more fixed his obſervatory. Here they made many acquiſitions, and then all went to paſs the night on a neighbouring beach. They roſe at day-break, and caught abundance of fiſh, with which they returned to us, continuing to ſupply us every day in the ſame manner. Their favourite place of reſort was, however, our watering-place; for there they met with ſeveral marines, who took a plea- Tueſday 25.

1774. OCTOBER. a pleaſure in converſing with them, as well as they could, for hours together. It appears this kind of familiar intercourſe ſuited their diſpoſition, for they ſoon became ſo intimate as to impart to their new friends a tale, of which the particulars were of the utmoſt importance to us. They related, that an European veſſel had put into the harbour ſome time ago; but that in a quarrel with the inhabitants, all her people had been killed and eaten. This intelligence alarmed us greatly, as we apprehended that this veſſel was moſt probably the Adventure. The natives were repeatedly queſtioned, and in every converſation we diſcovered ſome additional circumſtances, by which the fact was more clearly eſtabliſhed. At laſt, however, obſerving that our enquiries on this ſubject were frequently repeated, they reſolved to give us no farther information, and by threats ſtopped ſhort one of their own brethren, who had been prevailed upon to ſpeak once more on the ſubject. Captain Cook being very deſirous of obtaining ſome certainty concerning the fate of the Adventure, called Peeterré and another native into the cabin, both of whom denied that any harm had been done to the Europeans. We made two pieces of paper, to repreſent the two ſhips, and drew the figure of the Sound on a larger piece; then drawing the two ſhips into the Sound, and out of it again, as often as they had touched at and left it, including our laſt departure, we ſtopped a while, and at laſt proceeded to bring our

ſhip

ſhip in again: but the natives interrupted us, and taking up the paper which repreſented the Adventure, they brought it into the harbour, and drew it out again, counting on their fingers how many moons ſhe had been gone. This circumſtance gave us two-fold pleaſure, ſince at the ſame time that we were perſuaded our conſort had ſafely ſailed from hence, we had room to admire the ſagacity of the natives. Still, however, there was ſomething myſterious in the former accounts, which intimated that ſome Europeans were killed; and we continued to doubt whether we had rightly underſtood this part of their converſation, till we received more certain intelligence at our return to the Cape of Good Hope. Here we learnt that our conſort had loſt a boat with ten men at New Zeeland. Some account of this melancholy event will, I hope, not be unwelcome to my readers, as I ſhall occaſionally compare the ſtory of the natives with the reports of our fellow-voyagers. It appears that captain Furneaux, after ſeparating from us, was obliged, on the 9th of November 1773, to put into Tolaga Bay *, on the northern iſle of New Zeeland, where he lay till the 16th. He then ſailed towards Queen Charlotte's Sound, where he arrived on the 30th, a few days after our departure. O-Maï, the native of Raietea, whom he had on board, told me he was the firſt who found the inſcription on the tree, under which our bottle was buried. He pointed it out to the captain, and 1774. OCTOBER.

* See the chart of New Zeeland, in Hawkeſworth, vol. II.

1774. OCTOBER. the bottle with the letter was immediately found. In conſequence of this, captain Furneaux made all the neceſſary preparations for the remaining part of his voyage, in as little time as poſſible. His ſhip the Adventure was ready to ſail, when he ſent a boat to Graſs Cove, on the eaſtern ſhore of the Sound, in order to gather a load of celery and ſcurvy-graſs for the crew. Mr. Rowe, the unfortunate youth who had the command of this boat, combined with many liberal ſentiments the prejudices of a naval education, which induced him to look upon all the natives of the South Sea with contempt, and to aſſume that kind of right over them, with which the Spaniards, in more barbarous ages, diſpoſed of the lives of the American Indians. After landing in Graſs Cove, his people began to cut greens, and ſome in all probability ſtripped off their cloaths, to perform their taſk with greater eaſe; for the accounts which we obtained from the natives at Queen Charlotte's Sound import, that one of their countrymen ſtole a ſailor's jacket; that our people had hereupon immediately begun to fire, and continued to do ſo till all their ammunition was ſpent; that the natives had taken this opportunity to ruſh upon the Europeans, and had killed every one of them. This relation is very reconcileable with the opinion which the late Mr. Rowe always entertained of the New Zeelanders, viz. that they would never ſtand the fire of European muſketry. He had before, when at Tolaga Bay, been exceeding deſirous of firing upon them,

1774. OCTOBER.

them, for having ſtolen a ſmall keg of brandy from the boat's crew; but the judicious and humane advice of lieutenant Burney checked his impetuoſity. Captain Furneaux finding that his boat did not return the next day, ſent Mr. Burney in another boat, well armed, to look after the former. They ſoon reached the entrance of Eaſt Bay, where they obſerved a canoe containing many natives, who at ſight of them paddled away as faſt as poſſible. Our people made after them, but the fear of being taken made the natives jump overboard, and ſwim to the ſhore. This behaviour alarmed Mr. Burney, and his apprehenſions were but too fully verified when he came up with the canoe. Here they found ſeveral mangled limbs of their comrades, and ſome of their cloaths. After rowing about ſome time, they came to Graſs Cove, towards ſeven in the evening, where they ſaw a conſiderable number of the natives aſſembled, who ſeemed prepared to oppoſe them. The whole hill to the top was covered with crouds of people, as in a fair, and ſmokes aſcended in ſeveral places, where they were probably dreſſing human fleſh. Horror chilled the ſailors blood in their veins, but the next moment they glowed with the fierce ardour of revenge, and cooler reaſon was obliged to give way to the powerful impulſe. They fired and killed ſeveral of the natives, driving them at laſt, but with great difficulty, from the beach, and deſtroying a great number

1774. OCTOBER. of canoes, which they found hauled on ſhore. They then landed, and ſearched the huts, where they found many other limbs of their friends packed into baſkets, and particularly a hand, which they knew to be that of the unfortunate Rowe. Mr. Burney is of opinion, that the boat had been beaten to pieces by the natives, for the ſake of the iron, as he only met with ſome detached parts of it. It is not unlikely that the unhappy people who were thus cut off, did not take ſufficient care to keep their boat afloat, but ſuffered the tide to leave it dry upon the rocks, by which means they made their retreat impracticable afterwards. Captain Furneaux having ſuffered this heavy loſs, more heavy to him, as Mr. Rowe was his relation, ſet ſail from Queen Charlotte Sound on the 22d of December, and paſſed round Cape Horn, touching at no port, nor ſeeing any land, till he arrived at the Cape of Good Hope, on the 19th of March 1774; from whence he returned to England, anchoring at Spithead on the 15th of July following, at the time when we were near the New Hebrides in the South Sea.

The New Zeelanders have been dangerous enemies to all the nations who have viſited them. The firſt diſcoverer, Abel Janſan Taſman, a Dutch navigator, loſt four of his people, in an anchoring-place, which he named Murderers Bay, and which ſeems to be the ſame with captain Cook's Blind Bay. The natives took one of the dead bodies into the

the canoe with them, and had therefore doubtleſs taſted the fleſh of an European, ſo early as the year 1642 *. By killing ten perſons of the Adventure's crew, they have been ſtill more pernicious to the Engliſh, and by murdering M. Dufreſne Marion, with twenty-eight men, they have treated the French more roughly than all the reſt. M. Crozet, captain of a fire-ſhip, in the French navy, happening to be at the Cape of Good Hope, on his way to India, at the time of our return to that ſettlement, gave us an account of the melancholy fate of his countrymen. He commanded the king's ſloop the Maſcarin, under M. Marion, and put into the Bay of Iſlands, on the northern iſland of New Zeeland † in great diſtreſs. He was obliged, having loſt his maſts, to look out for new ones in the woods of this country; but when he had found trees fit for his purpoſe, it appeared almoſt impoſſible to bring them from the hills to the water ſide. However, neceſſity at laſt obliged them to make a road two or three miles long, through the thickeſt foreſts, to the place where he met with the beſt trees. A party of his people were in the mean while placed on an iſland in the bay, to fill the caſks with water, and another party occaſionally went on ſhore to cut wood for the ſhip's uſe. They had lain here thirty-three days

1774. OCTOBER.

* See M. Dalrymple's Collection, vol. II. p. 72.

† See vol. I. p. 112, where I have mentioned the diſcoveries of that voyage, previous to M. Marion's arrival at New Zeeland.

upon

1774. OCTOBER. upon the beſt terms with the natives, who freely offered their women to the ſailors, when M. Marion went on ſhore with ſeveral people, to viſit the different parties who were at work, without leaving word that he intended to come back to the ſhip the ſame day. His firſt viſit to the waterers being performed, he went to the Hippah, or fortification of the natives, where he commonly uſed to call in his way to the carpenters, who were encamped in the woods with M. Crozet. Here however, it ſeems he was cut off, with his company, and boat's crew. The next morning, the lieutenant, who commanded on board, not knowing what had happened, ſent a party to cut wood within the neck of land, which may be ſeen in captain Cook's draught of this bay *. A party of the natives waited the opportunity when every one was at work to fall upon the French, and killed them all, except a ſingle ſailor who ran over the iſthmus, and threw himſelf into the ſea, in order to ſwim towards the ſhips, though he was wounded by ſeveral ſpears. He called out at laſt, and being taken on board, gave the general alarm. M. Crozet's ſituation in the woods with a ſmall party, was the moſt critical. A corporal and four marines were immediately diſpatched, to acquaint him of his danger, while ſeveral boats attended to receive his party, at a place where the ſick had been lodged in tents for the recovery of their health. He diſpoſed every

* See Hawkeſworth, vol. II. p. 323.

thing

thing as well as the time would permit, and effected his retreat to the ſea-ſide. Here however, he found a prodigious croud of the natives aſſembled, dreſt out in their beſt habits, with ſeveral chiefs at their head. M. Crozet, told the four marines, to be ready in caſe he found it neceſſary, to fire at ſuch perſons as he ſhould point out. He gave orders to his party to ſtrike the tents of the ſick, to embark all their tools and apparatus, and to retire into the boat, whilſt he with the ſoldiers walked up to the chief. This man immediately told him, that M. Marion was killed by another chief whom he named. M. Crozet took up a ſtake, and forcing it into the ground, juſt before the feet of the chief, bid him advance no further. The violence of the action ſtartled the ſavage, whoſe irreſolution M. Crozet obſerving, inſiſted on his commanding the croud to ſit down, which was accordingly complied with. He now walked up and down before the New Zeelanders, till all his men were in the boat; his ſoldiers were ordered to follow, and himſelf was the laſt who embarked. He had ſcarce put off, when the whole body of New Zeelanders roſe, began their ſong of defiance, and threw ſtones after him; however, by the timely exertion of his people, they all came ſafe on board. The New Zeelanders from this time forward, made ſeveral attempts to cut him off. They made an expedition againſt the watering-party at night, which, but for the vigilance of the French, would have been fatal

1774. OCTOBER.

1774. OCTOBER. fatal to them; and they likewiſe attacked the ſhips in more than a hundred large canoes full of men, who felt the effects of European artillery. At laſt M. Crozet, ſeeing it impoſſible to ſupply the ſhips with maſts, unleſs he could drive the natives from this neighbourhood, went to attack their hippah, which was one of the greateſt and ſtrongeſt. He put the carpenters in the front, to cut down the palliſadoes, behind which the natives ſtood in great numbers on the fighting ſtages, deſcribed in captain Cook's former voyage *. His people drove the natives from theſe ſtages by keeping up a regular fire, which did ſome execution. The carpenters could now approach without danger, and in a few moments cut a breach in the fortification. A chief inſtantly ſtepped into it with a long ſpear in his hand. He was ſhot dead by M. Crozet's markſmen, and preſently another occupied his place, ſtepping on the dead body. He likewiſe fell a victim to his intrepid courage, and in the ſame manner eight chiefs ſucceſſively defended, and bravely fell on this poſt of honour. The reſt ſeeing their leaders dead, took flight, and the French purſued and killed numbers of them. M. Crozet offered fifty dollars to any perſon who ſhould take a New Zeelander alive, but this was abſolutely impracticable. A ſoldier ſeized an old man, and began to drag him towards his captain, but the ſavage being unarmed, bit into the fleſhy part of the French-

* See Hawkeſworth, vol. II. p. 342, 344.

man's

man's hand, of which the exquiſite pain ſo enraged him, that he ran the New Zeelander through with the bayonet. M. Crozet found great quantities of dreſſes, arms, tools, and raw flax in this hippah, together with a prodigious ſtore of dried fiſh, and roots, which ſeemed to be intended for winter proviſion. He completed the repairs in his ſhip without interruption, after accompliſhing this enterprize, and proſecuted his voyage after a ſtay of ſixty-four days in the Bay of Iſlands. 1774. OCTOBER.

The character of the New Zeelanders would appear to no great advantage in this tranſaction with the French, if we ſuppoſed that nothing paſſed previous to the maſſacre to rouze their indignation. But the whole tenour of their behaviour to Europeans, ſeems to acquit them of treachery and cruel malevolence. It is therefore greatly to be ſuſpected that they took umbrage at ſome affront, perhaps unwittingly committed by the ſtrangers, and revenged it with that paſſionate fury which hurries on the ſavage into exceſſes. We had no reaſon to doubt the veracity of the people at Queen Charlotte's Sound, ſince they accuſed their own countrymen of theft; but it plainly appears from theſe inſtances, that the raſh action of revenging this theft with death, and moſt probably revenging it indiſcriminately on a whole body of natives, muſt have provoked them to retaliate. Born to live our ſtated time on this globe, every one who puts a premature period to our exiſtence here,

1774. OCTOBER. offends the laws of the Creator. The paſſions are wiſely implanted in our breaſt for our preſervation; and revenge, in particular, guards us againſt the encroachments of others. Savages do not give up the right of retaliating injuries; but civilized ſocieties confer on certain individuals the power and the duty to revenge their wrongs. Still, even in the moſt poliſhed countries of Europe, this method of adminiſtring juſtice is not ſufficient in all caſes. Such is the imperfection of human inſtitutions, that the public avenger of wrongs oft lifts his hand againſt the ſacred rights of the whole community. On that occaſion all civil agreements are diſſolved, every man aſſumes his rights, and gives free courſe to the paſſions. Even in private life there are occaſions where this ſacred principle of revenge is of infinite ſervice in the beſt regulated community. Nothing is more common than oppreſſions, affronts, and injuries againſt which the law provides no remedy; nothing more frequent, than that a ſet men are powerful enough to wreſt the laws to the diſadvantage of the wretched and friendleſs. Theſe inſtances would be ſtill more numerous, and be carried to the moſt deteſtable pitch of tyranny, if this dread did not with-hold them, that the injured party may reſume that power of redreſſing his wrongs, which he ſees ſo inadequately exerciſed by his repreſentative. He that attempts another's property, runs the riſk of being killed without a trial by the perſon whom he robs; and the fear of the

ſword

ſword or the cane, hath often kept villains within bounds, who are invulnerable to the attacks of the law. 1774. OCTOBER.

Chi fà ſua vendetta, oltra che offende
Chi l'offeſo ha, da molti ſi difende. ARIOSTO.

Being ſatisfied that the Adventure had ſafely ſailed from Queen Charlotte's Sound, by the ſigns of Peeterré, we took the opportunity of a fair day to viſit the innermoſt receſſes of Weſt Bay, in order to be convinced, if poſſible, whether there was any probability that the hogs and fowls, brought thither almoſt a year before, would ever ſtock theſe wild woods with numerous breeds. We came to the ſpot where we had left them, but ſaw not the leaſt veſtiges of their having been on the beach, nor did it appear that any of the natives had viſited this remote place; from whence we have ſome room to hope, that the animals had retreated into the thickeſt part of the woods. We afterwards found a few families of the natives in an oppoſite part of the bay, who furniſhed us with abundance of fiſh. Friday 28.

We went to Graſs Cove on the 2d of November, having had rainy and ſtormy weather after our excurſion to Weſt Bay. Ignorant of the dreadful tragedy which had there been acted, we landed in all the creeks thereabouts, and advanced far into the country, ſeeing ſeveral paths which led up the hills, but meeting no inhabitants. We ſhot here about thirty birds, amongſt which were a dozen pigeons, NOVEMBER. Wedneſday 2.

1774. NOVEMBER. that frequented this ſpot on account of a ſpecies of ſophora-tree, of which they conſumed the leaves and ſeeds. We returned in the evening at eight o'clock, finding a number of natives on board, who had arrived from another part of the bay. Theſe natives ſold us no proviſions like thoſe who came with Peeterré, but brought dreſſes, arms, and other curioſities; captain Cook therefore abſolutely prohibited all commerce with them. They returned to us again the next morning, but the captain perſiſted in his reſolution of not admitting them, unleſs they brought us refreſhments. Indeed, this manner of proceeding was equally laudable and neceſſary; it required the utmoſt exertion of authority, as well as the enforcement of example, to make the ſtubborn ſailor take the leaſt ſtep for the benefit of his own health, as ſoon as his attention was engaged by the manufactures of the natives. It is ſurpriſing to what a pitch the rage of collecting arms and utenſils had riſen among the crew. During our ſtay at Queen Charlotte's Sound, ſeveral of our people who were ſent to make brooms, with the boatſwain at their head, robbed the hut of a poor native of ſeveral tools, and forced upon him ſome nails, which they thought an equivalent. Fortunately, the natives found means to complain to captain Cook, and the offenders were juſtly puniſhed. The crew of the Endeavour were not a whit more equitable or honeſt; they robbed the wife of Tuboraï Tamaide

Tamaide at Taheitee, and ſeemed at New Zeeland* to think they had a right to the property of the natives. Indeed their character is very uniform, and cannot well be otherwiſe from their manner of life; and it may be obſerved, that their own commanders complain of the ſame inhuman propenſity to deſtroy the poor harmleſs people of the South Seas, which I have ſo frequently obſerved in the courſe of this voyage †. 1774. NOVEMBER.

The embargo which was laid on the trade was the reaſon that all the natives left us on the 4th, except a ſingle wretched family, who had not been able to catch fiſh during the two laſt days, on account of the ſtormy weather. We found them at the Indian Cove, feeding on inſipid fern-roots, for want of more nutritive food. Each of their huts contained a fire, of which the ſmoke entirely involved them; however, by lying down cloſe to the ground, they were leſs incommoded by the ſmoke than if they had ſat upright. Notwithſtanding the inconvenience of this ſituation, there were not wanting ſeveral of our ſhipmates who readily took up with the ſame lodging, in order to receive the careſſes of the filthy female inhabitants. Perhaps it may be imagined that only brutiſh ſailors could have ſuch

* See Hawkſworth, vol II. p. 103, and 136. We may likewiſe conſult vol. III. p. 659, where an inſtance of barbarity is recorded, ſimilar to that mentioned in this work, vol. I. p. 282.

† See Hawkeſworth, vol. II. p. 365.

groveling

1774. NOVEMBER. groveling appetites; but the imperious element, on which they are continually toſſed about, ſeems to level all diſtinctions. Indeed, when people habitually give full courſe to their unbounded deſires, it is not ſurpriſing that they gratify one ſenſe at the expence of all the reſt. The nations whom we had lately viſited in the New Hebrides, and at New Caledonia, having very wiſely declined every indecent familiarity with their gueſts, the moſt loathſome objects in a New Zeelander's ſmoky and naſty hovel, were eagerly addreſſed.

Saturday 5. The next day was very fair, after an interval of bad weather; captain Cook therefore choſe to make an excurſion, to trace the end of the ſound, which ſtill remained unknown. We ſet out in a boat, and advanced a conſiderable way towards ſome canoes which were fiſhing. At ſight of us the people in them left their employment, and paddled away; but as our crew rowed very briſkly, we ſoon overtook them, and enquired if they knew a paſſage out to ſea through the extremity of the Sound. They ſeemed not to underſtand our queſtion, but offered us ſome fiſh, which they had juſt caught. We purchaſed a great quantity, and found the natives very friendly in their behaviour, they having been on board the ſhip a few days before. Receiving no intelligence from them, we rowed a great way higher, and paſſed an arm of the Sound to the left, and ſeveral bays and coves on the right hand. Here meeting

meeting with another canoe, which came up towards us, we aſked the natives concerning the outlet into the ſea. They pointed out the left or eaſtern arm, and told us that the other to the ſouth at laſt ended in a bay, which was every where ſurrounded by mountains. Upon their report we ſteered into the eaſtern arm, and ſoon diſcovered a moſt ſpacious bay in it, to the right of which the ſhores were every where lined with natives. We landed at one of the moſt populous places, and ſaluted by the noſe the chief and principal people, who ſtepped forward from the reſt. The chief immediately acquainted us that his name was Tringo-Boohee *. He was a little elderly man, but very active, lively and friendly; his face was punctured all over in ſcrolls, by which he diſtinguiſhed himſelf from every one of his countrymen preſent, who were all much leſs diſfigured by this operation. The women ſat in ſeveral rows before their huts, and a few of them were known to us, having been on board the ſhip ſome days before. They all ſeemed to be much better ſituated than the ſcattered families in the neighbourhood of our cove; their garb was new and neat, and the features of ſome much leſs diſguſting than we had generally ſeen. Perhaps this was owing to their faces being clean, without being covered with paint, ſoot, or other dirt. The number of men encreaſed about us

1774. NOVEMBER.

* Tringho ſeems to be a kind of title among them, being affixed to ſeveral names of their chiefs.

every

1774. NOVEMBER. every minute, as we traded eagerly for fiſh, which they were equally eager to ſell. Our friend Tringho-Bohee, however, ſeemed to diſlike the arrival of ſo many people, eſpecially as the price of his fiſh fell, in proportion as the market was better ſupplied. A great number of them likewiſe brought their arms and clothes to ſell, and moſt of them went naked, except a ſmall piece of mat girt about the loins, this day being remarkably mild, and the place ſheltered from all winds. After ſtaying here about a quarter of an hour, captain Cook reimbarked with us, which was the more adviſeable, as many of the natives who arrived laſt, brought their arms, and the whole croud now amounted to two hundred and upwards, a much greater number than we had ſuſpected the ſound to contain, or had ever ſeen aſſembled together. We had already put off, when a ſailor acquainted the captain, that he had bought a bundle of fiſh from one of the natives, for which he had not paid him. Captain Cook took the laſt nail which was left, and calling to the native, threw it on the beach at his feet. The ſavage being offended, or thinking himſelf attacked, picked up a ſtone, and threw it into the boat with great force, but luckily without hitting any one of us. We now called to him again, and pointed to the nail which we had thrown towards him. As ſoon as he had ſeen, and picked it up, he laughed at his own petulance, and ſeemed highly pleaſed with our conduct

conduct towards him. This circumſtance, with a little raſhneſs on our part, might have become very fatal to us, or might at leaſt have involved us in a dangerous quarrel. If we had reſented the affront of being pelted with a ſtone, the whole body would have joined in the cauſe of their countryman, and we muſt have fallen an eaſy prey to their numbers, being at the diſtance of five or ſix leagues from the ſhip, without any hopes of aſſiſtance. It was fortunate that we were not acquainted at that time with the wretched fate of Mr. Rowe and his companions; elſe the unexpected meeting with ſuch a body of natives, would greatly have alarmed us, eſpecially as it appears probable from their ſituation, that they acted a principal part in his maſſacre. When we conſider the numerous opportunities which we gave the natives to cut us off, by leaving our boats, walking up hills, landing in their populous ſettlements, going among them unarmed, and the like; it becomes every moment clearer to me, that their friendſhip is always to be truſted, unleſs it is infringed on our part, and that accordingly they did not cut off the Adventure's people without provocation. It muſt nevertheleſs be acknowledged, that we were peculiarly fortunate in our excurſions, which Providence always guided in ſuch a manner, that we did not fall unawares into the hands of any families of the natives, with whom we had not concluded a previous treaty of peace. 1774. NOVEMBER.

1774. NOVEMBER.

The people at this place agreed with thoſe to whom we had ſpoken in the canoe, that the arm which we had entered communicated with the ſea. We continued our route accordingly, and obſerved after ſome turnings, that the inlet ran to the northward, at the back of Graſs Cove, and Eaſt Bay. We found in it many coves and beaches, with greens, and plenty of wild fowl; the water was perfectly ſmooth, and the mountains formed many romantic proſpects, being clothed with fine foreſts. Having advanced about three leagues from Tringo-Boohee's ſettlement, which the natives call Ko-Haghee-nooee, we began to ſee many ſhags, with a double creſt, a ſpecies which always builds in the vicinity of the ſea. A few moments afterwards we alſo ſaw breakers at the farther end of the inlet, which fully confirmed the accounts of the natives. On the left, or at the back of Graſs Cove, we ſaw a *hippah*, built on a high rock which ſtood in a manner inſulated, on a fine ſpot of level land. The whole fort was ſurrounded with many tall poles, and appeared to be in very good order. Having left it at ſome diſtance, (for it lay in a kind of bay) we ſaw the outlet into Cook's Strait, and found it a very narrow paſſage; before it lay many dangerous and lofty rocks, upon which a dreadful ſurf broke continually. In the paſſage, or gap itſelf, we had thirteen fathom of water, and obſerved a ſtrong tide running paſt. We had a fair view from hence of the northern iſland,

iſland, and of the ſtrait through which we were to paſs into the South Sea for the laſt time. It was about four o'clock when we made this diſcovery, but having the wind againſt us, or at leaſt very uncertain, we were obliged to return the ſame way we came, inſtead of going round cape Koamaroo, which would have ſaved us much time. As we knew of ſuch a numerous tribe of natives living in this neighbourhood, we did not venture to ſtay a night on ſhore; but paſſing the Hippah, and Ko-Haghee-nooee, arrived ſafe on board about ten o'clock at night, having faſted the whole time, and being thoroughly fatigued with our long excurſion. The new channel which we had now diſcovered, is indicated as a bay in captain Cook's map of the Straits, inſerted in his former voyage, he being at that time unacquainted with its outlet into the ſea. 1774. NOVEMBER.

The weather was rather dull the next day; however, our friend Peeterré returned with his family to viſit us. Captain Cook took him into the cabin, and dreſſed him in a ſhirt, ſtockings, breeches, and coat, as a mark of friendſhip for his aſſiduity in ſupplying us with fiſh. Peeterré ſeemed highly delighted with his new dreſs, and valued himſelf upon being in favour with us. As he was contented with theſe preſents, he did not venture to beg for any others, but behaved with great moderation. He accompanied us to Long Iſland, where we paſſed ſome time in ſhooting, and then returned on board to dinner, of which Sunday 6.

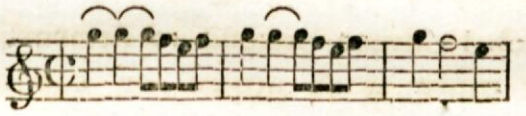
1774. NOVEMBER. Peeterré partook with peculiar good manners, conſidering his education. It is ſcarce to be doubted, that he felt the ſuperiority of our knowledge, of our arts, manufactures, and mode of living, in ſome degree, eſpecially as he was always remarkably in good ſpirits when amongſt us; but notwithſtanding all this, he never once expreſſed a deſire of going with us; and when we propoſed it to him, he declined it, preferring the wretched precarious life of his countrymen, to all the advantages of which he ſaw us poſſeſſed. I have already mentioned in another place*, that this way of thinking is common to all ſavages; and I might have added, that it is not entirely obliterated among poliſhed nations. The force of habit no where appears more ſtrikingly than in ſuch inſtances, where it ſeems alone to counterbalance the comforts of a civilized life.

Peeterré returned on ſhore with his comrades in the evening, but came to ſell us fiſh again the next day. We frequently heard him and the reſt of the natives ſinging on ſhore, and were ſometimes favoured with a ſong when they viſited us on board. Their muſic is far ſuperior in variety to that of the Society and Friendly Iſlands; and if any nation of the South Sea comes in competition with them in this reſpect, I ſhould apprehend it to be that of Tanna. The ſame intelligent friend who favoured me with a ſpecimen of

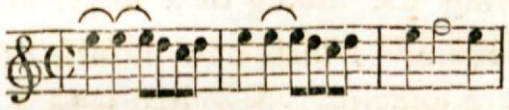
* See p. 53.

the

the ſongs at Tonga-Tabboo, (ſee vol. I. p. 429), has likewiſe obligingly communicated to me another of the New Zeeland muſic, which will be ſufficient to give an idea of the taſte of the people. He did not viſit the iſland of Tanna, but aſſured me that there appeared to be ſome diſplay of genius in the New Zeeland tunes, which ſoared very far above the wretched humming of the Taheitian, or even the four notes of the people at the Friendly Iſlands. 1774. NOVEMBER.



Of this tune they continue to ſing the two firſt bars till the words of their ſong are at an end, and then they cloſe with the laſt. Sometimes they alſo ſing an under-part, which is is a third lower, except the two laſt notes, which are uniſons.

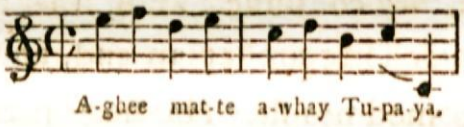


The ſame gentleman likewiſe took notice of a kind of dirge-like melancholy ſong, relating to the death of Tupaya. This ſong was chiefly practiſed by the inhabitants round Tolaga Bay, on the northern iſland, where the people ſeem to have had a high regard for that Taheitian. There is an extreme ſimplicity in the words, though they ſeem to be metrically

1774. NOVEMBER. metrically arranged, in ſuch a manner, as to expreſs the feelings of the mourners, by their ſlow movement.

āghēe, mātte ăwhāy Tūpāyă!
Departed, dead, alas! Tupaya!

The firſt effuſions of grief are not loquacious; the only idea to which we can give utterance is that of our loſs, which takes the form of a complaint. Whether the ſimplicity of the tune is equally agreeable, or well judged, is a queſtion which I cannot pretend to determine. The connoiſſeurs in muſic muſt acquit or condemn the New Zeelanders.



They deſcend at the cloſe from *c* to the octave below in a fall, reſembling the ſliding of a finger along the finger-board on the violin. I ſhall now diſmiſs this ſubject with the following obſervation, that the taſte for muſic of the New Zeelanders, and their ſuperiority in this reſpect to other nations in the South Seas, are to me ſtronger proofs, in favour of their heart, than all the idle eloquence of philoſophers in their cabinets can invalidate. They have violent paſſions; but it would be abſurd to aſſert that theſe only lead them to inhuman exceſſes.

We

We continued to make ſeveral excurſions along ſhore, and to the iſlands in the Sound, till the 9th of November. In this interval we made ſuch additions to our botanical and zoological collections, as could hardly have been expected at ſo early a ſeaſon, and after ſearching the ſame woods ſo many times. We collected ten or twelve ſpecies of plants, and four or five ſorts of birds, which we had not ſeen before. Our crew aſſiduouſly filled all our water-caſks, cut a great quantity of wood, repaired the rigging, and fitted the ſhip once more to encounter the fury of ſouthern gales. The quantity of fiſh which the natives daily brought for ſale, allowed us to ſalt ſo many as to fill ſeveral caſks with them, which ſerved as a ſea-ſtock during our paſſage to Tierra del Fuego, kept extremely well, and were very palatable to moſt people. The latter part of our ſtay was likewiſe employed in laying in an ample proviſion of ſhags, cormorants, and ſuch other birds as we could find, in order that we might prolong as much as poſſible the term of living on freſh food. 1774. NOVEMBER.

On the 9th, in the afternoon, we unmoored, and rode all night at a ſingle anchor, which we weighed the next morning at four, thus leaving New Zeeland a third time in the courſe of one voyage. As often as we had viſited this country, it had abundantly ſupplied us with refreſhments, which were particularly efficacious in reſtoring our health, and baniſhing the ſymptoms of the ſcurvy.

Not

1774. NOVEMBER. Not only well-taſted antiſcorbutic plants, but likewiſe the fiſh, which are eaſily digeſted, ſeem to me to have been equally ſalutary reſtoratives. The keen air which is felt in New Zeeland, on the fineſt days, contributed not a little to brace our fibres, relaxed by a long cruize in warmer climates, and the ſtrong exerciſe we took was doubtleſs beneficial in many reſpects. From hence it happened that we always left that country with new vigour. If we came in ever ſo pale and emaciated, the good cheer which we enjoyed during our ſtay, ſoon rekindled a glow of health on our cheeks, and we returned to the ſouth, like our ſhip, to all outward appearance, as clean and ſound as ever, though in reality ſomewhat impaired by the many hard rubs of the voyage. Perhaps it may be attributed in part to the healthineſs of the air, the ſimplicity of food, and particularly its eaſy digeſtion and great abundance, that the natives have attained a tall ſtature, are muſcular, well proportioned *, and well formed. It appears indeed from many circumſtances, that fiſh are ſo innumerable on their coaſts, as to ſupply them with conſtant food, in ſufficient quantity throughout the year, eſpecially as M. Crozet and ourſelves obſerved that they had laid up a plentiful ſhare of dried fiſh for the winter.

* Except their legs, which are ill-ſhaped, from their mode of ſitting.

1774. NOVEMBER.

CHAP. V.

The courſe from New Zeeland to Tierra del Fuego.—Stay at Chriſtmas Harbour.

Barbara præruptis incluſa eſt (inſula) ſaxis:
Horrida, deſertis undique vaſta locis,
Umbrarum nullo ver eſt lætabile fœtu,
Nullaque in infauſto naſcitur herba ſolo. SENECA.

WE cleared Cook's Strait on the 10th in the afternoon, after paſſing within a few leagues of the new inlet, which we had diſcovered previous to our departure. We were becalmed all the next day in ſight of the land, and did not obtain a breeze till towards evening. On the 12th in the morning we were out of ſight of land, and ſteered away between the ſouth and eaſt, towards Tierra del Fuego. We entered upon this navigation with more chearfulneſs, than upon the laſt ſouthern cruize. We were perſuaded that no land lay in our way to retard our progreſs; the weſterly winds, which prevail in theſe latitudes, were in our favour; and we knew that the hardſhips of the voyage were drawing to an end. Indeed we looked upon ourſelves as already ſafe from perils, and the hope of reviſiting Europe, after many hazardous tracks and narrow Thurſday 10.

1774. NOVEMBER. eſcapes, ſeemed to animate us with new Promethean fire. The run from New Zeeland to Tierra del Fuego ſurpaſſed our warmeſt expectations, and, conſidering the conſtruction of our ſhip, which was always reckoned a dull ſailor, was indeed one of the quickeſt paſſages which can be imagined, as we made one day with another upwards of forty leagues. We ſaw a whale on the 12th, about twelve yards long, with an oblong blunt head, on which were two longitudinal furrows, and as many upright ridges. It had ſmall eyes, two ſemilunar apertures, from whence it occaſionally ſpouted the water, and was mottled all over with white ſpots. It had two large fins behind the head, but none on the back. This extraordinary creature ſeems to have been intirely unknown before.

We had ſprung a leak on going out of Queen Charlotte's Sound, which we diſcovered on the 14th; but it gave us very little uneaſineſs, as the water in the pump-well encreaſed only five inches in eight hours. The weſterly winds blew with aſtoniſhing violence, and the breadth of the ocean being very conſiderable, the billows encreaſed to an immenſe ſize, and ſeemed to be ſometimes ſeveral hundred yards long. The ſhip rolled very diſagreeably when the wind was quite aft; and though it has been ſuppoſed that a ſhip's inclination in the greateſt roll never exceeds twenty degrees, we have obſerved it inclined above thirty, and ſeveral times even to forty degrees.

During

During this run we ſaw birds of the albatroſs, petrel, and pinguin kinds, almoſt every day, and eſpecially at equal diſtances from New Zeeland and America, which are about fifteen hundred leagues aſunder. On the 27th of November we made a greater run than ever was made in our ſhip before, which conſiſted of 184 miles by the log. 1774. NOVEMBER.

On the 2d of December, after a ſhort calm, we had a freſh breeze, which continued to blow without intermiſſion, but with different degrees of velocity, till the 18th, when we made the land, a little after midnight, near Cape Deſeado, on one of the weſtermoſt iſlands of Tierra del Fuego. The fiſh which we had ſalted at New Zeeland had laſted during the whole run, and we had found great benefit from living upon them preferably to ſalt beef and pork, which was now ſo univerſally loathed, that captain Cook himſelf declared he ſhould probably never eat it again with any degree of ſatisfaction. The ſour-krout had been conſtantly uſed in the mean while, and the wort had been taken as a preſervative by many perſons in the ſhip. The former was ſtill as good as ever, but the malt was much damaged, and had loſt part of its efficacy, by having been put up in green unſeaſoned caſks. I drank plentifully of it, but was notwithſtanding afflicted with conſiderable ſwellings in the legs, attended with pains, which returned from time to time. DECEMBER. Sunday 18.

1774. DECEMBER. The part of the world which was now in ſight had a very unfavourable aſpect. About three o'clock in the morning we ran along it, and found it for the greateſt part hid in a thick haze. The parts near us ſeemed to be ſmall iſlands, which though not very high, were however very black, and almoſt entirely barren. Beyond them we ſaw ſome broken high lands, which were covered with ſnow, almoſt to the water's edge. Great flocks of ſhags, ſhear-waters, ſkuas, and other water-fowl, in ſome meaſure made amends for the deſolate appearance of the coaſt, as they gave us great hopes that we ſhould meet with refreſhments, if we could find a harbour. Few countries that we touched at are ſo wretchedly deſtitute, as not to have afforded us ſome ſupply of food, either animal or vegetable, by the aſſiſtance of which we made ſhift to keep ourſelves free from a high degree of the ſcurvy and other diſtempers.

In the afternoon we paſſed the iſland, upon which Cape Noir is ſituated, mentioned by M. Frezier. The view which he gives of the land correſponded very well with what we ſaw; and to the N. E. there appeared to be a long inlet, which is doubtleſs the channel of St. Barbara. In the Spaniſh charts this extremity of Tierra del Fuego has long ſince been very accurately laid down as divided into many iſlands and channels, which have been explored, and each in particular named, by their early navigators. One

of

of the beſt charts of this kind accompanies the Spaniſh tranſlation of the anonymous account of Mr. Byron's Voyage round the World, by Dr. Caſimir Gomez Ortega. Agreeably to their diſcoveries, we found many ſeparate iſlands, from the place where we made the coaſt to Cape Noir, and ſhould perhaps have ſeen many more, if the weather had not been very hazy. 1774. DECEMBER.

We found the land to all appearance much more compact after paſſing Cape Noir; and the next morning in particular, the coaſt ſeemed to be entirely connected; the mountains roſe to a much greater height, immediately from the ſea-ſide, and were covered with ſnow in every part. The wind gradually leſſened, and towards noon we were entirely becalmed, having the fineſt ſun-ſhine, and mild weather. Many ſorts of water-birds appeared about us from time to time, and ſeveral ſeals alſo ſported in the water. In the afternoon about thirty grampuſſes were ſeen playing about us, chiefly ſwimming in couples. Another calm ſucceeded again the next day, though we had had an eaſterly wind during a part of the preceding afternoon. It was very amuſing to us, to meet with mild weather in the neighbourhood of that tempeſtuous cape, of which the name alone has affrighted the mariners, ever ſince lord Anſon's voyage. The deſtruction of vulgar prejudices is of ſo much ſervice to ſcience, and to mankind in general, that it cannot fail of giving pleaſure, to every one Monday 19. Tueſday 20.

ſenſible

1774. DECEMBER. ſenſible of its benefits. We had this day the thermometer at 48° which, conſidering the neighbourhood of the huge heaps of ſnow on ſhore, was very moderate. This part of the world has been called the Coaſt of Deſolation by the navigators who firſt viſited it, and ſeems fully to deſerve the appellation. Here we diſcerned nothing but vaſt mountains, of which the ſpiry ſummits were every where covered with eternal ſnow. Along the ſea, the neareſt rocks were clear of ſnow, but black, and deſtitute of graſſes or ſhrubbery. Some inlets appeared in different parts, where a few iſlands ſeemed to have a covering of green. We ſtood in to one of theſe in the evening, having then obtained an eaſterly breeze. A huge perpendicular wall of rock formed its weſtern entrance, and captain Cook called it the York Minſter, having diſcovered a ſtrong reſemblance between that Gothic building, and this dreary chaotic rock. It lies in 55° 30′ S. and 70° 28′ W. Along the coaſt we found regular ſoundings, but in the mouth of the inlet, we could not reach the bottom with one hundred and fifty fathom of line. This circumſtance had already happened to us before at Duſky Bay (vol. I. p. 123); but as we ſaw a very ſpacious ſound before us, we ventured to ſtand on, amidſt different rude iſlands, on which the ſummits of hills were ſometimes capt with ſnow. A boat was hoiſted out, in which my father accompanied ſome of the lieutenants, who endeavoured to ſhoot birds, but brought only one

one on board. After being much retarded by calms, we arrived about nine o'clock in a ſmall cove, indifferently ſheltered either from wind or ſea, but a welcome place of refuge on account of the approach of night. Here, then we dropped the anchor, which had been aweigh only forty-one days, during which we had croſſed the South Sea in its full extent, from New Zeeland to Cape Deſeado. 1774. DECEMBER.

The next morning captain Cook, accompanied by ſeveral officers, as well as my father, Dr. Sparrman, and myſelf, went in a boat in queſt of a more ſafe and convenient anchorage. We only rowed round a ſingle point of the iſland under which our ſhip lay, and immediately found a fine cove ſheltered from all winds, and perfectly land-locked, with a little rill of water, and a ſhrubbery. The weather was mild conſidering the climate, and ſeveral birds were heard on the ſhore. We found many little clefts, which cannot properly be called vallies, where a few ſhrubs of different ſpecies, ſprung up in a thin layer of ſwampy ſoil, being defended againſt the violence of ſtorms, and expoſed to the genial influence of reverberated ſun-beams. The rock of which the whole iſland conſiſted, is a coarſe granite, compoſed of feld-ſpath, quartz, and black mica or glimmer. This rock is in moſt places entirely naked, without the ſmalleſt vegetable particle; but wherever the rains, or melted ſnows have waſhed together ſome little rubbiſh, and other particles in decay, it is covered with a coating of minute plants, Wedneſd. 22.

1774. DECEMBER. plants, in growth like moſſes, which forming a kind of turf, about an inch or more in thickneſs, very eaſily ſlip away under the foot, having no firm hold on the rock. In ſheltered places a few other plants thrive among theſe moſſy ſpecies, and theſe at laſt form a ſufficient quantity of ſoil, for the nutriment of ſhrubs, eſpecially in ſuch ſpots as I have mentioned before. Among them we immediately found the ſpecies, the bark of which captain Winter diſcovered to be an excellent aromatic, known in the ſhops by the name of Winter's bark, but frequently, till of late, confounded with a very different plant, the *canella alba*, of Jamaica. This Winter's bark-tree grows on the ſhores of the ſtraits of Magalhaens, and on the caſtern parts of Tierra del Fuego, to a ſtately ſize; but in this barren part we never ſaw it under any other form than that of a ſhrub, about ten feet high, crooked and ſhapeleſs. Barren as theſe rocks appeared, yet almoſt every plant which we gathered on them was new to us, and ſome ſpecies were remarkable for the beauty of their flowers, or their ſmell. A new ſpecies of geeſe, a ſort of ſhags, the black oyſter-catchers, or ſea-pies, and ſeveral other birds dwelt along the ſhores, which were lined with immenſe floating beds of rockweeds. At our return, all our people began to remove the ſhip into her new ſituation, where ſhe was moored in the afternoon. A few ſmall fiſh, of a new ſpecies of cod, were caught among

the

the weeds; but in general every attempt to ſupply the table by fiſhing proved unſucceſsful. 1774. DECEMBER.

Early the next morning, captain Cook ſet out to take bearings in the ſound, and we took that opportunity of examining its natural productions. The ſound is very ſpacious, and ſurrounded to the north and eaſt by ſeveral ranges of high mountains, which ſeem covered with permanent ſnow and ice. In the bay itſelf are ſeveral iſlands of conſiderable elevation, though not equal to the height of the main land, of which only the higheſt have ſome ſnow on their very ſummits. That under which our ſhip lay at anchor, was free from ſnow, though it ſeemed to be at leaſt two hundred yards perpendicular in height. Beſides theſe high iſlands, we obſerved ſeveral, from ten to twenty yards high, which lay in the northern part of the ſound, and appeared to be almoſt covered with verdure at a diſtance. We directed our courſe to one of theſe, about three miles off, of which the moſſes and ſhrubs, upon nearer examination, ſeemed to have been burnt in ſeveral places. The rock was here a kind of yellowiſh ſlate, which lay in horizontal ſtrata, covered with a much thicker ſtratum of ſoil, than we had ſeen on the other iſland. Among the plants which grew on it, we picked up ſome new ones, and on its ſhores met with a new ſort of fly-catcher, which lived upon ſhell-fiſh and worms, and ſeemed for that purpoſe to be furniſhed with a much ſtronger bill, than the birds of

1774. DECEMBER. that genus commonly have. Rowing round one end of this iſland, we obſerved a ſhrubbery, or little grove on a point of land, in the ſhade of which ſtood ſeveral empty huts. They reſembled in ſhape that which is deſcribed and drawn in the Endeavour's voyage *, with this difference, that they were not covered with ſeals-ſkins, which are perhaps put on occaſionally, and deemed too valuable to be left behind. They were only ſkeletons of huts, conſiſting of boughs of trees, which for the greateſt part had freſh green foliage on them; a ſign that the natives had but lately made them. On entering this ſound, and taking notice of its dreary, deſolate appearance, we had ſuppoſed that the natives of Tierra del Fuego, never touch upon this inhoſpitable part, but confine themſelves to the neighbourhood of the Straits of Magalhaens, and to the eaſtern ſide of Tierra del Fuego; but it ſeems that human nature is capable of withſtanding the greateſt inclemencies of weather, and of ſupporting its exiſtence alike in the burning ſands of Africa, and in the frozen extremities of the globe. We landed on ſeveral other iſlands, from whence we had a moſt extenſive view acroſs the ſound, which looked wild and horrid in its wintery dreſs. This was however, the firſt ſummer month of theſe regions; moſt of the plants we ſaw were in flower, and the birds were every where bringing up their young. From thence we may eaſily form an

* See Hawkeſworth, vol. II.

adequate

adequate idea of the torpid ſtate of theſe regions, where the ſun-beams cannot melt the ſnow, at a ſeaſon when their influence is the ſtrongeſt. The farther we advanced from the ſea, the more ſnow appeared on the mountains. In ſome places we ſaw caſcades, and ſtreams guſhing down over the ſnow, eſpecially where the rays of the ſun took effect by being frequently reflected. We found a moſt beautiful cove on this coaſt, which formed a circular baſon, where the water was ſmooth and tranſparent as a mirror. All the lower parts were fringed with trees, which we had no where ſeen ſo tall in the neighbourhood, and many ſtreams ruſhed down with great impetuoſity between their roots, making a moſt convenient watering-place. A prodigious number of ſmall birds ſat on every branch, and twittered around us in the ſun-ſhine. They were of many different ſpecies, but unacquainted with men, hopped ſo near us, that it was impoſſible to ſhoot them, eſpecially as we had now no other than coarſe ſhot left, and that in very ſmall quantity. Abundance of moſſes, ferns, and climbers grew up between the trees, and were no ſmall impediment to us in walking. Various flowers enlivened theſe woods, and encreaſed our collection with new ſpecies. Here then there was the appearance of ſummer; but if we looked up to the monſtrous cloud-capt mountains which formed almoſt perpendicular walls on all ſides of the harbour, and beheld them covered with ſnow and ice, which had ſome- 1774 DECEMBER.

1774. DECEMBER. times a blue, and ſometimes a yellowiſh tinge, we thought ourſelves tranſported to the Glaciers of Switzerland, where the ſeaſons ſeem likewiſe to be loſt, and confounded in each other. The height of theſe mountains was very conſiderable, though not equal to the Alps, and their ſummits were divided into many ſharp and craggy points, between which the interval was filled with ſnow. We landed here, and walked along the ſhore to another port, formed by a number of low iſlands, which entirely ſheltered it from all winds. Here we met with ſeveral ſpecies of wild ducks, and particularly one of the ſize of a gooſe, which ran along the ſurface of the ſea with amazing velocity, beating the water with its wings and feet.

——fugit illa per undas
Ocyor et jaculo, et ventos æquante ſagittâ. VIRGIL.

Indeed its motion was ſo quick, that we ſaw it was in vain to attempt to ſhoot at it; a more favourable opportunity was therefore eagerly wiſhed for. In the ſequel we really obtained ſeveral ſpecimens of this curious bird, which reſembled a duck, except in the ſize, and in the extreme ſhortneſs of its wings. It had a grey plumage, with a few white quill-feathers; a yellow bill and feet, and two large, naked, callous knobs of the ſame colour, upon the joint of each wing, at the *alula*. Our ſailors called it a race-horſe, from its vaſt ſwiftneſs; but in the Falkland

Falkland Iſlands, the Engliſh have given it the name of loggerhead-duck *. Beſides this ſpecies, we found numbers of the great gull or ſkua, which had their neſts among ſome dry graſs on one of the iſlands. We were fortunate enough to meet with an iſland entirely covered with the ſhrubs of a ſpecies of arbutus, loaded with red fruit, of the ſize of ſmall cherries, which were very well taſted, and combined an agreeable tartneſs with a ſweet and a bitter flavour. The rocks of the ſame iſland, at the water's edge, were covered with large muſcle-ſhells, of which we found the fiſh more delicious than oyſters. On theſe two articles, with the help of a few biſcuits, and a little piece of ſalt-beef, we dined luxurioufly, amidſt the dreary rocks of a country, which at firſt ſight did not ſeem likely to furniſh ſuch an entertainment. To add to our good fortune, we met with ſeveral iſlands in our return, covered with excellent celery, which, though much ſmaller than that of New Zeeland, was much higher flavoured, its juices being probably more concentrated. We loaded our boat with it, and returned late on board, after being overtaken by ſeveral ſmart ſhowers. On our return, we found that the neighbourhood of the ſhip was very ſenſibly warmer than the northern parts of the ſound, where the air was refrigrated by the abundance of ſnow on the mountains. 1774. DECEMBER.

* See the Philoſophical Tranſactions, vol. LXVI. part 1.

One

1774. DECEMBER. One of the lieutenants returned the ſame evening from an excurſion to the north-weſtward, whither he had been ſent by captain Cook to take the bearings of the land.

Friday 23. The next day was ſo fine and mild, that ſeveral gentlemen walked acroſs the iſland under which the ſhip lay at anchor, and ſhot many little birds in their excurſion. Mr. Hodges took a draught of the whole ſound from the height, which has a moſt pictureſque appearance in that point of view. It has been engraved for captain Cook's account of this voyage; and the print is remarkable for the figure of a falcon in the fore-ground, which, from its ſupernatural ſize, ſeems to reſemble the rukh, celebrated in the Arabian Tales, more than any bird of leſs fanciful dimenſions. We met with a moſt beautiful ſpecies of hawk on Tierra del Fuego, about the ſize of the falcon gentil, brown, with a black creſt, and the neck and ſhoulders barred with a grey and chocolate colour; the figure above mentioned may perhaps be meant for this ſpecies.

We accompanied the captain this morning on an excurſion round the iſland under which the ſhip lay at anchor, whilſt he ſent lieutenant Pickerſgill to explore another part of the bay. The trouble of this day we thought well rewarded by a great number of ſhags which we ſhot among the rocks, where they had built their neſts by thouſands. The power of inſtinct had commonly impelled them to chooſe for this purpoſe ſuch places where the rocks project over the

ſea,

ſea, or where at leaſt they riſe perpendicular; that in caſe their young ſhould happen to fall out, they might take no hurt by dropping only in the water. The ſlate of which the rock conſiſted in this part was not very hard; but it is nevertheleſs very ſurpriſing that theſe birds have found means to make holes in it, or even to enlarge its natural cavities ſo much, as to make room for their offspring in them. Theſe ſhags always returned to their neſts immediately after we had fired, and flew ſo heavily, that we found not much difficulty to ſhoot them on the wing. The French at the Falkland Iſles have called theſe birds *nigauds*, or ninnies, on account of their ſeeming ſtupidity, which could hardly be taught to ſhun deſtruction *. Beſides theſe, we alſo brought on board three geeſe which we had ſhot on this excurſion, and which were very remarkable, on account of the difference of colour between the male and female. The gander was ſomewhat leſs than a common tame gooſe, and perfectly white, except the feet, which were yellow, and the bill, which was black. The gooſe, on the contrary, was black, with white tranſverſe bars, a grey head, ſome green, and ſome white quill-feathers. It ſhould ſeem that nature hath very wiſely ordered this diſparity; for the female being obliged to lead the young brood, its graver colour does not ſo eaſily diſcover them to

1774. DECEMBER.

* See Dom Pernetty's Voyage to the Malouines.

falcons

1774. DECEMBER. falcons and other birds of prey. I would only hint this as a ſuppoſition which requires farther confirmation; perhaps our underſtanding is much too ſhort-ſighted to aſſign, on ſuch ſlight grounds, the true ways of Divine Providence in the wonderful works of the creation.

After we had returned on board, lieutenant Pickerſgill arrived, who had met with a cove on the eaſtern ſhore of the ſound, where a prodigious number of geeſe had taken up their reſidence. Captain Cook being deſirous to procure ſome kind of refreſhment for his people, and to enable them to ſpend their Chriſtmas-day with chearfulneſs, proceeded towards that place the next morning, and ſent Mr. Pickerſgill thither in another boat by a different route. My father, Dr. Sparrman, myſelf, and one midſhipman, accompanied the captain in the pinnace. We ſtood out to ſea, along an iſland to the eaſt of the ſhip, which lay between us and the Gooſe Cove. It happened very fortunately that we took this courſe, without which we ſhould probably have made a very unſucceſsful excurſion. But along the whole ſouthern extremity of the iſland, extending at leaſt four or five miles, we ſaw prodigious numbers of geeſe, which ſuffered us to come cloſe to them. We perceived that they were, for the greateſt part, young birds of the laſt year's brood, which moulted their feathers in this place, and having loſt their quill-feathers, could not fly to any great diſtance. If we had been appriſed of this circumſtance at firſt, we might

might have taken greater ſpoils than we did; however, after toiling till ſunſet, we had collected no leſs than ſixty-three geeſe, which enabled us to give a freſh meal to every man on board. The ſport of the day was extremely entertaining; for though the object of our miſſion was variety, yet our principles were not yet ſufficiently ſanctified, to refuſe a good meal when it was offered*. We found many deep caverns in the rock, which vaulted ſometimes thirty yards over our heads; and the ſwell being rather moderate, we could often enter into theſe dark places with the boat, and were always amply rewarded for our trouble by meeting with a number of birds. Several of theſe caverns were forty or fifty yards in length, and the rocky walls, about their entrance, were commonly the abode of ſhags, to which we paid no attention at preſent. The ſlate of which many of theſe rocks conſiſt had likewiſe huge chaſms and crevices, which commonly proved fatal to the geeſe, as they could ſeldom fly over, but fell between them, and were taken up alive by our ſailors, to whom this employment was an inexhauſtible fund of diverſion. It was late in the evening when we arrived on board, where we found lieutenant Pickerſgill, who had diſcovered a ſmall iſland in his way, almoſt entirely covered with the eggs of ſea-ſwallows or terns. He brought away about three hundred of them, which were in general very fit to be eaten. 1774. DECEMBER.

* See Hawkeſworth, vol. III. p. 502.

1774. DECEMBER. Sunday 25.

During our abſence ſome of the natives, in four ſmall canoes, had viſited the ſhip; they were deſcribed to us as wretched and poor, but inoffenſive, and ready to part with their ſpears, ſeal-ſkins, and the like. We now regretted that we had loſt the opportunity of ſeeing them, but fortunately they returned the next morning, though the weather was rainy. The four canoes in which they came were made of the bark of trees, which could hardly have grown in this ſound, on account of their ſize. Several ſmall ſticks are the ribs which diſtend this bark, and another ſtick forms the gunwale, over which they have wrapped the extremity of the bark, and ſewed it on. A few ſtones, with a ſmall quantity of earth, are laid in the bottom of each canoe, and on this the natives keep a conſtant fire. Their paddles are ſmall, and rudely formed, and they work very ſlowly with them. Each canoe contained from five to eight perſons, including children, who, contrary to the cuſtom of all the nations in the South Sea, were very ſilent in their approach to the ſhip, and when along ſide, hardly pronounced any other word than *peſſeray*. Thoſe whom M. de Bougainville ſaw in the Strait of Magelhaens, not far from hence, uſed the ſame word, from whence he gave them the general name of Pecherais. We beckoned to them to come into the ſhip, and ſome accepted the invitation, though without the leaſt ſign of being pleaſed, and ſeemingly without the ſmalleſt degree of curioſity. Their perſons were ſhort, not exceeding

ing five feet ſix inches at moſt, their heads large, the face broad, the cheek-bones very prominent, and the noſe very flat. They had little brown eyes, without life; their hair was black and lank, hanging about their heads in diſorder, and beſmeared with train-oil. On the chin they had a few ſtraggling ſhort hairs inſtead of a beard, and from their noſe there was a conſtant diſcharge of *mucus* into their ugly open mouth. The whole aſſemblage of their features formed the moſt loathſome picture of miſery and wretchedneſs to which human nature can poſſibly be reduced. Mr. Hodges made a moſt excellent drawing of one of the men, which is extremely characteriſtic, and the print which Mr. Baſire has executed after it, for captain Cook's account of this voyage, is a proof of his conſummate ſkill. The ſhoulders and cheſt were broad and bony, but the reſt of the figure was ſo thin and ſhrivelled, that to have ſeen it ſeparate, we could not have ſuppoſed it belonged to the ſame perſon. Their legs were lean and bowed, and their knees diſproportionately large. They had no other clothing than a ſmall piece of old ſeal-ſkin, which hung from their ſhoulders to the middle of the back, being faſtened round the neck with a ſtring. The reſt of their body was perfectly naked, not the leaſt regard being paid to what Europeans would term decency. Their natural colour appeared to be an olive-brown, with a kind of gloſs, which has really ſome reſemblance to that of copper; but many

1774. DECEMBER.

1774. DECEMBER. of them had diſguiſed themſelves with ſtreaks of red paint, and ſometimes, though ſeldom, with white; from whence it ſhould ſeem evident, that the ideas of ornament are of a more ancient date with mankind, than thoſe of ſhame and modeſty. The women were nearly formed as the men, though ſomewhat leſs in ſtature; their features were not leſs uncouth and ugly, and their dreſs exactly the ſame. They had only added a ſmall piece of ſeal-ſkin, not ſo large as the palm of the hand, which hung down before, fixed to a ſtring, which was tied about the waiſt. Round their necks they wore leather ſtrings, on which they had hung a number of ſhells; and on their heads they had a kind of bonnet, conſiſting of a few white quill feathers of geeſe, which they occaſionally placed upright on the head, by that means giving them a reſemblance to the French head-dreſſes of the laſt century *. There was but a ſingle perſon among them, who had a ſmall piece of a guanaco's ſkin ſewed on his ſeal-ſkin, to lengthen it. The children were perfectly naked, and, like their mothers, huddled about the fire in each canoe, ſhivering continually with cold, and rarely uttering any other word than *peſſeray*, which ſometimes ſounded like a word of endearment, and ſometimes ſeemed to be the expreſſion of complaint. Thoſe of the men who had come on deck, ſpoke a few other words, which contained many conſonants and gutturals, particularly the *ll* of the

* Fontanges.

Welch;

Welch; and all ſeemed to liſp very ſtrongly, which contributed to make them wholly unintelligible. They accepted trifles, ſuch as beads, without ſeeming to value them, but at the ſame time they alſo gave away their own arms, or even their ragged ſeal-ſkins, without the leaſt concern; their whole character being the ſtrangeſt compound of ſtupidity, indifference, and inactivity. They had no other arms than bows and arrows; the former were made of a kind of berberry wood, very ſmall and ill-ſhaped; and the latter of a different wood, between two and three feet long, feathered at one end, and not pointed. The points are put on occaſionally, and they carried them in little ſeal-ſkin ſatchels, and parted only with a ſingle one, which was a wretched irregular triangle of black ſlate. Beſides theſe they have fiſh-gigs, of which the ſtaffs are about ten feet long, of equal thickneſs, but angular inſtead of being round, and provided at one end with a ſharp bone about a foot long, which has a ſingle barb on one ſide, and is occaſionally tied on. Theſe inſtruments they employ to take ſhells from the rocks, according to the accounts of former voyagers *. All thoſe geſtures, which the moſt wretched nation in the South Sea had eaſily underſtood, were made to them in vain; they ſeemed not to have the moſt diſtant idea of teaching us their language, and having probably 1774. DECEMBER.

* See Hawkeſworth, vol. II. p. 56.

no

1774. DECEMBER. no eager deſire of poſſeſſing any thing which they ſaw amongſt us, they were not ſollicitous to make themſelves intelligible. All thoſe who had made the voyage in the Endeavour agreed, that the people whom they had ſeen at Succeſs Bay, lived much more comfortably and happily than theſe wretched outcaſts *; and upon comparing my account with the publiſhed narrative of that voyage, it will eaſily appear, that the Pecherais of Succeſs Bay were conſiderably more civilized (if I may make uſe of this term) than thoſe who fell under our obſervation. Their ſtature was taller; they had contrived buſkins, which ſecured their feet; they appeared to be ſenſible of the excellence of ſeveral European goods, and to ſet a value upon them; laſtly, they were more communicative, and had ideas of ceremony or civility; whereas thoſe we ſaw, at the ſame time that they felt the inclemency of the weather, were yet too ſtupid, too indolent, or too wretchedly deſtitute of means to guard againſt it. They ſeemed totally inſenſible of the ſuperiority of our ſituation, and did not once, with a ſingle geſture, expreſs their admiration of the ſhip, and its many great and remarkable objects. I cannot figure to myſelf a more unhappy human being, than one who ſeems to be ſo far deprived of reaſon, as not to defend himſelf againſt the injuries of weather, whilſt he ſeverely feels its effects; and

* See Hawkeſworth, vol. II. p. 54.

who

who is incapable of combining ideas, and comparing his own neceſſitous ſituation with that of others more happy than himſelf. If ever the pre-eminence of a civilized life over that of the ſavage could have been reaſonably diſputed, we might, from the bare contemplation of theſe miſerable people, draw the moſt ſtriking concluſions in favour of our ſuperior happineſs. Till it can be proved, that a man in continual pain, from the rigour of climate, is happy, I ſhall not give credit to the eloquence of philoſophers, who have either had no opportunity of contemplating human nature under all its modifications, or who have not felt what they have ſeen *. It were to be wiſhed, that the conſciouſneſs of thoſe great advantages which heaven hath beſtowed on us, in preference to ſo many of our rational fellow-creatures, might tend to the general reformation of morals amongſt us; inſtead of which, our civilized communities are ſtained with vices and enormities, unknown to the wretch, who, compared with ourſelves, is next to a brute, being deſtitute of that ſuperior knowledge, 1774. DECEMBER.

* The ill-natured ſyſtem of philoſophy which theſe men ſupport, is only copied from Seneca, who made light of the diſtreſſes of others, being himſelf in affluence. The following paſſage is very applicable to the poor Pecherais, and the reflection at the end is one of thoſe I allude to. *Perpetua illos hiems, triſte cœlum premit;—imbrem culmo aut fronde defendunt; nulla illis domicilia, nullæ ſedes ſunt, niſi quas laſſitudo in diem poſuit.—In alimentis feras captant,—vilis, & hic quærendus manu victus.—Miſeri tibi videntur?—Nihil miſerum eſt quod in naturam conſuetudo perduxit.—Hoc quod tibi calamitas videtur, tot gentium vita eſt.*—Seneca de Providentiâ. See alſo Hawkeſworth, vol. II. p. 59.

of

1774. DECEMBER. of which, to our ſhame be it ſpoken, we do not always make the beſt uſes.

Theſe wretched natives of a moſt dreary country, fed on pieces of ſeal's-fleſh, which being very putrid, were become highly offenſive. They reliſhed the fat oily part, which we would reject at all times, and offered ſome of it to our ſailors. It ſhould ſeem that they prefer this vile blubber by inſtinct, as all nations in high latitudes are fond of it, and are ſaid, in ſome meaſure to ſeaſon their bodies againſt the cold by this diet. The natural conſequence of it was an inſupportable rank ſtench, which exhaled from their whole body, and which their fleſh, their dreſſes, arms, ornaments, and utenſils ſeemed to have thoroughly imbibed. This odour was ſo completely nauſeous, that we could not continue long in their company, and with our eyes ſhut, could ſmell them at a conſiderable diſtance. It almoſt ſurpaſſes belief, but is nevertheleſs an undeniable fact, that our boldeſt and rougheſt ſailors were ſo totally overcome by this horrid exhalation, that they did not offer to contract any intimate acquaintance with the women. Our people offered them ſalt proviſions, and rotten biſcuit, but they ſet no manner of value on this food, and could hardly be perſuaded to taſte of it. Did their inſtinct perhaps teach them that it was more unwholeſome than their own rotten ſeal's-fleſh?—We did not obſerve any kind of ſubordination among theſe people, whoſe mode of life approaches nearer

to

to that of brutes, than that of any other nation. It is indeed very probable, that they are the miſerable out-caſts of ſome neighbouring tribe, which enjoys a more comfortable life; and that being reduced to live in this dreary inhoſpitable part of Tierra del Fuego, they have gradually loſt every idea, but thoſe which their moſt urgent wants give riſe to. They ramble perhaps in queſt of food, from one inlet or bay into another, as we have reaſon to ſuppoſe this ſound communicates with others, and take up their winter reſidence in the leaſt uncomfortable ſpot of this horrid country. I am indeed of opinion that the rigour of the winter, is not proportionate to the cold during ſummer, particularly as the thermometrical obſervations made in the Falkland Iſlands, (ſee vol. I. p. 499.) which are not far from Tierra del Fuego, and nearly in the ſame latitude, ſtrongly confirm this ſuppoſition. But allowing the winters to be as mild as poſſible, ſtill however they muſt prove dreadfully diſtreſſing to theſe poor deſtitute wretches, who have not ſagacity enough to guard againſt them. We are told by the Dutch navigators, eſpecially admiral Jacques l'Hermite, who conducted the Naſſau fleet into the South Sea in 1624, that the natives on the ſouthern extremity of Tierra del Fuego are cannibals, and kill each other in order to regale themſelves *. If there be any likelihood that want of food has

1774. DECEMBER.

* See Recueil des Voyages qui ont ſervi à l'Etabliſſement de la Compagnie des Indes Orientales. Amſterd. 1705, vol. IV. p. 702.

1774. DECEMBER. ever ſuggeſted this horrid practice, I ſhould admit that it was poſſible, among a ſmall number of unhappy individuals, driven from more convenient ſeats to theſe barren extremities of the world; and in that caſe it muſt likewiſe be allowed, that ſuch a tribe cannot long continue in being.

The poor Pecherais embarked in their canoes again about noon, and ſlowly and ſilently paddled away, in the Monday 26. ſame manner as they came. Our ſailors well pleaſed to ſee their ſhip ſafe at anchor, had already begun their holiday the evening before, and continued to carouſe during two days without intermiſſion, till captain Cook ordered the greateſt part of them to be packed into a boat, and put aſhore, to recover from their drunkenneſs in the freſh air.

Tueſday 27. On the 27th in the morning, ſome of the people being tolerably ſober, captain Cook manned a boat, and went with my father, and Dr. Sparrman, to the ſame iſland where we had been ſo ſucceſsful on the 24th. He brought on board in the evening ſome geeſe and other fowls, which were roaſted, and preſerved as a kind of ſea-ſtock. In his abſence the natives came on board again, but made a very ſhort ſtay, as nobody took any notice of them on account of their inſufferable ſtench. The word *peſſeray* which they repeated from time to time, was pronounced in ſuch a piteous tone, that we ſometimes believed the natives were begging; but upon looking at them, we diſcovered no change

change of countenance; nothing but that vacant ſtare which is the characteriſtic of the moſt conſummate ſtupidity. 1774. DECEMBER.

Having completed our proviſion of wood and water, and brought the tents on board, which had been erected on ſhore, we ſailed the 28th in the morning, at eight o'clock, on our way towards Cape Horn. The refreſhments which we had obtained in this ſound, which was named Chriſtmas Sound, and its convenient ſituation for ſhips coming into, or going out of the South Sea, make it a very fit place of reſort. It contains many excellent harbours, and has wood enough for fuel, though little or none for the carpenter's uſe; its water is very pure, and well-taſted, and the air though keen, is yet very ſalubrious. Whilſt we lay in this ſound, one of the marines was unfortunately drowned. He was not miſſed till two days after, when an enquiry being made, it was diſcovered, that being much intoxicated he had gone down into the head, where he had probably ſlipped overboard. It was the ſame perſon who had before eſcaped drowning off the Iſle of Irromanga, and who afterwards ſhot a native of Tanna. This was the fourth and laſt man we loſt in the courſe of our whole voyage. Wedneſd. 28.

In the afternoon we paſſed the iſland of St. Ildefonſo, probably ſo called by Spaniſh navigators; after which we ſteered to the eaſtward whilſt it was light, and tacked till Thurſday 29.

1774. DECEMBER. the day broke. At ſix in the morning we paſſed Cape Horn, which is a large black rock, at the extremity of an iſland, lying before the Naſſau inlet, diſcovered by Jacques l'Hermite *. This famous cape has hitherto been ill placed in the charts, but the two voyages of captain Cook round it, have fixed its ſituation exactly at 55° 58′ S. and 67° 46′ W. After taking our leave of the South Sea, we ſteered for Le Maire's Strait, between Tierra del Fuego, and Staten Iſland. Towards evening, we came near enough to obſerve, that this ſide of Tierra del Fuego had a much milder aſpect, than that about Chriſtmas Sound. Here the land ſloped down from the hills into long level points, covered with tall foreſts; and no ſnow was to be ſeen, except on the diſtant weſtern mountains. We entered the ſtrait the next morning, but were becalmed in it almoſt the whole day. Succeſs Bay lay open to our eyes, and the country about it looked ſo rich and fertile, that we heartily wiſhed to make ſome ſtay there.

About two o'clock in the afternoon, whilſt we were at dinner, captain Cook diſpatched a boat to the ſhore, in order to examine whether the Adventure had touched there, and to leave ſome account of our paſſing the ſtrait. The ſhip in the mean while ſtood on with faint breezes towards the

* See Recueil des Voyages qui ont ſervi à l'Eſtabliſſement, &c. vol. IV. p. 696.

ſide

ſide of Tierra del Fuego, in order to take up the boat on its return. A number of large whales, not leſs than thirty, and ſome hundreds of ſeals, played in the water about us. The whales went chiefly in couples, from whence we ſuppoſed this to be the ſeaſon when the ſexes meet. Whenever they ſpouted up the water, or, as the ſailors term it, were ſeen blowing to windward, the whole ſhip was infected with a moſt deteſtable, rank, and poiſonous ſtench, which went off in the ſpace of two or three minutes. Sometimes theſe huge animals lay on their backs, and with their long pectoral fins beat the ſurface of the ſea, which always cauſed a great noiſe, equal to the exploſion of a ſwivel. This kind of play has doubtleſs given riſe to the mariner's ſtory of a fight between the thraſher and whale, of which the former is ſaid to leap out of the water, in order to fall heavily on the latter. Here we had an opportunity of obſerving the ſame exerciſe many times repeated, and diſcerned that all the belly and under ſide of the fins and tail are of a white colour, whereas the reſt is black. As we happened to be only ſixty yards from one of theſe animals, we perceived a number of longitudinal furrows, or wrinkles, on its belly, from whence we concluded it was the ſpecies by Linnæus named *balæna boops*. Beſides flapping their fins in the water, theſe unwieldy animals, of forty feet in length, and not leſs than ten feet in diameter, ſometimes fairly leaped into the air, and dropped down again with a heavy fall, which

1774. DECEMBER.

1774. DECEMBER. which made the water foam all round them. The prodigious quantity of power required to raiſe ſuch a vaſt creature out of the water is aſtoniſhing; and their peculiar oeconomy cannot but give room to many reflections.

The boat which the captain had ſent to Succeſs Bay returned about ſix o'clock in the evening. The lieutenant acquainted us that his boat had been followed into the bay by many ſeals, and ſome whales, upon one of which the boat narrowly eſcaped ſtriking. He had not found the leaſt ſign at the watering-place of any European ſhip having lately paſſed this way; but on landing, ſeveral natives met him well dreſſed in guanacoe-ſkins, and large cloaks of ſeal-ſkins, with a much more chearful and happy countenance, than the poor tribe whom we had left at Chriſtmas Sound. They had bracelets of reed, with ſilver-wire wrapped about it, to which they often pointed, pronouncing the word *paſſeray*, and ſeeming to ſet no value on any thing our people had to offer. It was concluded that they had received theſe ornaments from the Spaniards, either by means of ſhips which had touched at this bay, or indirectly through the hands of other tribes to the north of the ſtrait of Magelhaens. After ſtaying on ſhore two or three minutes, our people re-embarked, and came on board. We continued our courſe through the Strait of Le Maire, and the next morning ran along the ſhore of Staten Land, which was wrapped in thick fogs. Later in the day the fog cleared a little

a little away, and gave us a view of the land, which con- 1774. DECEMBER.
ſiſted of mountains, to the full as craggy and barren as thoſe of the weſt coaſt of Tierra del Fuego, though not ſo high, and therefore leſs covered with ſnow. Several iſlands, about thirty yards perpendicular in height, lay off this coaſt, and ſeemed entirely covered with graſs at the top. Great numbers of ſeals were ſeen about them; and as captain Cook was in want of oil, he thought he ſhould have the beſt opportunity of providing himſelf with this article, by coming to an anchor ſomewhere in the neighbourhood. Theſe iſlands were ſeen by father Feuilleé, who has given a map of them in his Voyage to Peru, which we found to be very erroneous. After turning round them, we perceived a ſnug harbour on Staten Land, but captain Cook did not chooſe to put in there, becauſe he was of opinion he might be detained in it by contrary winds. He therefore preferred anchoring under the lee of one of the low iſlands; and as the 31ſt of December ended at noon, according to the nautical reckoning, he gave theſe iſlands the name of New Year's Iſlands, and the harbour on Staten Land, that of New Year's Harbour.

CHAP.

1774. DECEMBER.

CHAP. VI.

Stay at the New Year's Iſlands.—Diſcovery of lands to the ſouthward. —Return to the Cape of Good Hope.

Saturday 31. OUR boats were hoiſted out immediately after dinner, and we went in them to the iſland, which was above a mile off. The rocks along ſhore were covered with a multitude of ſeals, amongſt which the largeſt had a long ſhaggy mane, and therefore deſerved to be called ſea-lions with much greater propriety, than thoſe ſmooth animals to which Lord Anſon gave that name at Juan Fernandez. Indeed many former navigators have alſo given them that name, though their writings are little read at preſent *.

* Francis Pretty, in Hackluyt, III. ſpeaks of our ſea-lions, p. 805. "Theſe ſeales are of a wonderfull great bigneſſe, huge and monſtrous of ſhape, and for the forepart of their bodies cannot be compared to any thing better than to a lion: their head and necke, and foreparts of their bodies, are full of rough haire." Sir Richard Hawkins ſays ſomething to the ſame purpoſe, and adds, that they have whiſkers, of which one may make tooth-picks.—See Des Broſſes Nav. aux Terres Auſtrales, vol. I. p. 244. Sir John Narborough likewiſe takes notice of their ſtriking reſemblance to lions; and Labbe, in the Lettres des Miſſionnaires, tom. XV. adds, that the ſea-lion only differs from the ſea-bear by the long hair about his neck; an obſervation which is ſtrictly true.—See Des Broſſes Nav. aux Terres Auſtrales, vol. II. p. 434.

We

1774. DECEMBER.

We put into a little cove under ſhelter of a few rocks, and fired at ſome of theſe fierce animals, moſt of which immediately threw themſelves into the water. Some of the moſt unwieldy, however, kept their ground, and were killed by our bullets. Several ſhowers interrupted our ſport for ſome time, but the weather clearing up afterwards, we killed with clubs a great number of the fatteſt ſea-lions, which our crew carried on board, in order to boil their blubber into train-oil. The old males were in general very fat, and meaſured from ten to twelve feet in length; the females were more ſlender, and from ſix to eight feet long. The weight of the largeſt male amounts to 1200 or 1500lb. for one of a middle ſize weighed 550lb. after the ſkin, entrails, and blubber were taken off. The head of the male has really ſome reſemblance to a lion's head, and the colour is likewiſe very nearly the ſame, being only a darker hue of tawny. The long ſhaggy hair on the neck and throat of the male, beginning at the back of the head, bears a ſtrong reſemblance to a mane, and is hard and coarſe to the touch; all the reſt of the body is covered with ſhort hairs, which lie very cloſe to the ſkin, and form a ſmooth gloſſy coat. The lioneſs is perfectly ſmooth all over the body; but both ſexes are formed alike with regard to the feet, or rather fins. Thoſe fins which originate near the breaſt are large flat pieces of a black coriaceous membrane, which have only ſome ſmall indiſtinct veſtiges of

1774. DECEMBER. nails on their middle. The hinder fins are rather more like feet, being black membranes divided into five long toes, with a thin thong, or membrane, projecting far beyond the nails, which are very ſmall. With theſe nails however we have ſeen them ſcratch all parts of their body. The tail is exceſſively ſhort, and hid between the hind feet or fins, which grow cloſe together. The whole hind quarters are very round, being covered with an amazing quantity of fat. The noiſe which all the animals of this kind make together was various, and ſometimes ſtunned our ears. The old males ſnort and roar like mad bulls or lions; the females bleat exactly like calves, and the young cubs like lambs. Of the young we ſaw great numbers on the beaches; and one of the females being knocked down with a club, littered in the ſame inſtant. The ſea-lions live together in numerous herds. The oldeſt and fatteſt males lie apart, each having choſen a large ſtone, which none of the reſt dares approach without engaging in a furious battle. We have often ſeen them ſeize each other with a degree of rage which is not to be deſcribed; and many of them had deep gaſhes on their backs, which they had received in the wars. The younger active ſea-lions, with all the females and the cubs, lie together. They commonly waited the approach of our people; but as ſoon as ſome of the herd were killed, the reſt took flight with great precipitation, ſome females carrying off a cub in their mouths, whilſt many were

ſo

1774. DECEMBER.

ſo terrified as to leave them behind. When left to themſelves, they were often ſeen careſſing each other in the moſt tender manner, and their ſnouts oft met together, as if they were kiſſing. The late profeſſor Steller found theſe animals at Bering's Iſland, near Kamtchatka, where he was ſhipwrecked; and his deſcriptions, the firſt and beſt ever drawn up, correſpond exactly with our obſervations. M. Pernetty, in his Voyage to the Falkland Iſlands, has likewiſe mentioned them; but his figure, which is very inaccurate, is perfectly in the ſtyle of all his other drawings, and correſponds with the truth and accuracy of his writings *. M. de Bougainville, in his Voyage round the World, alſo ſpeaks of them. They come aſhore on theſe uninhabited ſpots to breed; they do not, however, feed during their ſtay on ſhore, which ſometimes laſts ſeveral weeks, but grow lean, and ſwallow a conſiderable quantity of ſtones to keep their ſtomach diſtended. We were ſurpriſed to find the ſtomachs of many of theſe animals entirely empty, and of others filled with ten or a dozen round heavy ſtones, each of the ſize of two fiſts †.

* See his Voyage, Engliſh edition, p. 240, and tab. 15, fig. 2.

† Beaucheſne Gouin, the French navigator, has made the ſame obſervation, and adds, "there was ſome appearance that theſe ſtones were already begun to be digeſted;" though I doubt whether this part of the ſtory will gain credit with his readers.—See Des Broſſes Navig. aux Terres Auſtrales, vol. II. p. 114.

1774. DECEMBER.

Having made ſome havock among theſe creatures, we walked upon the ſummit of the iſland, which was nearly level, but covered with innumerable little mounds of earth, on each of which grew a large tuft of graſs (*dactylis glomerata*). The intervals between theſe tufts were very muddy and dirty, which obliged us to leap from one tuft to the other. We ſoon diſcovered that another kind of ſeals occupied this part of the iſland, and cauſed the mud by coming wet out of the ſea. Theſe were no other than the ſea-bears which we had already ſeen at Duſky Bay, but which were here infinitely more numerous, and grown to a much larger ſize, equalling that aſſigned to them by Steller. They are however far inferior to the ſea-lions, the males being never above eight or nine feet long, and thick in proportion. Their hair is dark brown, minutely ſprinkled with grey, and much longer on the whole body than that of the ſea-lion, but does not form a mane. The general outline of the body, and the ſhape of the fins are exactly the ſame. They were more fierce towards us, and their females commonly died in defence of their young. Great numbers of a ſpecies of vultures, commonly called carrion crows by the ſailors (*vultur aura*), were ſeen upon this iſland, and probably feed on young ſeal-cubs, which either die in the birth, or which they take an opportunity to ſeize upon. Beſides them we alſo found a new ſpecies of hawks, and

ſeveral

ſeveral geeſe of the ſort which had ſo well furniſhed out our Chriſtmas entertainment. Here we likewiſe ſaw a few pinguins, of a ſpecies which we had not met with before, ſome large grey petrels of the ſize of albatroſſes, being the ſame ſpecies which the Spaniards name *que branta-hueſſos*, or the bone-breakers, and ſome ſhags. 1774. DECEMBER.

The new year began with a very fair day, though it blew freſh, and the air was ſharp. A boat was diſpatched to New Year's harbour, to ſound and ſurvey it, but as lieutenant Pickerſgill had orders not to make any ſtay on ſhore, we did not accompany him, chooſing rather to take another turn on the new iſland with captain Cook. The ſtrata of this iſland, conſiſted of a yellowiſh clay-ſtone, and ſometimes of a grey ſlate, both which were of different degrees of hardneſs, in different places. We fell in with many herds of ſea-bears, and ſea-lions, which we did not attack, as another party was ſent out upon that errand. We obſerved however, that theſe two ſpecies, though ſometimes encamped on the ſame beach, always kept at a great diſtance aſunder, and had no communication with each other. A ſtrong rank ſtench is common to them, as well as to all other ſeals; a circumſtance as well known to the ancients, as their inactivity and drowſineſs whilſt they lie on ſhore. 1775. JANUARY. Sunday 1.

—φωκαι.

1775. JANUARY.

——Φωκαι νεποδες ——

Ἀθροαι εὕδουσιν, πολιῆς ἁλος ἐξαναδυσαι,
Πικρον ἀποπνειουσαι ἁλος πολυβενθεος ὀδμην. HOMER.

Webfooted ſeals forſake the whitening waves,
And ſleep in herds, exhaling nauſeous ſtench.

Rowing along ſhore, we fell in with a ſpot where ſeveral thouſand ſhags had built their neſts, on thoſe elevated tufts which I have mentioned before. Here was an opportunity to provide the whole ſhip's company with a freſh meal, which was not neglected. The birds were for the greateſt part ſo tame, as to let our boat's crew come among them with clubs and ſtaves; by which means ſeveral hundreds of them were killed. On this day's excurſion we found a bird of a new genus, which was of the ſize of a pigeon, and perfectly white. It belonged to the claſs of wading water-fowl, its toes were half webbed, and its eyes, as well as the baſe of the bill, ſurrounded by many little white glands or warts. It had ſuch an horrid offenſive ſmell, that we could not taſte the fleſh, though at this time we were not eaſily diſguſted. Captain Cook obſerved the latitude on the eaſt end of the iſland, which was a barren rock wholly covered with herds of ſeals, flocks of gulls, ſhags, and other animals. We returned to dine on board, and then ſpent the afternoon upon the iſland again. We ſhot there ſeveral geeſe, amongſt which was a new ſpecies;

ſpecies; and were not leſs ſucceſsful among a flock of pinguins, than we had been among the ſhags in the morning. They were of the ſize of ſmall geeſe, and of that ſpecies which is the moſt common in the neighbourhood of the Straits of Magelhaens. The Engliſh at the Falkland Iſlands have named them jumping-jacks *. They ſleep very ſound, for Dr. Sparrman met one of them, which he kicked ſeveral yards by accidentally ſtumbling over it, without breaking its ſleep, till by repeatedly ſhaking the bird, it awoke. When the whole flock was beſet, they all became very bold at once, and ran violently at us, biting our legs, or any part of our clothes. They are exceſſively hard-lived, for having left a great number of them, ſeemingly dead on the field of battle, and going in the purſuit of the reſt, they all at once got up, and walked off with great gravity. The ſeals and ſea-lions were likewiſe killed with great difficulty, but their ſnout was by far the moſt ſenſible part. Dr. Sparrman, and myſelf, were near being attacked by one of the oldeſt ſea-bears, on a cliff where ſeveral hundreds lay aſſembled, which all ſeemed to wait the iſſue of the fight. The Doctor had diſcharged his muſket at a bird, and was going to pick it up, when this old bear growled and ſnarled, and ſeemed ready to oppoſe him. As ſoon as I was near enough, I ſhot the ſurly creature dead, and at that inſtant the whole herd, ſeeing their

* See Phil. Tranſ. vol. LXVI. part. i.

champion

1775. JANUARY. champion fallen, hurried to the ſea; and many of them hobbled along with ſuch precipitation, as to leap down ten or fifteen yards perpendicular, upon the pointed rocks on the ſhore, though without receiving any hurt, which may be attributed to their fat eaſily giving way, and their hide being remarkably tough.

The chace of theſe animals afforded great ſport to our people; and the many ſingular circumſtances which muſt ſtrike the obſerver, in contemplating a ſpecies of animals aſſociated into numerous herds, gave us much ſatisfaction. All theſe creatures were here in their proper climate; for the ſeals and ſea-lions being loaded with an immenſe quantity of fat, and the ſhags and pinguins with a thick plumage, felt no inconvenience from the coolneſs of the weather. The captain obtained a conſiderable quantity of blubber, which was put into caſks, and afterwards converted into oil; but a diſagreeable putrid ſtench infected the whole ſhip for ſeveral days after leaving theſe New Year's Iſles. In the evening our party returned from New Year's Harbour, on Staten Land, which they had found extremely ſafe and commodious. They brought with them ſome gulls, and five large ducks of the ſhort-winged ſort, which our ſailors called race-horſes. Each of theſe weighed ſixteen pounds, but their meat was remarkably fetid, and not fit to be eaten. We ſpent the ſecond of January in the ſame manner as the firſt, ſtill making an acquiſition of ſome

ſome new ſpecies of birds, with which this iſland, notwithſtanding its ſmall ſize, abounded. Among the reſt we found a fine ſort of grey curlew, with a yellow neck, which was one of the ſtatelieſt birds we had ever ſeen. The vegetable productions of this ſpot were confined to ſix or eight ſpecies, among which we ſaw ſome ſmall ſhrubs not above three feet high, and a new plant; but the graſs above mentioned *(dactylis glomerata)* occupied almoſt the whole ſurface of the iſland. In the evening we hoiſted in all our boats, and the next morning at three o'clock we ſet ſail, and doubled the N. E. end of Staten Land, which is named Cape St. John by father Feuillée. A prodigious ſtrong tide was obſerved to run paſt our ſhip every day whilſt we lay at anchor, at the rate of four or five miles an hour. This is, however, ſo much the leſs remarkable, as the Straits of Magelhaens and the eaſtern coaſt of America, in high ſouthern latitudes, are likewiſe known to have ſtrong tides. The New Year's Iſlands, which we now left, are ſituated in 54° 46′ S. and 64° 30′ W. The largeſt of them is about ſix leagues, and that under which we lay at anchor appeared to be between three and four leagues in circuit. They are excellent places of refreſhment for a ſhip's crew bound on expeditions like ours; for though the fleſh of ſea-lions and pinguins is not the moſt palatable food, yet it is infinitely more ſalubrious than ſalt meat; and by ſearching the different iſlands, it is not improbable

1775. JANUARY.

Tueſday 30.

1775. JANUARY. that a ſufficient quantity of celery and ſcurvy-graſs might be found to ſupply the whole crew, eſpecially as we ſaw both the ſpecies on our excurſions. Our ſeamen lived ſeveral days on young ſhags and pinguins, of which they found the former extremely palatable, comparing them to young pullets. They likewiſe roaſted ſeveral little cubs of ſeals, but there was a degree of ſoftneſs in the meat which made it diſguſtful. The fleſh of young but full-grown ſea-bears was greatly preferable, and taſted like coarſe and bad beef; but that of the old ſea-lions and bears was ſo rank and offenſive, that we could not touch it.

After ranging the eaſtern and ſouthern coaſt of Staten-Land, till the afternoon, we took our departure, and ſteered to the E. S. E. in order to paſs our third ſummer ſeaſon to the ſouthward. We had ſtrong gales, which carried away a main-top-gallant-maſt, and ſome ſtudding ſail-booms; but as the wind was in our favour, theſe loſſes were eſteemed of little conſequence. A *halo* of very great circumference Thurſday 5. was obſerved round the ſun on the 5th. It incloſed a dark area, but the circle itſelf was white, with ſeveral faint priſmatic hues on the edges. This was reckoned a prognoſtic of ſtorms, but we experienced mild weather for ſeveral days afterwards, from whence we may conclude how far ſuch ſigns are to be relied upon. The lateſt charts publiſhed in England and France, have laid down a great ſea-coaſt between 40° and 53° weſt, in the latitude of 54° and

and 58° ſouth, which they found marked in a chart pro- 1775. JANUARY.
jected by Ortelius, in 1586 *, and in that of Mercator, publiſhed ſo early as the year 1569. It appears to have been diſcovered by Spaniſh navigators, as the name of Golfo de San Sebaſtiano ſeems to indicate. We paſſed over that part of the ocean, where the weſtern coaſt of this gulph is ſaid to be ſituated, but did not meet with any land. Captain Furneaux likewiſe the year before, paſſed acroſs both the eaſtern and weſtern ſhores of this gulph, in 60°, and afterwards 58° S. from 60° to 40° W. without ſeeing land. It appears therefore that either this gulph does not exiſt, or that it is not rightly laid down in former charts; and the latter is much more probable, ſince it can hardly be conceived by what means ſuch a diſcovery could obtain a place in the old charts, without ſome authority to ſupport it.

On the 6th, at eight in the evening, we changed our courſe, and ſtood to the northward, having reached upwards of 58° S. without ſeeing any ice; though Dr. Halley, in the year 1700, at the ſame ſeaſon, found abundance of ice in the latitude of 52° S. A heavy dew fell on the 8th in the evening, which is reckoned an indubitable ſign of land; and petrels, albatroſſes, and ſeals had been ſeen from time to time, ever ſince we left Staten Land.

* See Mr. Dalrymple's Memoir of a Chart of the Southern Ocean, and the Chart itſelf, which bear an indiſputable teſtimony of the laudable enthuſiaſm with which that gentleman has proſecuted his inquiries on this ſubject.

1775. JANUARY. Having run into 54° S. we began to ſteer to the eaſtward again, in ſearch of the land which was diſcovered by M. Duclos Guyot, in the Spaniſh ſhip Lion, which ſailed from Callao in Peru, in February 1756, and paſſed Cape Horn in the depth of Winter *.

Saturday 14. We continued to ſtand to the eaſtward, ſeeing many birds, and now and then pinguins, and ſea-weeds, till the 14th, in the morning, when the officer of the watch acquainted the captain that an iſland of ice was in ſight. We continued ſailing towards it all day; but in the evening we diſcovered that what had been taken for ice, was really land, which ſeemed to be of great height, and covered with ſnow for the greateſt part. By conſulting the accounts of M. Guyot, it appears to be certain, that this land is the ſame of which he ſaw the ſouth end in June 1756, and which he named Iſle de St. Pierre. He lays it down in 38° 10′ W. from Greenwich, which agrees entirely with our obſervations of the north-weſt extremity, and is only between thirty and forty leagues to the weſt of the longitude which we aſſign for the S. E. end †. Notwithſtanding this coincidence, many were ſtill of opinion that we only ſaw

* See a Collection of Voyages, chiefly in the Southern Atlantic Ocean, publiſhed by Mr. Dalrymple, 1775. The land ſeen by Antonio la Roche, in 1675, appears to be the ſame with this diſcovered in the Lion.

† See the Extract of Mr. Guyot's Journal, publiſhed by Mr. Dalrymple in his Collection of Voyages in the Southern Atlantic Ocean, p. 5, and p. 15.

an

an iſland of ice; and as the wind was very boiſterous the next day, and the weather extremely foggy, the point remained undetermined till the 16th. We had very cold weather all this time, the thermometer being at $34\frac{1}{2}°$, and great falls of ſnow covering our decks. On the 16th, in the morning, we had ſight of the land again, and found its mountains of a vaſt height, covered with loads of ſnow and ice, in moſt places down to the water's edge. The only parts which were clear of ſnow were a few black and barren cliffs, and particularly ſome huge hollow rocks, that 1775. JANUARY.

—— o'er their wave-worn baſis bowed. SHAKESPEARE.

Towards the ſouth end of this land we ſaw ſeveral low iſlands, like the New Year's iſlands, which appeared to have ſome verdure upon them, and were therefore called the Green Iſlands. As it had been the main object of our voyage to explore the high ſouthern latitude, my father ſuggeſted to captain Cook, that it would be proper to name this land after the monarch who had ſet on foot our expedition, ſolely for the improvement of ſcience, and whoſe name ought therefore to be celebrated in both hemiſpheres,

—— Tua ſectus orbis
Nomina ducet! HOR.

It was accordingly honoured with the name of Southern Georgia, which will give it importance, and continue to ſpread

1775. JANUARY. ſpread a degree of luſtre over it, which it cannot derive from its barrenneſs and dreary appearance.

In the afternoon we ſaw two rocky iſlands at the north end of Georgia, which lay about a league aſunder, and were of a dull black colour. We ſteered towards them, and about five o'clock paſſed in the middle between them. The northernmoſt was a craggy cliff, nearly perpendicular, which contained the neſts of many thouſand ſhags, and was named Willis's Iſland; it is ſituated in 54° S. and 38° 25′ W. The ſouthernmoſt ſloped gradually to the weſtward, being covered on that ſide with ſome graſs, and with innumerable flocks of birds of all ſorts, from the largeſt albatroſſes down to the leaſt petrels, for which reaſon it was named Bird Iſland. Great numbers of ſhags, pinguins, divers, and other birds played about, and ſettled in the water around us, this cold climate ſeeming to be perfectly agreeable to them. Several porpeſſes were likewiſe noticed, and many ſeals were ſeen, which probably came to breed on theſe inhoſpitable ſhores.

We ran along the north-eaſt coaſt of the land till it was dark, when we brought to, and did not reſume our courſe Tueſday 17. till the next morning at three o'clock. The aſpect of the land was extremely unpromiſing; the mountains were the moſt craggy we had ever ſeen, and formed many ſharp points, between which the intervals were filled up with ſnow. We paſſed a bay, which, from the number of low green

green iſlands in it, was named the Bay of Iſlands, and opened another, towards which we ſtood with the ſhip, having ſoundings at the diſtance of two or three miles. About nine o'clock a boat was hoiſted out, and captain Cook, accompanid by one midſhipman, my father, Dr. Sparrman, and myſelf, went into the bay. We ſounded in the entrance, but found no bottom with thirty-four fathom. Upon advancing into the furtheſt receſs of the bay, we ſoon obſerved a ſolid maſs of ice, ſuch as is found in the harbours of Spitſbergen *, in the northern hemiſphere. This maſs of ice bore a great reſemblance to thoſe detached iſlands, of which we ſaw ſuch numbers floating upon the ocean in the high ſouthern latitudes. The ſhores of the bay, nearer the ſea, were clear of ſnow, but exceſſively dreary, and almoſt perpendicular. We landed in a ſpot which was perfectly ſheltered from the ſwell, and where the land formed a long projecting point. Here we ſaw a number of ſeals aſſembled on a ſtony beach, and among them a huge animal, which we had taken to be a rock at a diſtance, but which proved to be exactly the ſame animal with lord Anſon's ſea-lion. The midſhipman ſhot it through the head whilſt it lay faſt aſleep, and we afterwards found a younger one of the ſame ſort. It was all over of a dark grey colour, with a ſlight olive caſt, ſomething like the ſeals in the northern hemi- 1775. JANUARY.

* See the Hon. captain Phipp's (now lord Mulgrave's) Voyage towards the North Pole, 1775.

ſphere.

1775. JANUARY. ſphere. It likewiſe reſembled theſe animals in the more perfect ſhape of its fore feet, and the want of external ears. Its noſe projected far beyond the mouth, and had a looſe wrinkled ſkin, which may perhaps be occaſionally puffed up when the animal is angry, and will in that caſe form ſomething like the creſt which has been figured in the print accompanying lord Anſon's voyage. The animal which we examined was about thirteen feet long, but in proportion, of a more ſlender make than the ſea-lion with a mane, which we ſaw at Staten Land *. Here we likewiſe found a flock of about twenty pinguins, of a much greater ſize than any we had hitherto ſeen; they were thirty-nine inches long, and weighed forty pounds. Their belly was of a moſt enormous ſize, and covered with a vaſt quantity of fat. An oval ſpot of bright yellow, or lemon colour, appears on each ſide of the head, and is edged with black, the reſt of the body being of a blackiſh-grey colour on the whole back, and upper-ſide, and white on the belly, under the fins, and all the fore-part. Theſe birds were ſo dull, as hardly to waddle from us; we eaſily overtook them by running, and knocked them down with ſticks. When we returned on board, we found that they were mentioned by that great zoologiſt Mr. Pennant, in

* This animal, or Anſon's ſea-lion, (*phoca leonina*, Linn.) ſeems to be the ſame which the Engliſh, at Falkland Iſland, have called the clapmatch-ſeal.—See the Philoſ. Tranſact. vol. LXVI. part i.

the

the Phil. Tranſ. by the name of Patagonian pinguins, and we likewiſe ſuppoſe them to be the ſame ſpecies which the Engliſh at the Falkland Iſlands, have named yellow, or king pinguins *. The ſeals which we found here, were more fierce, than any we had ſeen on the New Year's Iſles, and did not run out of our way. The youngeſt cubs barked at us, and ran after our heels when we paſſed by them, trying to bite our legs. They were all of the ſpecies which I have before named ſea-bears, *(urſine ſeals*, Penn.*)* and not a ſingle ſea-lion with a mane, was to be ſeen among them. We climbed upon a little hummock, about eight yards high, where we found two ſpecies of plants; one was the graſs which grows plentifully on the New Year's Iſles *(dactylis glomerata)*, and the other a kind of burnet *(ſanguiſorba.)* Here captain Cook diſplayed the Britiſh flag, and performed the ceremony of taking poſſeſſion of theſe barren rocks, "in the name of his Britannic Majeſty, and his heirs for ever." A volley of two or three muſkets was fired into the air, to give greater weight to this aſſertion; and the barren rocks re-echoed with the ſound, to the utter amazement of the ſeals and pinguins, the inhabitants of theſe newly diſcovered dominions. The rocks conſiſted of a bluiſh grey ſlate, in horizontal ſtrata, of which many fragments every where covered the beaches. As far as 1775. JANUARY.

* See the Philoſophical Tranſactions, vol. LXVI. part 1.

1775. JANUARY. we were able to examine them, they contained no other minerals of any kind; the whole country being uſeleſs, and frightfully barren in every reſpect. We embarked ſoon after with a load of ſeals, pinguins, and ſhags, and leaving this bay, which was named Poſſeſſion Bay, and is ſituated in 54° 15′ S. and 37° 15′ W. arrived ſafe on board before noon. During our ſtay on ſhore, we ſaw ſome ſmall fragments of ice floating out to ſea, and heard the huge maſſes in the fartheſt part of the bay, crack very loud from time to time. We continued to coaſt the land during the two following days, and diſcovered ſeveral bays and head-lands upon it, which were ſucceſſively named Cumberland Bay, Cape George, Royal Bay, Cape Charlotte, and Sandwich Bay. The appearance of the land was always nearly the ſame; its mountains towards the ſouth were exceſſively high, and divided into innumerable ragged points, like the flames in a raging fire. Mr. Hodges has drawn a very maſterly view of part of this coaſt, where the horrors and caricatures of nature are faithfully copied, in that great ſtyle which is peculiar to him, and which animates all his views of ſavage countries. The drawings I here mention are engraved, and intended for captain Cook's account of this voyage.

On the 19th we reached the S. E. extremity of ſouthern Georgia, which we now diſcovered to be an iſland, between fifty and ſixty leagues in length. A rock which was named Cooper's

Cooper's Iſland, lies off the ſouth end, in 54° 52′ S. and 35° 50′ W. We diſcovered at the ſame time, an iſland to the ſouth-eaſtward, about fourteen leagues diſtant, of which we could not yet determine the ſize. 1775. JANUARY.

We ſailed towards it on the 20th in the morning, after having coaſted the ſouth end of the Iſle of Georgia, till we came in ſight of the Green Iſlands, diſcovered on the 16th. The weather had for theſe four days paſt, been extremely fair, and favourable for the purpoſe of exploring this land; the winds had likewiſe been gentle, and the air very mild. We had however, no ſooner left the coaſt, than a ſtrong gale, attended with fogs and rains ſprung up, which obliged us to take in all our topſails; but it fortunately was of a ſhort duration, for at midnight we were becalmed. The land towards which we ſailed, was ſo much involved in fogs, that our ſeamen were uncertain of the ſituation, and continued to tack from time to time, in order to avoid it. The fog continued during the 21ſt, and 22d, and obliged us to change our courſe very frequently. Friday 20.

On the 23d, the ſame thick weather, being attended with a freſh breeze, we ſtood boldly on a tack, which all on board were firmly perſuaded, would carry us directly from the land. Inſtead of that, about eleven o'clock, lieutenant Clerke ſaw the breakers ſcarce half a mile ahead, and ſeveral ſhags came to meet us, which ſeldom go to a Monday 23.

1775. JANUARY. greater diſtance from land. We now diſcovered that we had very providentially eſcaped being wrecked on the land, by making the circuit of it without knowing it. We put about inſtantly after this diſcovery, and ſtood off and on all day, as well as the next, becauſe the ſame kind of thick fog, with frequent intervals of calm weather continued. In the evening however, the fog cleared for a little while, and gave us a fair view, both of the Iſle of Georgia, and of the ſmaller one round which we had ſailed. We found the latter of an inconſiderable ſize, and ſurrounded with other broken rocks; the whole dangerous group was therefore named Clerke's rocks, and lies in 55° S. and 34° 50′ W. Early on the 25th, we directed our courſe to the eaſtward, and afterwards ſomewhat ſoutherly, in order to make another run towards the ſouth before we returned into milder climates.

Wedneſd. 25.

It has been ſuppoſed, that all parts of this globe, including thoſe which are barren and dreary in the higheſt degree, are fit to become the abode of men. Before we arrived at this Iſland of Georgia, we had nothing to oppoſe to this opinion, ſince even the wintery ſhores of Tierra del Fuego were inhabited by human beings, who were ſtill one ſtep removed from brutes. But the climate of Tierra del Fuego is mild with reſpect to that of Georgia, the difference in the thermometer which we obſerved, being at leaſt ten degrees. It has beſides the advantage of producing a quantity

quantity of ſhrubbery and wood, ſufficient to ſupply the wants of the natives, who are by that means enabled to reſt ſheltered from the inclemencies of the air, and to light fires, which give them warmth, and may ſerve to make their food eatable and wholeſome. As New Georgia is wholly deſtitute of wood, and of any other combuſtible to ſerve as a ſuccedaneum, I apprehend it would be impoſſible for any race of men to live upon it, though they ſhould, inſtead of the ſtupidity of the Peſſerais, be poſſeſſed of the ingenuity of Europeans. The ſummers of this new iſland are rigorouſly cold, the thermometer having never riſen ten degrees above the freezing point, during our ſtay on the coaſt; and though we have reaſon to ſuppoſe, that the winters are not colder in the ſame proportion as in our hemiſphere, yet it is probable there will be at leaſt a difference of twenty or thirty degrees. This I think is ſufficient to kill any men who may ſurvive the ſummer there, ſuppoſing them provided with no other defence than that which the country affords. But South Georgia, beſides being uninhabitable, does not appear to contain any ſingle article, for which it might be viſited occaſionally by European ſhips. Seals, and ſea-lions, of which the blubber is accounted an article of commerce, are much more numerous on the deſart coaſts of South America, the Falkland, and the New Year's Iſlands, where they may likewiſe be obtained at a much ſmaller riſk. If the northern ocean ſhould ever be cleared of whales,

1775. JANUARY.

1775. JANUARY. whales, by our annual fiſheries, we might then viſit the other hemiſphere, where theſe animals are known to be numerous. However, there ſeems to be little neceſſity to advance ſo far ſouth as New Georgia in queſt of them, ſince the Portugueſe, and the North Americans, have of late years killed numbers of them on the coaſt of America, going no farther than the Falkland Iſlands. It ſhould therefore ſeem probable, that though Southern Georgia may hereafter become important to mankind, that period is at preſent ſo far remote, and perhaps will not happen, till Patagonia and Tierra del Fuego are inhabited, and civiliſed like Scotland and Sweden.

Thurſday 26. We ſtood to the ſouthward on the 26th, with a freſh breeze, and the horizon tolerably clear, conſidering the uſual weather of theſe climates, and returned to our wonted but loathed diet of ſalted meat, having eaten the laſt pinguin which we had killed in Poſſeſſion Bay; however, the expectation of a ſpeedy arrival at the Cape of Good Hope, in ſome meaſure alleviated our ſufferings. On the 27th at noon we had paſſed the latitude of $59\frac{1}{2}^{\circ}$ S. and ſaw ſeveral fulmars *(procellaria glacialis)* which are commonly the forerunners of ice in high latitudes. Accordingly in the evening, between ſix and ſeven, we ſaw ſeveral iſlands of ice, and a quantity of looſe ice. Fogs and wet weather ſet in this day, which prevented our ſteering ſo much to the ſouthward as we had hitherto done. Many great maſſes of

of ice ſurrounded us on all ſides the next day, and in the afternoon a large bed of ſmall ice, adjoining to ſeveral fields of ice, ſtopped our farther progreſs, greatly to the ſatisfaction of all the crew, who were at preſent thoroughly tired of this dreadful climate, and exhauſted by perpetual watching and attendance, which the frequency and ſudden appearance of dangers required. We had this time penetrated only a few minutes beyond 60° S. and gradually ſteered to the northward, as well as the winds, the thickneſs of the weather, and the ice would permit. Many of our people were at this time afflicted with ſevere rheumatic pains and colds, and ſome were ſuddenly taken with fainting fits, ſince their unwholeſome, juiceleſs food could not ſupply the waſte of animal ſpirits. The thermometer ſtood at 35° in theſe high latitudes; and this degree of cold, as well as the continuance of ſnow-ſhowers and wet fogs, greatly retarded the recovery of our patients. However, as we now ſteered to the northward, we were in hopes of ſoon reaching a milder climate, fully perſuaded that no farther obſtacles lay in wait to try our patience. But we were again doomed to experience diſappointment, and diſcovered another frozen country, which

1775. JANUARY. Saturday 28.

> Lies dark and wild, beat with perpetual ſtorms
> Of whirlwind and dire hail; which on firm land
> Thaws not, but gathers heap, and ruin ſeems
> Of ancient pile. MILTON.

The

1775. JANUARY. Tueſday 31. The diſcovery of this land happened on the 31ſt of January, at ſeven in the morning, when the weather was ſo hazy, that we could not ſee four or five miles around us. We ran towards it near an hour, when we were within half a mile of the rocks, which were black, cavernous, and perpendicular to a vaſt height, inhabited by flocks of ſhags, and beaten by dreadful breakers. Thick clouds veiled the upper parts of the mountains, but one immenſe peak appeared towering beyond them, covered with ſnow. It was agreed by all preſent, that the perpendicular height of this mountain could not be far ſhort of two miles. We ſounded with 170 fathom cloſe in ſhore, and then put about, ſtanding to the ſouth, in order to weather the weſtern point, which we had now diſcovered. We had not run above an hour on this tack, when we ſaw high mountains to the S. S. E. about five or ſix leagues diſtant, which, from the courſe we had kept, we muſt have narrowly eſcaped about midnight. This being the ſouthernmoſt extremity of the land, my father named it Southern Thule, a name which captain Cook has preſerved. It is ſituated in 59° 30′ S. and 27° 30′ W. At one o'clock in the afternoon we put about, and ſtood to the northward, beyond the point which we had firſt ſeen. This now appeared to be a black rock, ſeparated from a great projecting head-land. The rock was named Freezeland's Head, from a German ſailor who firſt diſcovered it, and lies in 58° 55′ S. and 27° W. The head-

head-land, which has ſince been named Cape Briſtol, appeared to be connected with the Southern Thule, by ſome lands which we ſaw very far to the eaſtward, forming a ſpacious bay. Captain Cook, however, did not venture to loſe any time in the inveſtigation of this coaſt, where he was expoſed to imminent danger from the violence of weſterly winds. He choſe rather to explore its northern extremities, which beſides, were doubtleſs the moſt likely to be of importance to navigators. We kept at the diſtance of two or three leagues from the land, having little winds, and ſeeing the coaſt every where ſteep and inacceſſible. The mountains appeared to be of vaſt height, their ſummits being conſtantly wrapped in clouds, and the lower part covered with ſnow down to the water's edge in ſuch a manner, that we ſhould have found it difficult to pronounce whether we ſaw land or ice, if ſome hollow rocks had not ſhewn their black and naked caverns in ſeveral places. 1775. JANUARY.

We found ourſelves abreaſt of another projecting point in the morning, which captain Cook has ſince named Cape Montague, and which ſeems to be connected with Cape Briſtol, a kind of bay lying between them. Beyond it we diſcovered another point to the north, which upon our nearer approach was found to be a ſeparate iſland, and named Saunders's Iſland. It was not inferior in height to the mountainous coaſt to the ſouth of it, and was covered FEBRUARY. Wedneſd. 1.

1775. FEBRUARY. with ſnow and ice in the ſame manner. It is ſituated in 57° 48′ S. and 26° 35′ W.

Thurſday 2. We had little wind during night, but with the return of day-light, ſtood to the eaſtward, in order to weather Saunders's Iſland. On this courſe we ſaw two ſmall iſlands far to the northward of us, which, from the day, were named Candlemas Iſlands. We could not accompliſh our point with a ſingle board, but the wind being contrary, tacked all the afternoon, in order to double the northern extremity of Saunders's Iſland. We came very near it ſeveral times, and obſerved a flat point or beach running out to the northward, covered with heaps of ſhingle, which were piled up in the wildeſt manner, and offered nothing but ſharp points and ridges to the eye. The whole country had the moſt deſolate and horrid appearance which can poſſibly be conceived; not a ſingle graſs could be diſcerned upon it, and it ſeemed to be forſaken even by the amphibious and lumpiſh animals which dwelt on Southern Georgia. In ſhort, we could not help applying to it, that remarkable expreſſion of Pliny,

Pars mundi damnata a rerum naturâ, et denſâ merſa caligine.

Hiſt. Nat. lib. xv. c. 36.

The wind permitted us the next day to approach the Candlemas Iſles, in order to aſcertain their ſituation, which

which we found to be in 57° 10′ S. and 27° 6′ W. We now ſteered to the eaſtward, and loſt ſight of the ſouthern land, having doubled its northern extremity. Captain Cook at firſt gave it the general name of Snowland, but afterwards honoured it with that of Sandwich Land. I am inclined to believe that this land has been diſcovered by thoſe early navigators, who have furniſhed the geographers with the Gulph of St. Sebaſtian, and the iſle of Creſſalina. It remains very doubtful, whether the different projecting points of Thule, Cape Briſtol, and Cape Montague, form one connected land, or ſeveral diſtinct iſlands; and this may probably continue undetermined for ages to come, ſince an expedition to thoſe inhoſpitable parts of the world, beſides being extremely perilous, does not ſeem likely to be productive of great advantages to mankind. It was the object of our hazardous voyage to explore the ſouthern hemiſphere to the ſixtieth degree of latitude, and to aſcertain the exiſtence of a ſouthern continent in the temperate zone. Our different tracks have not only rendered it evident, that a continent does not exiſt in the temperate ſouthern zone, but have likewiſe made it probable, by advancing into the frigid zone to ſeventy one degrees ſouth, that the ſpace within the antarctic circle is far from being every where filled up with land. The exiſtence of ſuch a continent has been believed by the moſt philoſophic enquirers of the preſent age; and this opinion, though now ſo much invali-

1775. FEBRUARY.

1775. FEBRUARY. dated, is nevertheleſs a proof of their great intelligence, conſidering the few *data* upon which they could proceed. Without aſcertaining whether Sandwich Land is part of a greater tract, it may not be improper to mention, that one of the reaſons alledged in favour of a continent, has lately been overthrown by experiments. It has always been ſuppoſed that the ice, which is ſeen floating in immenſe quantities on the ſea, muſt be formed on ſhore from ſnow or freſh water; but it has now been proved that ſea-water will freeze, and that the ice which is thus formed does not contain any particles of ſalt, except where it comes in contact with the water, which introduces itſelf into its pores and interſtices *.

The barrenneſs of Sandwich Land, the gradual encreaſe of the nights, and the approach of a more rigorous ſeaſon in theſe high latitudes, added to the conſideration that we had a long run to make before we arrived at another place of refreſhment, and that our proviſions were almoſt expended, induced captain Cook to abandon the further inveſtigation of the coaſt, and to ſteer to the eaſtward, nearly in the parallel of 58° S. where we had frequent ſnow ſhowers, ſaw many ice-iſlands every day, and, contrary to our former obſervations, found the northerly winds colder than

* See Mr. Nairne's Experiments in the LXVI. vol. of the Philoſophical Tranſactions, part i.

thoſe

thoſe from the ſouth; on which a ſtrong preſumption may be founded, that there is no land in the laſt mentioned direction. 1775. FEBRUARY.

The ſour krout, that excellent antiſcorbutic food, of which ſixty large caſks were put on board our ſhip, was now entirely conſumed, and the want of it was ſeverely felt from the captain down to the ſailor. It enabled us to eat our portion of ſalt meat, of which it corrected the ſeptic quality. The wiſh for a ſpeedy releaſe from this nauſeous diet now became univerſal, and our continuance in the high latitudes of 58° and 57° was diſagreeable to all on board. On the 15th we bore away to the northward, having croſſed the meridian of Greenwich, and on the 17th, at noon, reached the parallel of M. Bouvet's diſcovery of Cape Circumciſion, when we again ran to the eaſtward that we might not miſs it. The weather was favourable for the purpoſe; we had a fair wind, and could ſee to the diſtance of eight or ten leagues. On the 19th, in the morning, we croſſed the place where this cape is laid down by M. des Loziers Bouvet, according to his own journal *, without having at that time the leaſt ſigns of land, or paſſing more than four or five iſlands of ice in the courſe of the whole day. We continued to run on in the ſame parallel till the 22d, having Friday 10. Wedneſd. 22.

* See Mr. Dalrymple's Collection of Voyages in the Southern Atlantic Ocean, 1775.

ing

1775. FEBRUARY. ing then explored ſix degrees of longitude to the weſt of M. Bouvet's ſuppoſed land, and about ſeven degrees to the eaſt of it. Captain Furneaux likewiſe, after ſailing over the ſpace where the Gulph of St. Sebaſtian is delineated in the charts, and paſſing between our two diſcoveries of Georgia and Sandwich Land, croſſed the meridian of Cape Circumciſion, in the latitude of 54° S. without meeting with land. From the joint authority of theſe two tracks, we have great room to ſuppoſe, that Mr. des Loziers Bouvet ſaw only a field of ice, with ſuch huge mountainous iſlands of ice upon it, as we fell in with on the 14th of December, 1772 *. Some of our officers were at that time ſtrongly of opinion that they ſaw land, as the ice bore a ſtriking reſemblance to it, and the French captain might be deceived in the ſame manner. Captain Cook was unwilling to leave it in doubt whether there was land or not in the ſituation of that field of ice ſeen in the beginning of our voyage; and therefore directed his courſe acroſs it on the 23d, without meeting with any obſtacles in his way, nor ſeeing a ſingle iſland of ice in the ſame ſpot which had been covered with immenſe floating maſſes about two years and two months before. Being now well aſſured that there was no conſiderable land in this part of the ocean, we ſteered to the northward, in order to make the beſt of our way towards the Cape of Good

* See vol. I. p. 98.

Hope.

Hope. The winds being north-weſterly, and blowing very freſh, obliged us to make a great deviation to the eaſt of our proper courſe, till the firſt of March, when we could ſteer directly towards the Cape. The wind, however, ſoon ſhifted, and blew from its former quarter at ſeveral intervals. Its frequent changes occaſioned great diſcontent among our ſhip's company, whoſe expectations of putting an end to their diſtreſſes, were wound up to the higheſt pitch. The clouds had perhaps never before been ſo attentively examined, in order to find ſome prognoſtics of a fair wind in their appearance, and the general uneaſineſs and impatience at an unfavourable change can ſcarcely be deſcribed. Our voyage had now laſted twenty-ſeven months after leaving the Cape of Good Hope, ſince which time we had not touched at any European port, and lived chiefly upon ſalt proviſions. The ſum total of all the days which we had ſpent on ſhore at different iſlands, and at very great intervals of time, did not amount to more than one hundred and eighty, or about ſix months. This was the only time of refreſhment in the courſe of our long voyage, and yet during part of this, eſpecially the laſt year's cruize, we obtained no freſh proviſions at ſeveral iſlands. The run from New Zeeland towards the Cape of Good Hope was by far the longeſt and moſt difficult which we had ever made; for the trifling refreſhments which we obtained in Chriſtmas Sound, and at the New Year's Iſlands, did not afford

1775. MARCH.

Wedneſd. 1.

the

1775. MARCH. the crew more than four or five freſh meals. If we add to this, the deficiency of ſuch a ſalutary article of proviſion as ſour krout, and the continual progreſſive decay of our ſalt meat, it cannot be very ſurpriſing, that towards the latter end of this run, the hardſhips of our unnatural ſituation ſhould become more intolerable than ever. Several obvious reflections likewiſe encreaſed our uneaſineſs, in proportion as we advanced towards a place which had ſome intercourſe with Europe. All thoſe who had left behind them relations and parents, were apprehenſive that they had loſt ſome of the number during their abſence; and it was more than probable, that this interval of time would have diſſolved many valuable connections, diminiſhed the number of our friends, and robbed us of the comforts which we uſed to find in their ſociety.

Wedneſd. 15. Notwithſtanding the frequent changes of wind, we advanced to the northward ſo far, that we began to change our cloaths on the 15th, being then between 35° and 36° S. The next morning, at ſeven, we ſaw a ſhip to the windward of us, and about three hours afterwards we came in ſight of another; and the eagerneſs with which every perſon on board bent his eyes towards theſe welcome objects, was the ſtrongeſt proof of that univerſal longing for an intercourſe with Europeans, which, though hitherto ſilent, now broke out into loud and fervent wiſhes. It was thought proper to hoiſt Dutch colours, upon which the ſhip in ſight hoiſted the

the ſame; we then hoiſted the Britiſh flag, and fired a gun to leeward, but the ſtranger ſtill continued to ſhew the firſt. As we were now arrived in a part of the ſea frequented by European ſhips, captain Cook called together all his officers and ſailors, and in the name of the Admiralty board, demanded their journals and log-books, which were all packed up and ſealed. Thoſe who did not belong to the military eſtabliſhment *, were not ſubject to this reſtriction, but preſerved their papers, being only requeſted not to divulge the particular ſituations of our late diſcoveries, previous to their arrival in England. The zealous and candid concern for the advancement of the ſciences, which animates the Britiſh government, has not ſuffered them to conceal the improvement which different branches of knowledge have received under their auſpices; and it were to be wiſhed, that ſo laudable and generous an example, might be followed by other maritime powers, who at preſent ſeem to ſteal into the South Seas, and to be aſhamed of owning that they have been there. 1775. MARCH.

The ſhip in ſight ſeemed to be a homeward bound Dutch Indiaman, and held the ſame courſe with us, but we gradually came up with her. On the 17th in the morning we ſounded, and found bottom with fifty-five fathom, being arrived on the bank which runs off the ſouth end of Friday 17.

* Mr. Wales, Mr. Hodges, my father, and myſelf.

1775. MARCH. Africa. Some fiſhing lines were thrown overboard, and a fiſh called a pollack was caught. In the evening we made the coaſt of Africa, which here conſiſted of low ſandy hummocks, and on which we perceived ſeveral fires. The Saturday 18. next morning a boat was hoiſted out, and ſent on board the Indiaman, which was now about five miles off. Our people returned in a few hours with the welcome news, that there was univerſal peace in Europe. The pleaſure of this intelligence, was however, in a great meaſure ſoured by an account of the maſſacre of the Adventure's boat's crew. The Dutch captain having been long at ſea from Bengal, lamented that he had no refreſhments to offer us. In the afternoon, the weather being very fair, and the breeze freſhening, we got ſight of two Swediſh, one Daniſh, and an Engliſh ſhip, which glided along with all their ſails ſet, and colours flying, and offered to our eyes one of the moſt pleaſing ſights which we had beheld for ſome time Sunday 19. paſt. The next morning, the Engliſh ſhip bore down to us, and lieutenant Clerke, with my father, and a midſhipman, went on board of her. In the afternoon, a ſtrong breeze ſet in, our boat returned, and the Indiaman carefully ſtood off to ſea, whilſt we proceeded till we were cloſe in ſhore. This ſhip was the True Briton, captain Broadley, on her return from China. Our gentlemen ſpoke in the ſtrongeſt terms of the hearty hoſpitality with which they had been received, and invited to a *plain* dinner. Our

readers

readers may imagine with what avidity three famiſhed circumnavigators, who had not ſeen freſh meat for ſix weeks paſt, fell upon a diſh of fattened Chineſe quails, and a delicious gooſe, which their hoſt reckoned a very homely fare. On relating how long they had been abſent from any European ſettlement, how long they had lived upon ſalt-beef, and how oft they had regaled themſelves with ſeals, albatroſſes, and pinguins, the captain and his mates dropt their knives and forks, and in pure pity to the ſtrangers, reſigned all pretenſions to their dinner. At parting, captain Broadley preſented them with a large fat pig, and ſeveral geeſe, on which we dined the two following days. We paſſed Cape Agulhas on the 20th, and were near being blown far to leeward of the Cape, by a very hard gale, if we had not diſcovered the land through the haze early on the 21ſt. We hauled up for it, and carrying more ſail than we had ever ventured to do, in the courſe of the whole voyage, we came ſafe to an anchor in Table Bay, on the 22d in the morning, which we found was only the 21ſt, according to the reckoning of the people on ſhore, we having gained a whole day by ſailing round the world to the eaſtward.

1775. MARCH.

Wedneſd. 22; or Tueſday 21.

Errabant acti fatis maria omnia circum. VIRGIL.

1775. MARCH.

CHAP. VII.

Second ſtay at the Cape of Good Hope.—Run from thence to the Iſlands of St. Helena and Aſcenſion.

Tueſday 21. WE found the Table Bay full of ſhips at our arrival, amongſt which was one Engliſh Indiaman, the Ceres, captain Newt. As ſoon as we were ſeen in the entrance of the bay, and known by our bleached rigging and antiquated appearance, captain Newt very politely ſent one of his mates with a boat load of the beſt refreſhments, and with an offer of his aſſiſtance in caſe our crew had been in diſtreſs. Having been ſo long at ſea, we were touched with this generous conduct, and with no ſmall degree of pleaſure and ſatisfaction, felt ourſelves once more in the company of men. We landed ſoon after, and having paid our devoirs to the governor, and the principal officers of the company, retired to the houſe of Mr. Brand, where we were received with that hearty welcome, which always makes men forget national characters, and convinces them, that real worth is not confined to certain climates or nations. The weather was ſo intenſely hot this day, that we did not remember to have ever felt ſuch a degree of heat in the courſe of our whole voyage. Notwithſtanding this, we dined, according

ing to the Dutch cuſtom, at one o'clock, or during the time of the greateſt heat, and devoured our meal with a ravenous appetite, which painted our paſt diſtreſſes in more lively colours, and, as it were, with greater efficacy, than all the the powers of language. However, as it would have been dangerous to our emaciated bodies to indulge our voracity too far, we were content to riſe from table with a good appetite. We ſoon found the benefit of this proceeding, and viſibly regained ſtrength and healthy looks during our ſtay at the Cape. The officers of the ſhip took lodgings on ſhore the next day; but having neglected to take the ſame precaution, and eating immoderately at firſt, were preſently ſurfeited, and continued to labour under a want of appetite and ſickneſs, which made their ſituation truly tantalizing. Captain Cook ſent two or three ſcorbutic patients to the hoſpital, theſe being the only perſons who were not able to do their duty. The reſt were ſoon reſtored to perfect health by a conſtant ſupply of refreſhments, among which, a kind of brown rye-loaves, and all ſorts of greens, were doubtleſs the moſt efficacious. 1775. MARCH.

The pleaſure of receiving ſome intelligence from all thoſe who were united to us by the ties of blood and affection, was inexpreſſible; and the ſatisfaction of converſing with Europeans, after our long voyage, revived our ſpirits, which a thouſand incidents had conſpired to depreſs. We paſſed our time very agreeably, and aſſiduouſly collected, from heaps

1773. MARCH. heaps of old gazettes, the hiſtory of thoſe years, during which we had been baniſhed, as it were, from all the world. This ſettlement being reſorted to, in ſummer and autumn, by ſhips of all nations, appeared at preſent in a more flouriſhing light, than during our former ſtay in 1772. Beſides the great annual fleet of Dutch Indiamen, we found here ſeveral French veſſels from the Iſle of France, and likewiſe one from Europe, commanded by M. Crozet, who had formerly been at New Zeeland. Several Daniſh and two Swediſh Indiamen alſo came in; a Portugueſe ſhip of war lay here ſeveral days, and three Spaniſh frigates, one homeward bound from Manilla, and two going out to that ſettlement, paſſed ſeveral weeks in this bay. The great events which had happened in Europe during our abſence, crouded upon us unexpectedly. Sweden delivered from the yoke of ariſtocratical tyranny, by a young hero, emulous of Guſtave-Vaſa; the barbaric darkneſs, which in the Eaſt of Europe and Aſia had baffled the Herculean efforts of Peter, diſpelled by a princeſs, who, like the wonder of the polar ſky, ſpreads luminous beams, which turn night into day; laſtly, Poland reſtored to peace, from anarchy and the horrors of civil war, by the united efforts of the leading powers in Europe; and FREDERICK THE GREAT reſting from his triumphs, and ſacrificing to the Muſes in the ſhade of his laurels, revered and beloved even by his former foes! Such were the great and unexpected proſpects, which all at once opened

opened to our eyes, which promiſed general happineſs to the human race, and ſeemed to announce a period of time, when mankind will appear in a more exalted light than ever! 1775. MARCH.

During our ſtay at the Cape, we made an excurſion to Falſe Bay, where Mr. Brand commanded for the Dutch Eaſt India Company. The heat of the ſummer had, in many places, darkened all the tints of green, on that immenſe variety of low ſhrubs and plants, which grow in Africa. However we found a great number of ſpecies in flower, with which we filled our herbals. The roads are very bad, conſiſting of deep ſand in many places, and of rugged heaps of the hardeſt ſtones, in the neighbourhood of Falſe Bay. In our way we ſaw great coveys of a ſpecies of partridge, which the Dutch improperly call pheaſants. They are not very ſhy, and may eaſily be taken alive, and tamed. As there are many parts about the Cape where theſe partridges do not breed, the Dutch have found the method of ſtocking ſuch ſpots with them. They take ſeveral pair of tame partridges, dip them in water, and ſtrew them with aſhes, and thus put them among the buſhes, with their heads under the wing. I do not doubt but that many readers will call in queſtion the ſucceſs of this ſimple manœuvre; but I have only to add, that I heard it from perſons whoſe ſincerity I had no reaſon to ſuſpect. APRIL. Friday 7.

The

1775. APRIL. The environs of Falſe Bay are more dreary than thoſe of Table Bay, the country being almoſt entirely deſart, if we except the commander's houſe, two or three other houſes belonging to private perſons, and ſome magazines and work-ſhops, the property of the Company. The colour of the mountains, however, is leſs gloomy, and the variety of plants and birds which we found there is ſurpriſing. Antelopes likewiſe reſide in great numbers, ſome among the moſt inacceſſible cliffs, and others amidſt the ſmall dry graſſes and ſhrubberies in more level ſpots. We ſpent a whole morning in climbing theſe hills, and returned exceſſively fatigued from the immoderate heat of the day. On the mountains we ſaw ſeveral over-hanging rocks, forming ſmall caverns, where the Dutch frequently paſs the night, when they leave the town to ſhoot antelopes.

Simmon's Bay is that part of Falſe Bay, where the ſhips are beſt ſheltered from the violence of the N. W. winds, which prevail here during the winter months. A pier cloſe to the commander's houſe is built out into the ſea, where the boats can take in water and all kinds of ſtores, with the ſame facility as in Table Bay. Fiſh of the beſt and moſt palatable ſorts are caught here in great plenty, and all kinds of refreſhments are eaſily procured from the plantations on the iſthmus, or from the Cape-Town itſelf, which is only twelve miles diſtant. The arrival of the

ſhips

ſhips draws ſeveral inhabitants from thence to Falſe Bay, who confine themſelves in narrow lodgings, for the ſake of enjoying the company of ſtrangers. This peculiar ſituation affords many favourable opportunities towards forming more intimate connections, which, we were told, the ſtrangers ſeldom neglect, eſpecially as beauty and vivacity are not uncommon at the Cape. 1775. APRIL.

After a ſtay of three days, we returned to the Cape-Town, where we paſſed our time in examining the animals at the Company's garden, and ſearching all the furriers ſhops, in order to collect an aſſortment of antelopes ſkins. We were likewiſe favoured with the ſight of a live *ourang-outang*, or ape, from the iſland of Java, of that ſpecies which has the honour to be adopted as a near relation by ſeveral philoſophers. This animal was about two feet ſix inches high, and preferred crawling on all fours, though it could likewiſe ſit and walk upon the hind-legs. Its fingers and toes were remarkably long, and its thumbs very ſhort, its belly prominent, and its face, which was as ugly as it can well be imagined, had a noſe more reſembling the human than that of other monkies. This animal has, I am told, been ſince brought over to the menagerie of the Prince of Orange, at the Hague *.

* This creature died at the Hague in January 1777; but, through the groſs ignorance and canine malice of the keeper, the ableſt anatomiſts in Holland were diſappointed in the hope of diſſecting it. He cut off its head, in order to prevent their examining the organs of ſpeech; and its hands and feet, to preclude the poſ-

1775. APRIL. We became acquainted, in the courſe of our ſtay, with M. Crozet, who, attended by all his officers, dined with us, upon captain Cook's invitation, and entertained us with many curious particulars relating to his voyage. We were afterwards introduced to the Spaniſh officers, amongſt whom there were ſeveral whoſe accompliſhments and extenſive knowledge do great honour to their corps. They viſited our aſtronomer, Mr. Wales, and were much pleaſed with the time-keepers, or new-invented watches, which they ſaw in his poſſeſſion, complaining, at the ſame time, of the inaccuracy of all the aſtronomical inſtruments which they obtained from their correſpondents at London. Mr. Wales readily parted with one of his ſextants to them, having now, in a manner, completed the voyage; but captain Cook refuſed to have any communication with them, and ſhunned them on all occaſions, from what motives we were at a loſs to determine. Their frigates were reckoned very fine ſhips by our officers; that homeward bound was the Juno, commanded by Don Juan Arraos; the others, going to Manila, were the Aſtrea, captain Don Antonio Albornos, and the Venus, captain Don Gabriel Guerna. The Dutch formerly did not ſuffer the Spaniards to land at the Cape of Good

ſibility of comparing the phalanges with the human and other ſkeletons. When we conſider, through whoſe intereſt the inſpector of that princely collection at the Hague was appointed, we cannot wonder, that he was a ſtranger to liberality of ſentiment.

Hope,

Hope, and diſcouraged them, as much as lay in their power, from touching there, keeping ſtrictly to the Pope's bull, which points out the limits of navigation, and ſhares the world between the crowns of Portugal and Spain. They have, however, of late adopted more Proteſtant principles, and will ſoon drop entirely the averſion which they have long expreſſed towards the Spaniards, as they already feel no reluctance in taking their ſuperfluous dollars. 1775. APRIL.

Our ſhip's company being well refreſhed, and in perfect health, and the ſhip being likewiſe refitted and painted, we took on board a quantity of proviſions, to ſerve on our return, and prepared to ſail with the firſt fair wind. After taking leave of all our friends, and particularly of Dr. Sparrman, who had ſhared the perils and diſtreſſes of our voyage, and whoſe heart had endeared him to all who knew him, we came on board on the 27th in the morning *. About noon, the Dutton Indiaman, captain Rice, got under ſail, and we followed her example, after ſaluting the fort. The Spaniſh frigate, the Juno, ſaluted us with nine guns; which unexpected mark of politeneſs our gunners returned a full quarter of an hour afterwards. A Daniſh Indiaman, captain Hanſſen, likewiſe ſaluted us with eleven guns. Thurſday 27.

* Dr. Sparrman arrived in Sweden in July 1776, having ſpent a year on a moſt hazardous and fatiguing expedition into the interior parts of Africa, where he penetrated farther than Dr. Thunberg, and all who went before him; and made many important diſcoveries, which he intends to communicate to the public.

1775. APRIL. Both theſe ſhips got under ſail immediately after, and ſoon left us far behind.

We paſſed through the northern part of the bay, between Robben Iſland * and the main. This iſland is a barren ſandy ſpot, where many murderers and other miſcreants are confined by order of the Dutch India Company. Among them however there are ſome unhappy victims to the mercileſs ambition of theſe merchants. We need only mention the king of Maduré, who, deprived of his poſſeſſions, and driven to the greateſt horrors of deſpair, here lingers out a burthenſome life, in the deſpicable condition of a common ſlave †.

——————— eſcape who can,
When man's great foe aſſumes the ſhape of man. CUMBERLAND.

On the 28th, in the morning, a man was found concealed in the hold, and proper enquiry being made, it was diſcovered that one of the quarter-maſters had conducted him thither ſome days before, and ſhared his daily allowance with him. His good-nature was puniſhed with a dozen laſhes, and another dozen applied on the

* This is called Pinguin Iſland in Engliſh charts.

† I forbear to repeat the horrid ſtory of this unfortunate monarch, which reflects indelible diſhonour on his inhuman tormentors. It is indeed very fully and feelingly related in a book little known, intitled a Voyage to the Eaſt Indies, in 1747 and 1748, containing an account of St. Helena, Java, Batavia, the Dutch Government, and of China; interſperſed with anecdotes, and illuſtrated with copper-plates. 8vo. London, 1762.

ſtranger's

ſtranger's back as a welcome. He was a native of his ma- 1775. APRIL.
jeſty's German dominions, who having been kidnapped into the Dutch Eaſt India ſervice, had applied to captain Cook to take him under his protection. But it being deemed improper to protect all his majeſty's ſubjects alike, he had been reduced to the neceſſity of coming on board by ſtealth, in order to eſcape from a ſervice to which he had been unjuſtly forced. He ſoon proved to be one of the moſt induſtrious men in the whole ſhip, and gave our crew a good idea of their Hanoverian fellow-ſubjects.

We ſhaped our courſe directly for the iſland of St. Helena, as ſoon as we had cleared the land about Table Bay. The Dutton Indiaman kept company with us, her captain relying on the ſuperior accuracy of our computations; it being cuſtomary with all India ſhips, firſt to run down the latitude, and then to bear away for the iſland upon a parallel. We made the iſland right a-head on the 15th of May, early MAY. Monday 15. in the morning, and came to an anchor at midnight in the uſual anchoring-place of James's Bay. As we ran along the ſouth-eaſtern ſhore, we found it of a conſiderable height, and conſiſting of perpendicular porous rocks, of a brown and blackiſh colour, which in ſome places appeared to be hollowed out by the continual daſhing of the waves againſt them *.

* The deſcription of theſe cavities, in Dr. Hawkſworth's Compilation, vol. III. p. 796, muſt be conſidered as a poetical flight.

Early

1775. MAY. Tueſday 16. Early the next morning our ſhip was ſaluted from James's Fort, which is the principal fort in the bay, and as ſoon as we anſwered it, the Dutton alſo ſaluted. The town, which lay before us, had a ſteep dreary mountain on each ſide, which looked more burnt and deſolate than Eaſter Iſland itſelf. However, at the head of the valley between them we perceived ſome green mountains, and in the town itſelf two coco-palms roſe behind the fort. After breakfaſt we landed at a flight of ſteps newly conſtructed, but which had at all times been much wanted, as the ſurf breaks in with great violence on every part of the ſhore. We walked between a huge impending rock and a parapet wall which faces the ſea, to a gate with a draw-bridge, defended by ſmall batteries. It led to a very conſiderable battery fronting an eſplanade, with a ſhady walk of banian-trees *(ficus religioſa.)* Here we paſſed another gate, and entered the governor's houſe, which is likewiſe fortified, and forms a kind of caſtle. The governor, Mr. Skottowe, received captain Cook with the greateſt marks of diſtinction, a ſalute of thirteen guns being fired on his arrival at the houſe. Soon after, the paſſengers from on board the Dutton * likewiſe came to viſit the governor. This worthy and generous

* They were the Hon. Frederick Stuart, ſon to the earl of Bute, J. Graham, Eſq. late in the council of Bengal, and his lady, J. Laurel, Eſq. —— Johnſon, Eſq. and his lady, colonel Macleane, and ſeveral others. Mr. Graham is ſince dead.

veteran,

veteran, who has been crippled in his country's ſervice, took every opportunity to make our ſtay on the iſland agreeable, and, in particular, to facilitate our reſearches as naturaliſts. We were in the courſe of the day introduced to the principal officers of the Company in the town, who received us with a degree of eaſy politeneſs, peculiar to men of liberal principles. The governor's houſe contains ſeveral ſpacious and convenient apartments, which are particularly agreeable in this hot climate, on account of their loftineſs. Its outſide is, however, very plain, as are all the buildings in the town, not excepting the church, which is newly built of lime-ſtone found on the iſland. A ſmall garden, at the back of the governor's houſe, contains a few ſhady walks, and ſome curious Eaſt Indian trees, among which is the Barringtonia. The barracks of the garriſon, which is here ſupported by the Eaſt India Company, are ſituated farther in the valley; as is likewiſe an hoſpital, with a ſmall orchard, from whence the ſick are ſupplied with greens, and where they are allowed to walk. Several other buildings belonging to the Company are ſituated in the ſame valley, where, notwithſtanding the ſea-breeze, we felt the heat exceſſive, being confined and reverberated by a high barren mountain on each ſide, which muſt make the reſidence in town highly diſagreeable and gloomy. Many of the principal inhabitants open their houſes for the reception of ſtrangers who come on ſhore at this

1775. MAY.

1775. MAY. this place from the India ſhips. The terms are here nearly the ſame as at the Cape; but the produce of ſo ſmall an iſland as St. Helena, will not allow of that proviſion of good cheer, for which the Dutch colony is famous over all the world. We were entertained by Mr. Maſon, a very worthy old man, to whom this ſettlement owes ſome of its beſt and moſt amiable inhabitants. Having taken our lodgings, we went to dine with the governor; and the ſpirit with which the converſation was carried on, gave a convincing proof, that the means of acquiring uſeful knowledge, from a ſtore of good books, were by no means neglected among the inhabitants. Dr. Hawkeſworth's account of captain Cook's firſt voyage round the world, in the Endeavour, had reached this iſland ſome time before; it had been eagerly peruſed, and ſeveral articles, relative to this ſettlement, were now taken notice of with great good humour and pleaſant raillery. The total want of wheelbarrows, and the ill-treatment of the ſlaves, which are ſpoken of in that account *, were reckoned particularly injurious, and captain Cook was called upon to defend himſelf. Mrs. Skottowe,

* See Hawkeſworth's Compilation, vol. III. p. 797. There are many wheelbarrows and ſeveral carts on the iſland, ſome of which ſeemed to be ſtudiouſly placed before captain Cook's lodgings every day. The treatment of ſlaves is alſo miſrepreſented; they have not that pernicious influence on the education of the inhabitants, which is but too frequent at the Cape, and which there fans the fire cauſed by the heat of the climate.

the

the ſprightlieſt lady on the iſland, diſplayed to advantage her witty and ſatirical talents, from which there was no other eſcape left, than to lay the blame on the abſent philoſophers whoſe papers had been conſulted. 1775. MAY.

Early the next morning, the Hon. Mr. Stuart, captain Cook, and myſelf, took an airing on the hills. We rode up that which lies to the weſtward, and is named the Ladder-hill. The road, which has been lately made, aſcends in zigzag along its ſteep ſides, and is very eaſy of aſcent. Its breadth is nine feet, being encloſed on the declivity by a wall about three feet high, made of the ſame ſtone of which the whole mountain conſiſts. This is nothing but a heap of lava, crumbling and decaying into a brown earth in ſome parts, whilſt in others it forms huge maſſes of black cavernous flags, which, in a few inſtances, ſeemed to be ſomewhat vitreous. Many rocks of this kind hang over the road, and ſometimes roll down to the terror and great riſk of the inhabitants, being frequently detached by goats, which came to brouze there; but the ſoldiers of the garriſon have received orders to ſhoot thoſe animal as often as they appear on theſe eminences; and no other command is obeyed with greater alacrity, becauſe they are generally permitted to feaſt upon the goat which they have killed. We proceeded into the country along the ſummit of this hill, about half a mile, when all at once appeared one of the fineſt proſpects we had ever ſeen. It conſiſted of ſeveral

1775. MAY. ſloping hillocks, covered with rich verdure, and interſperſed with fertile vallies, which contained gardens, orchards, and various plantations. Many paſtures ſurrounded by enclofures of ſtone, were filled with a ſmall, but fine breed of cattle, and with Engliſh ſheep; and every valley was provided with a little rivulet, many of which probably take their riſe near two high mountains in the midſt of the iſland, which are frequently involved in clouds. We croſſed ſeveral hills, and looked down into Sandy Bay, which is a ſmall cove ſituated on the oppoſite part of the iſland, and defended by a battery. The view was here romantic, the mountains being covered with thick wild woods to their ſummits, and ſeveral of them, eſpecially that named Diana's Peak, riſing in the moſt elegant forms. The rocks and ſtones in this higher part of the iſland, were quite different from thoſe in the valley which we had left. Below they bore evident marks of the exiſtence of a former volcano; but here above, they conſiſted of a dark grey clayey ſtone in ſtrata, or in ſome places of lime-ſtone, and in others of an unctuous ſoft ſtone, like ſoap-rock *. The ſoil which

* Theſe obſervations do not agree with thoſe in Dr. Hawkeſworth's Compilation, vol. III. p. 795. That volcanos are always ſeated in the higheſt mountains of the country where they are found, is an opinion contradicted by many facts; and the correſpondence of angles in oppoſite mountains, is not more evident to critical obſervers, than landſcapes on Florentine marbles. Dr. Hawkeſworth has generally been unfortunate in his remarks on Nature, as well as in his philoſophical digreſſions, and often miſunderſtood M. Pauw and de Buffon, from whom he has freely copied without making the leaſt acknowledgment. If the

covers theſe ſtrata, is in many places a rich mould, from ſix to ten inches deep, and a variety of plants thrive in it with luxuriance. I found ſeveral ſhrubs on this excurſion, which I had ſeen in no other part of the world, and among them were thoſe which the inhabitants named cabbage-trees, gum-trees, and red-wood; the former thrive in places where the ground is very moiſt; but the latter are always found on the ridge of hills where the ſoil is dry *. The cabbage-tree is one of the indigenous ſpecies, and has rather large leaves; but after many repeated enquiries, I found that it was never made uſe of any other way, than as fuel, and that no reaſon could be aſſigned why it has obtained that name. It muſt not be confounded with the cabbage-tree of America, India, and the South Seas, which is a ſpecies of palm. 1775. MAY.

We were thoroughly wetted ſeveral times by ſmart ſhowers, after each of which the heat of the ſun dried us in a few minutes. We ſtopped every ſlave whom we met on the road, in order to enquire of him what treatment

the reader is deſirous of knowing the true ſtate of volcanos, we will venture to refer him to Ferber's letters to Baron Born, London, 1776. Raſpe Specimen Globi Terraquei, &c. Amſterd. 1763. Alſo Mr. Raſpe's Account of ſome German volcanos, London, 1776.

* This difference is conſequently not owing to the diverſity of the climate, in various parts of the iſland. I have ſeen all theſe plants growing at ſhort diſtances aſunder, and the iſland upon the whole is not ſo immenſely high, as to admit of ſeveral climates. See Hawkeſworth's Compilation, vol. III. p. 796.

1775. MAY. he received from his maſter; being deſirous to know whether the publiſhed accounts were more to be relied upon, than thoſe of the inhabitants. In general, we obtained ſuch anſwers as were favourable to theſe happy iſlanders, and removed the blame which had formerly been thrown on them. A few indeed complained that they were ſparingly ſupplied with food, but this is a diſadvantage under which I am told, even their maſters ſometimes labour, being obliged to eat ſalt proviſions at certain ſeaſons. The ſituation of the ſoldiers appeared to be by far more irkſome, they being confined to conſtant ſalt-diet, of which the Eaſt-India Company, it is ſaid, allows very ſcanty portions. Their pay is alſo very ſmall, and made much leſs before it comes from England. Thoſe who are moſt induſtrious, obtain leave at times to work for the inhabitants, and earn their ſubſiſtence by carrying wood for fuel, from the mountains to the town. We ſaw ſome old grey-headed men employed in this manner, who ſeemed very chearful, till we prevailed upon them to ſpeak of their hardſhips, which they could not do without emotion. All however mentioned their governor with great affection, who is indeed generally eſteemed on the iſland, and has the good of the ſettlement much at heart.

We returned into the town, deſcending along the ſlope of the hill, oppoſite to that by which we went up, and found ourſelves much refreſhed by our excurſion. The horſes

horſes at St. Helena, are imported chiefly from the Cape of Good Hope, and a few are now bred on the iſland; they are ſmall, but travel well in this hilly country. MAY. 1775.

The next day after breakfaſt, the governor invited to his country-houſe a numerous company, conſiſting of the captains and paſſengers in our ſhip, and the Dutton. We rode up the ſame hill which I had aſcended in the firſt ramble, and at the diſtance of about three miles from the town, arrived at the place appointed. We were elegantly entertained at a ſmall houſe, agreeably ſituated in the midſt of a very ſpacious garden, where we ſaw ſeveral plants of Europe, Africa, and America, and particularly a profuſion of roſes and lilies, interſperſed with myrtle and laurel. Several walks of peach-trees were loaded with fruit, which had a peculiar rich flavour different from that of our peaches; but all other European fruit-trees throve indifferently, and if I was rightly informed, never bear any fruit. Vines have likewiſe been planted ſeveral times, but have not ſucceeded, on account of the climate; and cabbages and other greens, which thrive extremely well, are devoured by caterpillars. We walked on all the neighbouring hills, and ſaw ſome ſmall ſpots which had been ſowed with barley; but this, and all other kinds of corn, are generally deſtroyed by the rats, which are immenſely numerous on the iſland. The ground is therefore laid out in paſtures, of which the vivid verdure, in a tropical climate, was really Thurſday 18.

fur-

1775. MAY. ſurpriſing. We were told that the whole iſland can ſupport 3000 head of cattle, but that there were only 2600 upon it at that time. From the number of fields which we ſaw unoccupied, we judged that a much greater number might find ſufficient food; but we were aſſured that the graſs does not grow up again during winter, and that a certain number of fields muſt be reſerved for that ſeaſon. The beef is juicy, delicious, and very fat, and the conſtant conſumption of it prevents the cattle growing old on the iſland. The common furze or gorſe *(ulex europæus)* which our farmers take great pains to eradicate, has been planted here, and now over-runs all the paſtures. The inhabitants have found means to draw advantage from a ſhrub, which has univerſally been eſteemed uſeleſs and pernicious. The aſpect of the country was not always ſo delightful as it is at preſent; the ground was parched by the intenſe heat, and all kinds of herbage and graſs were ſhrivelled up. The introduction of furze buſhes, which throve as it were in deſpite of the ſun, preſerved a degree of moiſture in the ground; under their ſhade the graſs began to grow, and gradually covered the whole country with a rich and beautiful ſod. At preſent the furze is no longer wanted, and the people aſſiduouſly root it out, and make uſe of it for fuel, which is indeed very ſcarce upon the iſland, though I never ſaw a more œconomical uſe made of it than there, and at the Cape. It is really ſurpriſing to ſee a variety of diſhes dreſſed,

dreſſed, eſpecially at the laſt mentioned ſettlement, with no greater fire than an Engliſh cook would make under a ſmall tea-kettle. 1775. MAY.

In our return we ſaw ſeveral coveys of partridges, which are of the ſmall red-legged ſort, common on the coaſt of Africa. We likewiſe ſaw ſeveral beautiful ring-pheaſants, which have been introduced into the iſland by the governor, together with guinea-hens and rabbits. There is at preſent a penalty of five pounds for killing a pheaſant, by which means they multiply ſo faſt, that the reſtriction will ſoon be needleſs. Several other uſeful importations might ſtill be made, which would contribute to the greater oppulence of the people. Snail-trefoil and clover might be ſowed, which would doubtleſs give more ſubſtantial food for the cattle than graſs alone; and the cultivation of pulſe, ſuch as carvanſes and Chineſe beans *(dolichos ſinenſis & phaſeolus mungo)*, of which ſago is made in the province of Georgia, in North America *, cannot be too frequently recommended. A little perſeverance, and a few trials, would eaſily ſucceed in deſtroying the rats and caterpillars, which now devour many uſeful plants; and theſe appear to be the principal obſtacles to agriculture on the iſland. Aſſes ought to be carried

* This is equal in goodneſs to the real ſago, which is the pith of a fern in the eaſtern iſlands of India. The North American ſort is now well known in England, by the name of Bowen's ſago-powder, and the royal navy is ſupplied with it.

thither

1775. MAY. thither from Senegal; where, as M. Adanſon ſays, they have an excellent breed of them. The removal of all kinds of goods would be infinitely facilitated by this importation; and there are ſeveral ſpots of ground, where cattle cannot feed, that would be extremely ſuitable to animals which are ſo indifferent in regard to food.

We paſſed the next day at Mr. Maſon's country-houſe, at the diſtance of four or five miles from the town. We made a circuit, in order to go up a high mountain adjacent to Diana's Peak, where we collected ſome curious plants, though the weather was very rainy. Having ſeen on this excurſion a ſmall kind of blue dove, which is ſaid to have been originally found in the country, as well as the red-legged partridge; and likewiſe ſome rice-birds, commonly called paddies *(loxia oryzivora)*, which have been introduced from the Eaſt Indies; we paſſed a ſmall farm, about a quarter of a mile from the road, where two Bramins reſided, who were accuſed of having oppoſed the Company's intereſt in India. Whether the crime was real or imaginary, remains undetermined; but I could not avoid taking notice of the different manner in which the Dutch and Engliſh treat their captives. The king of Maduré is locked in a dungeon on Robben Iſland, whereas theſe Bramins are ſuffered to be at large, and have a houſe and gardens, with all kinds of proviſions, beſides ſeveral ſlaves to wait upon them.

In

In the evening we returned to town, where Mr. Graham gave a ball to the inhabitants. On entering the room, I was very agreeably ſurpriſed with the great beauty and elegance diſplayed in a numerous circle of ladies; I thought myſelf ſuddenly tranſported to the moſt brilliant capital of Europe: their features were regular, their forms graceful, and their complexion perfectly fair. To theſe charms we may add an eaſy deportment, a genteel education, a pleaſing flow of ſpirits, and acuteneſs of underſtanding, which gave conſtant life to their converſation, and totally baniſhed all formal conſtraint. The ſame company graced another ball the next night, which was given by Mr. Laurel; and, notwithſtanding the ſhort interval which was left for repoſe, we had the ſame reaſon as before to admire their vivacity and activity. The number of ladies was ſo great, that ſome of them were at a loſs for partners, notwithſtanding the preſence of many perſons from on board the two ſhips in the harbour. On this occaſion we were told, that the number of female children born in this iſland evidently exceeds that of males, in the ſame manner as it remarkably does at the Cape of Good Hope. It would be an important circumſtance to aſcertain, whether this is always the caſe in warm countries, eſpecially as philoſophers could not fail to draw many inferences from thence relative to the domeſtic life of different nations. Theſe proportions are not yet well aſcertained, even in ſome parts of Europe; and where they 1775. MAY.

1775. MAY. are determined with ſome preciſion, they offer ſeveral curious facts. In England and France the number of male children exceeds that of females; but in Sweden it is the reverſe. The number of inhabitants on St. Helena does not exceed two thouſand perſons, including near five hundred ſoldiers, and ſix hundred ſlaves. The greateſt extent of their iſland is nearly eight miles, and the circuit about twenty. By the arrival of the India ſhips, which they ſupply with refreſhments, they are in return provided with all ſorts of manufactures and other neceſſaries; and the Company annually orders one or two of their ſhips to touch there in their way to India, in order to ſend them a ſufficient quantity of European goods and proviſions, which they ſtand in need of. Many of their ſlaves are employed in catching fiſh, which are very plentiful; and by the help of theſe, together with their cattle, poultry, roots, and ſalt proviſions, they ſubſiſt throughout the year. Their life ſeems to paſs along very happily; free from the multitude of cares which diſtreſſes their countrymen in England, and bleſſed with quiet and content.

The ſame company which had paſſed the evening at the ball appeared at church the next morning. The Rev. Mr. Carr, a young clergyman of great merit, and of very liberal ſentiments, pronounced a ſenſible diſcourſe, well ſuited to his audience, and convinced us that he has all the qualities of an excellent ſpiritual paſtor. After the ſermon we dined

Sunday 21.

with

with the governor; and taking leave of all our friends, whoſe amiable character had endeared them to us in ſo ſhort a time as that of our ſtay, returned on board, captain Cook's departure being honoured once more by a ſalute from the caſtle. Towards night we got under way, in company with the Dutton Indiaman, and proceeded to the northward. The Company had ſent an order to St. Helena a few months before our arrival, importing that none of their ſhips ſhould touch at the Iſle of Aſcenſion, which they formerly uſed to frequent for the ſake of taking ſome turtles. Captain Cook, however, being deſirous of viſiting this iſland, parted company with the Dutton on the 24th in the evening, after we had all dined on board that ſhip, and experienced many civilities from captain Rice and all his paſſengers. We came in ſight of the land early on the 28th in the morning, and having run all day towards it, came to an anchor in Croſs Bay about five o'clock in the evening. This iſland was firſt diſcovered in 1501, by Joaõ da Nova Galego, a Portugueſe navigator, who named it Ilha de Noſſa Senhora de Conceiçao. The ſame admiral, on his return to Portugal in 1502, diſcovered the Iſland of St. Helena, which obtained that name from the day of the diſcovery *. Aſcenſion was ſeen a ſecond time by Alfonſo

1775. MAY.

Sunday 28.

* Theſe particulars are mentioned in a Portugueſe MS. obligingly communicated to me by George Perry, Eſq. lately returned from India, and intitled, *Conquiſta da*

 India

1775. MAY. d'Albuquerque on his voyage to India in 1503, and then received the name it now bears; but was already at that time in the ſame deſolate condition as at preſent *. We ſent ſeveral parties on ſhore, who paſſed the night on the watch for turtles, which came to lay their eggs on the ſandy ſhores. The drearineſs of this iſland ſurpaſſed all the horrors of Eaſter Iſland and Tierra del Fuego, even without the aſſiſtance of ſnow. It was a ruinous heap of rocks, many of which, as far as we could diſcern from the ſhip, ſeemed to be totally changed by the fire of a volcano. Nearly in the centre of the iſland riſes a broad white mountain of great height, on which we diſcerned ſome verdure by the help of our glaſſes, from whence it has obtained the name of Green Mountain.

Monday 29. We landed early in the morning among ſome rocks, the ſurf being always immenſely high on the great beach; which conſiſts of minute ſhell-ſand, chiefly of a ſnowy white, very deep, dry, and intolerable to the eyes, when the ſun ſhines. We aſcended among heaps of black cavernous ſtone, which perfectly reſembles the moſt common lavas of Veſuvius and Iceland, and of which the broken pieces looked as if they

India per huas e outras Armas, reaës e Evangelicas; the author of which appears to have been a Jeſuit.

* See the Voyage of Giovanni da Empoli on board of one of Albuquerque's ſhips; Ramuſio Raccolta di Viaggi, vol. I. p. 145, edition of 1563.

had

had been accumulated by art. The lava currents cooling very ſuddenly, may eaſily be imagined to produce ſuch an effect. Having aſcended about twelve or fifteen yards perpendicular, we found ourſelves on a great level plain, of ſix or eight miles in circuit, in the different corners of which, we obſerved a large hill of an exact conical ſhape, and of a reddiſh colour, ſtanding perfectly inſulated. Part of the plain between theſe conic hills, was covered with great numbers of ſmaller hillocks, conſiſting of the ſame wild and ragged lava, as that near the ſea, and ringing like glaſs when two pieces are knocked together. The ground between the heaps of lava, was covered with a black earth on which we walked very firmly; but where theſe heaps did not appear, the whole was a red earth, which was ſo looſe, and in ſuch dry minute particles, that the wind raiſed clouds of duſt upon it. The conic hills conſiſted of a very different ſort of lava, which was red, ſoft, and crumbling into earth. One of theſe hills ſtands directly in front of the bay, and has a wooden croſs on its ſummit, from whence the bay is ſaid to take its name. Its ſides are very ſteep, but a path near three quarters of a mile long, winds round it to the ſummit. After examining this remarkable country a little longer, we concluded with a great degree of probability on our ſide, that the plain on which we ſtood, was once the crater or ſeat of a volcano, by the accumulation of whoſe cinders and pumice-ſtones, the conic

1775. MAY.

1775. MAY. conic hills had been gradually formed; that the currents of lava which we now ſaw divided into many heaps, had perhaps been gradually buried in freſh cinders and aſhes, and the waters coming down from the interior mountain in the rainy ſeaſon, had ſmoothened every thing in their way, and filled up by degrees the cavity of the crater. The rocky black lava was the reſidence of numberleſs men of war birds and boobies, which ſat on their eggs, and ſuffered us to come cloſe to them. The men of war birds in general, have a prodigious pendulous ſkin, of a bright red, which they can diſtend to the ſize of a man's hand, and which reſembles the pelican's pouch, being perhaps intended for the ſame purpoſe by nature. On all this rocky ground, we did not meet with more than ten ſhrivelled plants, which were only of two ſorts; one a ſpecies of ſpurge, the other a bind-weed (*euphorbia origanoides, & convolvulus pes capræ*). We returned on board at noon, where we ſaw only ſix turtles which had been caught over night, their laying ſeaſon being almoſt at an end. The officer who had been ſent to the eaſtward, found the wreck of a ſhip there, which appeared to have been partly conſumed by fire, and was probably run on ſhore by the people, in order to ſave their lives. The diſtreſsful ſituation to which ſuch a ſet of men muſt have been reduced, in this barren iſland, before a ſhip could take them up, drew an expreſſion of pity even from the ſailors. But their miſ-

fortune

fortune was now become our advantage; for our proviſion of fuel being very low, captain Cook ſent his boats to take in a ſufficient quantity of the timbers of this wreck. 1775. MAY.

About eight in the evening, it being then quite dark, a ſmall veſſel came into the bay, and anchored directly within us. Captain Cook having hailed her repeatedly, received in anſwer, that ſhe was the Lucretia, a New York ſloop, which had been at Sierra Leon, and was now come to catch turtles, in order to ſell them at the windward iſlands of the Weſt Indies. A lieutenant was ſent on board, who learnt from the maſter, that he had taken our ſhip to be a French Indiaman, and was very deſirous of trading with Engliſh India-ſhips, in which he was diſappointed by the Company's regulations. He dined with our officers the next day, but on the 31ſt at day-break, left the iſland. On the 30th in the morning, we landed a ſecond time, and croſſing the plain, arrived at a prodigious lava current, interſected by many channels, from ſix to eight yards deep, which bore ſtrong marks of being worn by vaſt torrents of water; but were at preſent perfectly dry, the ſun being in the northern hemiſphere. In theſe gullies we found a ſmall quantity of ſoil, conſiſting of a black volcanic earth, mixed with ſome whitiſh particles gritty to the touch. Here we ſaw ſome ſmall bunches of purſlane, and a ſpecies of graſs *(panicum ſanguineum)* which found ſufficient nutriment Tueſday 30.

in

1775. MAY. in the dry ſoil. Having at laſt with great fatigue, climbed over this extenſive and tremendous current of lava, which was much more ſolid than the heaps nearer to the ſea, we came to the foot of the green mountain, which even from the ſhip's place in the bay, we had plainly diſtinguiſhed to be of a different nature from all the reſt of the country. Thoſe parts of the lava which ſurrounded it, were covered with a prodigious quantity of purſlane, and a kind of new fern *(lonchitis adſcenſionis)* where ſeveral flocks of wild goats were feeding. The great mountain is divided in its extremities, by various clefts into ſeveral bodies, but in the centre they all run together, and form one broad maſs of great height. The whole appears to conſiſt of a gritty tophaceous lime-ſtone, which has never been attacked by the volcano, but probably exiſted prior to its eruption; its ſides are covered with a kind of graſs, peculiar to the iſland, which Linnæus has named *ariſtida aſcenſionis*. We likewiſe obſerved ſeveral flocks of goats feeding on it; but they were all exceſſively ſhy, and ran with ſurpriſing velocity along tremendous precipices, where it was impoſſible to follow them. The maſter of the New York ſloop acquainted us, that there is a ſpring of water on one part of this mountain, which falls down a great precipice, and is afterwards abſorbed in the ſand. I am almoſt perſuaded that with a little trouble, Aſcenſion might ſhortly be made fit for the reſidence of

of men. The introduction of furze *(ulex europæus)*, and of a few other plants which thrive beſt in a parched ſoil, and are not likely to be attacked by rats or goats, would ſoon have the ſame effect as at St. Helena. The moiſture attracted from the atmoſphere by the high mountains in the centre of the iſland, would then no longer be evaporated by the violent action of the ſun, but collect into rivulets, and gradually ſupply the whole iſland. A ſod of graſſes would every where cover the ſurface of the ground, and annually encreaſe the ſtratum of mould, till it could be planted with more uſeful vegetables. 1775. MAY.

We returned gradually to Croſs Bay, in the heat of noon, over the plain, having a ſpace of more than five miles to traverſe, where the ſun burnt, and bliſtered our faces and necks, and heated the ſoil to ſuch a degree, that our feet were likewiſe extremely ſore. About three o'clock we arrived at the water's-ſide, and after bathing in a ſmall cove among a few rocks, we made the ſignal for a boat, and were taken on board. The next forenoon we made another ſmall excurſion, in company with captain Cook, towards the Green Mountain, but we were all of us ſo much fatigued that we could not reach it. We made no new obſervations in the courſe of this day, the nature of the iſland being dreary beyond deſcription, in its outſkirts. In the afternoon we hoiſted in all our boats, and ſet ſail, Wedneſd. 31.

1775. MAY. having taken twenty-four turtles, weighing from three to four hundred pounds each. They laſted us three weeks, one and ſometimes two being killed every day, and the ſhip's company receiving as much as they could eat of this wholeſome and palatable food.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

Run from Aſcenſion, paſt the Iſland of Fernando da Noronha, to the Açores.—Stay at Fayal.—Return to England.

AFTER leaving Aſcenſion we made a good deal of weſting, inſomuch that we came in ſight of the Iſland of Fernando da Noronha, near the coaſt of Braſil, on the 9th of June, about one o'clock in the afternoon. The longitude of this iſland being hitherto unſettled, captain Cook only ran in ſight of it, in order to determine its true ſituation. Americo Veſpucci, whoſe name has ſince been given to the continent, of which he was one of the firſt diſcoverers, fell in with this iſland in his fourth voyage, ſo early as the year 1502 *; but in what manner it received its preſent name remains unknown. In 1733, the French India Company made a ſmall ſettlement on it; but the Portugueſe laid claim to it, and took poſſeſſion of it, in 1739 †. According to the charts of the French, all the interior part of the iſland conſiſts of extenſive plains, which are ſurrounded by ſeveral hills along the ſea-ſhores ‡. We ap- 1775. JUNE. Friday 9.

* See Ramuſio Raccolta di Viaggi, &c. tom. I. p. 129.

† Don Antonio Ulloa's Voyage to South America, vol. II. may be conſulted, where ſome account of the Portuguſe ſettlement is inſerted.

‡ A very fine plan of the iſland is publiſhed in M. Buache's map, intitled, *Carte de la Partie de l'Ocean vers l'Equateur entre les Cotes d'Afrique & d'Amerique*,

1775. JUNE. proached it on the eaſt ſide, and then hauled cloſe round the Iſle of Rats, which lies off its N. E. point, and looked into the Bay of Remedios, which is ſurrounded by five forts, ſome on Fernando Noronha itſelf, and one on a rock which lies off the N. E. end. The iſland appeared very well wooded in all parts, and ſome of its mountains had much the appearance of being volcanic, though they were covered with rich verdure, which did not ſhew the leaſt marks of cultivation. The five forts in ſight hoiſted their colours at once, and one of them fired a gun. We likewiſe hoiſted our colours, fired a gun to leeward, and inſtantly putting about, ſtood away to the northward.

Sunday 11. On the 11th we croſſed the line, after ſpending two years and nine months to the ſouth of it. The calms which are uſual in its neighbourhood did not retard our courſe, till we had gained near four degrees of north latitude, and laſted from the 14th to the 18th, when the N. E. trade-wind ſet in, after we had amuſed ourſelves with catching ſome ſharks and a porpeſſe, which the crew feaſted upon. Of a very numerous collection of live animals, which my father had collected at a great expence at the Cape of Good Hope, nearly one half periſhed before we reached theſe la-

1737. This map was publiſhed with a view to prove, that certain ſhoals (now well known not to exiſt) cauſed the various currents obſerved in that part of the ſea; and the tribe of French philoſophers have built many ſyſtems upon it, which are conſequently very ill *ſupported*.

titudes.

titudes. Being deſirous of preſerving the reſt, he was obliged to put himſelf to another expence, in order to reſcue them from the malice of the ſailors, who had ſlily and enviouſly killed moſt of thoſe which he had loſt before. 1775. JUNE.

The trade-wind carried us out of the torrid zone in twelve days, and laſted us five days more; the ſun, which commonly regulates the extent of this wind, being in the northern ſigns. On the 4th of July we met with ſqualls and calms alternately; and the next day had a dead calm, which laſted undiſturbed during two days, and was intermixed with light airs for the two following days. The latitudes where theſe calms chiefly reign, are named the horſe-latitudes by mariners, who frequently croſs the ocean from Europe to America, becauſe they are fatal to horſes and other cattle, which are tranſported to the laſt mentioned continent; inſtances frequently happening, when the calms have laſted a whole month without being interrupted, except by light airs of a few hours duration. Friday 30. JULY. Tueſday 4.

Having obtained a fair wind on the 9th, we directed our courſe towards the Açores, commonly called the Weſtern Iſlands in Engliſh charts; and on the 13th, at four in the afternoon, ſaw the Iſland of Fayal. Early the next morning we ſtood in for the land, and gradually came in ſight of the lofty Iſland of Pico, of which the ſkirts appeared to be covered with verdure and habitations. Towards ſeven we drew near the road or bay on the Iſland of Fayal, where Friday 14.

ſhips

1775. JULY. ſhips commonly anchor. The Portugueſe maſter of the port came off to us in a ſmall boat, in order to point out a ſecure place of anchorage, where three veſſels were already moored. He acquainted us in French, that one of theſe, a ſnow under Portugueſe colours, had lately arrived from Para in the Braſils, having, through the ignorance of her conductor, miſſed the Cape Verd Iſlands, to which ſhe was bound. Another ſmall veſſel, which did not ſhew any colours, was a North-American ſloop. The third was the Pourvoyeuſe, a French frigate, whoſe captain, M. d'Eſtelle, with great politeneſs ſent a lieutenant on board, to offer his ſervices to captain Cook. After coming to an anchor, an officer was ſent on ſhore to the commandant of the fort, in order to make the uſual enquiry with regard to the ſalute; but after being detained ſeveral hours, he was told that the fort always returned two guns leſs than it received, for which reaſon we did not think proper to pay the compliment. The American ſloop ſet ſail in the afternoon, being greatly apprehenſive of ſome miſchance from us, though we were inclined to be at peace with all the world.

The appearance of the town, from the ſea ſide, made nearly the ſame impreſſion on us, as that of Funchal in Madeira. It lies along the ſhore of the bay, and riſes in the form of an amphitheatre upon the hill, with an eaſy ſlope. Its churches, monaſteries, forts, and flat-roofed houſes, which are for the greateſt part white, produce a very

very pleaſing effect. The hills beyond the town are ſome of the richeſt that nature and induſtry ever adorned. They were at this time loaded with ripe corn-fields, interſperſed with gardens, groves, and various buildings, which bore evident marks of a great population, and raiſed every idea of plenty. There are two forts which command the bay, one at each extremity of the town, but the ſouthernmoſt is the moſt conſiderable. 1775. JULY.

Immediately after dinner captain Cook, accompanied by my father and myſelf, went on ſhore at the foot of the ſouthern fort. We were no ſooner landed than we plainly diſcovered from what motives the Portugueſe had refuſed to return an equal ſalute. The cannon reſted on rotten carriages, which it was not prudent to expoſe to the ſhock of a diſcharge; and the greater part of them were placed on a rampart, which was infinitely too narow to be fit for uſe. Beſides this, we were afterwards informed, that the expence of powder, upon ſuch occaſions, was deemed ſuperfluous by the preſent oeconomical miniſtry in Portugal. We walked through great part of the town, which is named Villa da Horta, and extends a mile and a quarter in length, conſiſting chiefly of one irregular ſtreet, interſected by a few ſmall lanes. The pavement is made of large ſtones, and tolerably clean, being little frequented. The houſes are contrived exactly in the ſame manner as thoſe of Madeira, with projecting balconies which are roofed at the top, and have

1775. JULY. have lattices that may be lifted up occaſionally, ſupplying the place of windows. After we had viſited the churches, of which there are three, dark and Gothic like thoſe of Madeira, we were conducted to Mr. Dent, the Engliſh deputy-conſul, who received us very kindly, and offered Mr. Wales, my father, Mr. Hodges, and myſelf a lodging in his houſe during our ſtay. He accompanied us next to the different convents within the town. One of theſe belongs to the Franciſcan Cordeliers, who are twenty in number, beſides ſeveral lay-brothers; and, according to their own account, teach rhetoric, philoſophy, and divinity to the children of the inhabitants. Another, ſituated on an eminence, contains twelve Carmelites, with their lay-brothers. The third lies on a hill above the town, and belongs to twelve Capuchins, with ſome lay-brothers. The fourth is placed in the beſt and moſt conſpicuous part of the town, and was formerly the college of the Jeſuits, but is now converted into a court of juſtice, a part of it being reſerved for a public ſchool. It cannot be expected that learning ſhould flouriſh in all theſe dreary cells. The monks being here entirely cut off from the means of acquiring knowledge, are content to live comfortably and agreeably, without undergoing the fatigues of ſtudy. The two nunneries next attracted our attention; the one is dedicated to St. John, and contains one hundred and fifty nuns of the order of St. Clara, with as many ſervants. They wear a long cloak, of dark

dark brown ſerge, over another of white callicoe. Eighty or ninety nuns, of the order of Noſſa Senhora de Conceiçaõ, occupy another convent, with an equal number of ſervants. They wear white dreſſes, and have a piece of blue ſilk fixed on the breaſt, together with an image of the Virgin on a ſilver plate. The reception which we met with at their grates was very polite; but we could not converſe with them for want of knowing their language. Their pronunciation was very ſoft, and in a ſinging tone, which we ſhould have taken to be affected, if we had not afterwards found it general among all ranks of people. The features of ſome were very agreeable, and their complexions fairer than we expected, though in general rather languid. Religion had not yet ſo entirely occupied their breaſt, as to extinguiſh every ſpark of corporeal fire; their eyes, which were indeed their fineſt features, ſtill betrayed an attachment to nature; and if there is truth in the hundredth part of the accounts which we heard at Fayal, love reigns with abſolute ſway in the midſt of their cloiſters. 1775. JULY.

After walking about till ſunſet, we returned to Mr. Dent's houſe, and were introduced to a Portugueſe prieſt, who ſpoke Latin better than all the friars in the different convents, and appeared to be a very intelligent man, whoſe inquiſitive turn of mind had got the better of many prejudices which were common among his countrymen. He communicated to us a Spaniſh literary and political journal,

1775. JULY. which is read at preſent throughout the Portugueſe dominions; the prime miniſter having prohibited the printing of any kind of gazette or news-paper in Portugal. This regulation greatly contributes to keep that kingdom in profound ignorance, which is the only ſecurity of an oppreſſive government.

The next morning we paid a viſit to the officers of the French frigate, who lodged at the houſe of Mrs. Milton, an Engliſh woman, and a widow. This good lady, hearing we had been round the world, ſhed a flood of tears, and told us that our arrival put her in mind of the cruel death of one of her ſons, who had embarked in captain Furneaux's ſhip, and was one of thoſe unfortunate men that were killed and devoured in New Zeeland. The circumſtances with which his untimely fate was attended, are much more horrible, according to the ideas we imbibe by education, than thoſe of any other manner of death, and could not fail of making a deeper impreſſion on the unhappy parent. Her grief was likewiſe of that genuine kind, to which no feeling heart can refuſe a ſympathetic tribute; and it taught us to reflect, how many mothers in Europe, and in the South Seas, have had reaſon to wail the loſs of their ſons, and to execrate the enterprizing ſpirit of mankind. Mrs. Milton, reflecting on the many calamities which had embittered her life, was reſolved to ſecure repoſe and happineſs for her daughter, by placing her in one of

of the nunneries of Fayal; without conſidering at the ſame time, that the world has charms at the age of fourteen, which loſe their attractive power at fifty. Her daughter was handſome enough to diſpute the palm of beauty with all the Portugueſe ladies at Fayal. One of our officers, therefore, undertook to diſſuade Mrs. Milton from her project, and aſſured her, in very blunt terms indeed, that ſo far from doing a meritorious action, ſhe would incur the eternal diſpleaſure of heaven. Whether a ſeaman's admonition could have much effect I leave the reader to determine; Mrs. Milton, however, received it with good humour; and the converſation which followed, gave a convincing proof, that religious motives were not ſo urgent, in behalf of her daughter's confinement, as thoſe of private intereſt. 1775. JULY.

From hence we took a walk upon the hills beyond the town, and found the ground extremely well cultivated, all the fields being encloſed by walls of ſtone, in ſome places cemented together, in others only wrapped in moſs. The people chiefly ſow wheat of the bearded ſort, of which the ears were very large, and the ſtraw of no great length. Beſides this, they have likewiſe barley, which was already houſed; and maize, or Indian corn, which grows in ſome places under fine groves of cheſnut-trees, that greatly adorn the country; but where it ſtands in open fields, they mix it with French beans. Near the cottages we found ſome fields of cucumbers, gourds, melons, and water-

1775. JULY. melons, together with ſafflor, which the Portugueſe employ to colour their eatables yellow. Their orchards ſupply them with lemons, oranges, plums, apricots, figs, pears, and apples. They have few cabbages, and their carrots degenerate, and turn white, which obliges them to ſend for freſh ſeeds to Europe every year. They plant abundance of potatoes by the expreſs command of the government, and ſell them very cheap, becauſe they do not like to eat them. Large ſweet onions, and garlick, the favourite greens of the Portugueſe, are plentiful on the iſland; together with the *ſolanum lycoperſicon*, the fruit of which they call tomatos, and likewiſe abundance of ſtrawberries. There are a few vineyards on the iſland; but the quantity of wine which is made is inconſiderable, and its quality very indifferent. Their oxen are ſmall, but the meat very good, though they are employed to draw the plough and the cart. Their ſheep are likewiſe of a very ſmall breed, but the mutton well taſted. Their goats and hogs are long-legged; and beſides theſe, they keep abundance of poultry of all ſorts. Their horſes are ſmall and ill-looking; but aſſes and mules are more numerous, and perhaps more ſerviceable in this hilly iſland. The roads are much better than at Madeira, and every thing, upon the whole, bears evident marks of greater induſtry. The deafening noiſe made by their carts is, however, very diſagreeable, and owing to their aukward conſtruction. The wheels are formed of three large clumſy pieces of wood,

wood, bound by iron, and faſtened to a ſtrong axletree, which moves therefore together with the wheels, and turns in a round hole made through a ſquare piece of wood, which is tranſverſely fixed to the bottom of the cart. The cottages of the common people are built of clay, and thatched with ſtraw; and are ſmall, but cleanly and cool. The inhabitants were in general fairer than thoſe of Madeira; their features, though ſimilar, were however ſomewhat ſofter; and their dreſs was in general much more decent and comfortable, conſiſting of coarſe linen ſhirts and drawers, with blue or brown jackets, and boots on the legs. A ſhort jacket and petticoat is the dreſs of the women, whoſe hair is tied in a bunch behind, and whoſe features are not always diſagreeable. When they go to town, they put on a cloak which covers their heads, leaving only a ſmall opening for the eyes, and is tied round the waiſt. The men likewiſe add a broad-brimmed hat and a cloak upon theſe occaſions. Wherever we came we found them employed; in the fields reaping their corn, or at home in various other branches of huſbandry; and not one idle beggar made his appearance, by which means the difference between this iſland and Madeira became ſtill more ſtriking. We rambled to ſome groves and wild ſhrubberies on the ſummits of the hills, where we found abundance of myrtles growing wild among tall aſpen-trees, and great quantities of beeches, which being called faya *(fagus,)* 1775. JULY.

in

1775. JULY. in the Portugueſe language, have, it is ſaid, given occaſion to name the iſland Fayal. The proſpect from theſe eminences was very delightful, the town and road lying as it were under our feet, and the iſland of Pico oppoſite, at the diſtance of two or three leagues. A number of canary-birds, blackbirds, and other ſong-birds were heard on all ſides; and their harmony was the more enchanting, as it put us in mind of thoſe European ſcenes from which we had ſo long been abſent. The whole country was filled with a variety of birds, among which we particularly noticed prodigious numbers of common quails, ſome American woodcocks, and a ſmall ſpecies of hawks, from whence this group of iſlands was named Açores, that being the Portugueſe name of a hawk. The prodigious heat of the day obliged us to return to the town about noon, and to take ſhelter in the lofty cool rooms of the conſul's houſe. I was however too much pleaſed with the appearance of the country to paſs the whole afternoon in town, and therefore accompanied Mr. Wales, Mr. Patton, Mr. Hodges, and Mr. Gilbert on another excurſion. We paſſed by the Capuchin monaſtery of St. Antonio, which is ſituated on the hill; and being particularly deſirous of ſeeing a rivulet, which would naturally embelliſh the landſcape where it flowed, we engaged two lively boys to become our conductors. We now croſſed ſome romantic hills and groves, where Mr. Hodges took ſeveral ſketches, and ſoon opened a fine

fine rich plain, laid out in corn-fields and paſtures, in the midſt of which lay the village of Noſſa Senhora de la Luz, ſurrounded by groves of aſpen and beech. When we had reached this place we ſeparated, and Mr. Patton and Mr. Hodges only continued to walk to the rivulet with me. We were ſomewhat diſappointed, when we ſaw a very deep and broad bed of a torrent almoſt entirely dry, except in one part, where an inconſiderable brook appeared to wind its way among the rocks and ſtones. However, we were prevailed upon by our conductors to go down into this hollow, where we ſoon found a great number of young girls aſſembled about the head of the ſpring, employed in drawing water. Among them was one who, by her fair complexion and dreſs, appeared to be of higher rank than the reſt; notwithſtanding this, ſhe had no manner of advantage over her companions, but like them filled her pails with water from the fountain. We could not help being pleaſed to find the remains of patriarchal ſimplicity among a civilized people, where the ſuperiority of rank is commonly marked by pride and indolence. From hence we walked along the bed of the river, which we were told is filled to the top in winter, when heavy rains uſually happen in this iſland. The people told us they expected a ſhower, and had, for that reaſon, laid great quantities of flax in bundles into the dry bed of the torrent, in order to be ſoaked. This flax appeared to be long, and of a good quality, and is manufactured

1775. JULY.

1775. JULY. nufactured into coarſe linens on the iſland. We came back to town much fatigued, when it began to grow dark, after having called at a peaſant's houſe on the road, where we drank ſome of the common wine of the country, which has a bitter taſte, but ſeems to be very wholeſome. The rain, which the people expected, really ſet in as ſoon as we were returned; and I was told it would be of infinite value to the iſlands at this ſeaſon, by ſwelling the grapes with juice, which otherwiſe remain no bigger than currants. During my abſence, my father had converſed with ſeveral Portugueſe, eſpecially with the clergyman I mentioned before, from whom he obtained ſome particulars relative to the Açores, which have enabled me to give the following account of them.

The Açores were firſt diſcovered by ſome Flemiſh ſhips, in 1439, when ſeveral families of that nation ſettled at Fayal, where one of the pariſhes ſtill bears the name of Flamingos. For this reaſon ſome of the old geographers have called them the Flemiſh Iſlands. In 1447, the Portugueſe diſcovered the iſland of St. Maria, which is the eaſternmoſt of this group, then St. Miguiel (Michael) and next Terceira. Don Gonzalo Velho Cabral, commander of Almuros, ſettled on Terceira in 1449, and founded the city of Angra. The iſlands of St. George, Gracioſa, Pico, and Fayal, were likewiſe ſucceſſively ſeen, and ſettled; and laſt of all, the two weſternmoſt of the group, were diſcovered

1775. JULY.

diſcovered, and named Flores and Corvo, from the abundance of flowers on the one, and of crows on the other.

Theſe iſlands, which are all fertile, and at preſent inhabited by an induſtrious race of people, are commanded by a governor-general, who reſides at Angra in Terceira. The preſent governor was Don Anton da Almada, who is univerſally eſteemed on account of his good-nature, and abhorrence of all kinds of extortion and oppreſſion. Inſtead of accumulating a fortune in his poſt, he has ſpent much more than his income, living in great ſplendor on purpoſe to benefit the iſlands, for which reaſon he was continued ſix years in his government, though it is cuſtomary to keep it only three years in the ſame hands. His ſucceſſor, Don Luis de Tal Pilatus, was however daily expected from Liſbon, together with a new biſhop of Angra. The biſhop's dioceſe extends over all the Açores, and he has twelve canons in his cathedral. His income is paid in wheat, and conſiſts of 300 *muys*, or meaſures of twenty-four buſhels. Each *muy* at the loweſt is worth, four pounds ſterling, conſequently he has at leaſt twelve hundred pounds ſterling a year. Every iſland is commanded by a *Capitan Mor*, who is a kind of deputy governor, or commandant, and directs the police, militia, and revenue. A *Juiz* or judge, is at the head of the law department in every iſland, from whom they appeal to a higher court at Terceira, and from thence to the ſupreme court at Liſbon.

1775. JULY. The natives of theſe iſlands are ſaid to be very quarrelſome, and have law-ſuits conſtantly depending.

The iſle of Corvo, is the leaſt of the Açores, and contains ſcarcely ſix hundred inhabitants, who chiefly cultivate wheat, and feed hogs, exporting annually a ſmall quantity of bacon.

The iſle of Flores is ſomething larger, more fertile and more populous. Its exports amount to ſix hundred *muys* of wheat, beſides a quantity of bacon. But as no wine is made in both theſe iſlands, the inhabitants are obliged to import a quantity for their conſumption from Fayal. A large Spaniſh ſhip of war, richly laden, was loſt upon the coaſt of Flores many years ago; her crew and all her treaſures however were ſaved. Theſe Spaniards introduced the venereal diſeaſe upon the iſland, where it was never known before, and their riches being an irreſiſtible temptation with many women, every individual inhabitant was ſoon infected. To expiate this crime in ſome meaſure, they have built a church at a great expence, which is now reckoned the handſomeſt building in all the Açores. The evil has however maintained its ground, and as in Peru, or in ſome parts of Siberia, no inhabitant of Flores is free from it.

Fayal is one of the larger iſlands in the group, being nine leagues long from eaſt to weſt, and about four leagues broad. Its preſent commandant, or *Capitan Mor*, is called Senhor Thomas Franciſco Brum de Silveyra; he has the character

character of a greedy covetous man, and always lives in the country, in order to avoid ſhewing civilities to ſtrangers, or keeping company with the inhabitants of the town. The judge of Fayal was then expected from Portugal, with the new governor-general. The head of the clergy on the iſland, is only ſtyled *oviedor* or auditor, and was the vicar of the principal church in the town. 1775. JULY.

Learning is much diſcountenanced at Fayal, as in all the Açores, and in Portugal itſelf. M. de Fleurieu with M. Pingré, the French aſtronomer, who went out to try ſome time-keepers, were not permitted to land their inſtruments at Terceira, it being apprehended that they meant to do ſome miſchief to the iſland *. Upwards of two years ago, an impoſt of two *reys* † was laid on each *canari* of wine, made in Fayal and Pico, which amounts to ſomething more than a ſhilling per pipe, and produces about one thouſand pounds a year. This revenue was to be raiſed under pretence of providing the ſalary of three profeſſors, to be eſtabliſhed at Fayal, after undergoing an examination at Liſbon. But unfortunately for ſcience, and for the inhabitants of the iſland, the money was no ſooner collected, than it was applied to

* Our aſtronomer did not expoſe himſelf to a refuſal; but fixed the quadrant, and obſerved in the garden adjoining to the conſul's houſe, unknown to all the Portugueſe.

† A *rey* is about the twelfth part of a penny ſterling, and a *canari* is ſomewhat larger than a gallon.

1775. JULY. a very different uſe, and now ſerves to pay and ſupport the garriſon, which nominally conſiſts of one hundred, but in effect of only forty men, without either diſcipline or arms. In conſequence of this abuſe, there are at preſent no public inſtitutions for the improvement of children, and thoſe only who can afford to pay for inſtruction, can give their children a lettered education. There is a profeſſor appointed indeed, who has paſſed the examination; but as he receives no ſalary, he poorly earns his bread by teaching the rudiments of Latin. It muſt be confeſſed, that the impoſt upon the wine, is not the only one which is miſapplied in this iſland. There is another much more conſiderable, of two per cent. laid on all the exports, the produce of which is intended to maintain the fortifications in good repair. However, it is at preſent thought fit to ſuffer the batteries to decay, and to tranſmit the money to Terceira, where it is not better employed. One tenth on all the productions of the Açores belong to the king, and the ſingle article of tobacco, which is monopolized by the crown, brings in a conſiderable ſum. The poſſeſſion of theſe iſlands, ſmall as they are, can therefore never be indifferent to Portugal.

Wheat and maize are the chief products of Fayal; and of the former, it ſends ſeveral ſhip loads to Liſbon in plentiful years. Some flax is likewiſe raiſed there; but the wine known by the name of Fayal wine, is all raiſed on the iſland of Pico, which lies directly oppoſite, and has no harbour.

harbour. The number of inhabitants in Fayal is computed at 15000, diſtributed in twelve pariſhes; and one third of the number live in the town, or Villa da Horta, which contains three of the above pariſhes. Its road or bay is reckoned tolerably ſafe in ſummer, but in winter it is open to ſouth and ſouth-eaſt winds, which, I was told, blow hard at that ſeaſon. However, as the bottom is a good ſand, the American veſſels ſometimes ride there in the worſt weather, by three or four anchors. The wine of Pico is chiefly carried from Fayal to North America, and to Braſil. 1775. JULY.

The iſle of Pico has its name from the peak or high mountain upon it, which is frequently capt with clouds, and ſerves the inhabitants of Fayal nearly the ſame purpoſe as a barometer. The iſland is not only the greateſt, but alſo the moſt populous of the Açores, containing 30000 inhabitants. It has no corn-fields, being every where covered with vineyards, which have a moſt enchanting appearance on the eaſy ſlope at the foot of the mountain. The corn, and other neceſſaries for the conſumption of the natives, are therefore ſupplied from Fayal, moſt of the principal families of that iſland having large poſſeſſions on the oppoſite, or weſtern part of Pico. The ſeaſon of vintage, is the ſeaſon of mirth and feſtivity, when a fourth, or even a third part of the inhabitants of Fayal, remove to Pico with their families, down to the ſmalleſt domeſtic animals.

It

1775. JULY

It is affirmed that a quantity of grapes, which would yield three thouſand pipes of wine, are eaten at that time, every perſon indulging his taſte with this delicious fruit, though no people are more ſober and frugal at their meals than the Portugueſe. Formerly the vintage produced annually 30000, and ſometimes in fortunate years 37000 pipes of wine; but a kind of diſeaſe attacked the vines ſome years ago, which cauſes the leaves to drop off, at the time when the grapes require to be ſheltered from the ſun *. Of late however they have recovered, and at preſent yield from 18000 to 20000 pipes a year. The beſt wine is made on the weſt ſide of the iſland, in the vineyards which belong to the natives of Fayal. That which is raiſed on the oppoſite ſide, is converted into brandy, of which one pipe is made from three or four pipes of wine. The beſt ſort of wine is tart, but pleaſant, and has a good body, which improves greatly by being kept; a pipe of it is ſold on the ſpot for between four and five pounds ſterling. A ſmall quantity of ſweet wine is likewiſe made, which they call *paſſada*, and of which the pipe is ſold at the rate of ſeven or eight pounds ſterling.

St. George is a ſmall narrow iſland, very ſteep, and of conſiderable height. It is inhabited by 5000 perſons, who cultivate much wheat, but ſcarcely any wine.

* I ſuſpect this to be cauſed by ſome ſpecies of inſects.

Gracioſa,

1775. JULY.

Gracioſa has a more gentle ſlope than the former, but is likewiſe very ſmall, and chiefly produces wheat, having 3000 inhabitants. A ſmall quantity of indifferent wine is likewiſe made on it, which is converted into brandy; from five to ſix pipes of wine being required to make one pipe of brandy. Gracioſa and St. George likewiſe have ſome paſtures, and export cheeſe and butter.

Terceira is the largeſt iſland, next to Pico, of all the Açores. It is highly cultivated with wheat, and likewiſe produces ſome bad wine. As it is the reſidence of the governor-general, and of the ſuperior court of juſtice, as well as a biſhop's ſee, it has ſome kind of importance above the reſt. Its inhabitants are computed at 20,000, and its exports conſiſt in wheat, which is ſent to Liſbon.

St. Miguiel is likewiſe of conſiderable extent, very fertile and populous, containing about 25,000 inhabitants. They cultivate no vines, but abundance of wheat and flax. Of the latter they manufacture ſuch a quantity of coarſe linens, that three ſhip-loads of them are annually ſent to Braſil. The linen is about two feet wide, and the *vara** of the common ſort is ſold for about one ſhilling and ſix pence, which is to all appearance a very high price. The principal place on this iſland is a city named Ponte de Gada.

Santa Maria is the ſouth-eaſtermoſt of all the Açores, and produces plenty of wheat. The inhabitants amount

* Portugueſe yard.

1775. JULY. to 5000, ſome of whom manufacture a kind of coarſe earthen-ware, with which they ſupply all the iſlands. They have likewiſe built two ſmall ſhips lately, of wood which grew in their own iſland.

I flatter myſelf that the above particulars, though inſufficient to give a perfect idea of the Açores, will not be unacceptable to my readers, eſpecially as theſe iſlands, being ſeldom viſited by Europeans, are little known, notwithſtanding their ſhort diſtance from us.

We paſſed the Sunday in viſiting ſeveral churches, and accompanied captain Cook, in the afternoon, to the different convents. Each of them has a church annexed to it, where we commonly ſaw two pulpits, oppoſite to each other. It is uſual here, at certain ſtated times, to allow the devil to defend himſelf in one of theſe pulpits, whilſt he is arraigned in the other; but at the ſame time it may be ſuperfluous to mention, that Satan is always ſure to be defeated, though his opponent were the moſt ignorant monk that ever was fattened in a convent. Moſt of the altars are made of cedar wood, and perfume the whole church very agreeably. In the evening we ſaw a great proceſſion, at which all the clergy in town aſſiſted, and where moſt of the principal inhabitants likewiſe took part, by walking in black gowns before the Hoſt. The commercial intercourſe with the North-Americans ſeems to have abated the ſpirit of perſecution, of which the church of Rome is ſometimes accuſed

in

in other countries. When the hoſt paſſes, no perſon is inſulted, who does not chooſe to perform an act of adoration; and ſtrangers in particular are treated with a degree of civility on this ſubject, which they do not meet with in the polite but ſlaviſh metropolis of France. 1775. JULY.

We took a walk the next morning upon the hills to the northward of the town, which furniſhed ſome of the moſt beautiful proſpects. All the roads were lined with tall ſhady trees, and on both ſides were corn-fields, gardens, and orchards. We were able to overlook the whole plain, in which the village of Noſſa Senhora de la Luz is ſituated, and beyond it viewed a ridge of hills, which lead to the higheſt part of the iſland. There is a deep circular valley, as I was informed by the inhabitants, on the ſummit of one of the hills, about nine miles from the town. This cavity is about two leagues in circumference, and its ſides ſlope uniformly down, covered with a rich herbage, where many ſheep are grazing in flocks, which, though belonging to private perſons, are almoſt entirely wild. Rabbits and quails likewiſe are plentiful on its ſides, and at the bottom there is a lake of freſh water, well ſtocked with wild-ducks. The water is ſaid to be about four or five feet deep all over it. This excavation, called La Caldeira, or the Kettle, from its figure, ſeems to be the crater of a former volcano; which becomes ſo much the more probable, as we know that ſome other volcanos have exiſted in the

1775. JULY. Açores. That remarkable mountain, which roſe to the ſurface of the ſea, forming a new iſland, in the year 1638, cloſe to the iſlands of St. Michael, was doubtleſs produced by the action of a very powerful volcano; and though it ſunk again within a ſhort ſpace of time after its formation, yet its momentary appearance ſufficiently overthrows the aſſertion, that only the higheſt peaks of the world can have internal fires *. The iſland which appeared between Terceira and St. Michael, in November 1720, was exactly of the ſame nature, and confirms the above circumſtances. The lofty ſummit of Pico likewiſe conſtantly emits a ſmoke, which we were aſſured of by a Portugueſe captain, named Xaviers, who had taken the pains to climb to the top; and this ſmoke may be ſeen on fair days at Fayal, very early in the morning. Earthquakes are likewiſe very common at all the Açores, and ſeveral ſhocks were felt at Fayal three weeks before our arrival. It appears therefore that almoſt all the iſlands of the Atlantic Ocean, like thoſe of the South Sea, have veſtiges of former volcanos, or ſtill contain burning mountains, at this moment.

* See an account of this remarkable volcano in the Memoires de l'Acad. de Paris, de 1721, p. 26. Ibid, 1722, p. 12. Phil. Tranſ. abridged, vol. VI. p. 154. and Raſpe Specimen Hiſt. Nat. Globi Terraquei. Amſt. 1763. p. 115. The laſt mentioned author has collected every thing relating to the hiſtory of volcanic iſlands, known at the time when he wrote; and having treated the ſubject as a man of ſcience and genius, his book is very fit to be peruſed by the tribe of ſhallow pretenders to knowledge, who dreſs in borrowed plumes.

We

We returned to town, after viſiting the country-houſe and gardens belonging to one of the principal inhabitants, which were contrived with more taſte than could be expected in this iſland. We were extremely ſenſible of the heat, which was very great at this ſeaſon, though we came from the torrid zone. In general, however, the climate of the Açores is ſaid to be very happy, ſalubrious, and temperate. The ſeverities of winter are never felt; the winds indeed are ſometimes boiſterous at that ſeaſon, and the rains more frequent, but froſt and ſnow appear only on the higher parts of the peak. The ſpring and autumn, as alſo the greateſt part of ſummer, are reckoned delightful; ſince a fine breeze of wind commonly cools the air ſufficiently to mitigate the heat of the ſun. 1775. JULY.

In the afternoon, M. Eſtries, the French conſul, went with me to the convent of St. Clare, where his whole family paid a viſit to his ſiſters, who had taken the veil. I was much ſurpriſed, that not even the female relations were admitted within the parlour grates, as this degree of rigid ſequeſtration is uncommon. It is cuſtomary for the nuns to offer their viſitors ſome dainties to eat, but here they ſerved up a whole repaſt, which conſiſted of ſeveral rich and luſcious diſhes. That the mind can be at eaſe, and diſpoſed to ſpiritual meditation, when the body is exhauſted with abſtinence and watching, ſeems to be improbable; but whether the oppoſite extreme, the luxury of a well furniſhed table, is better ſuited to that

1775. JULY. principal intent of monaſtic life, may be doubted with equal juſtice.

The next day, about noon, having taken leave of all our acquaintance, we returned on board with the conſul, and ſeveral Portugueſe, who honoured us with their company at dinner; we paſſed the afternoon very agreeably, their converſation being eaſy and chearful, the reverſe of that haughty taciturnity which is the general character of the Portugueſe nobility at Madeira. They were put on ſhore in the evening, and at four the next morning we weighed, and ſet ſail with a fair wind.

Wedneſd. 19. We paſſed by the iſlands of St. George and Gracioſa, and came in ſight of Terceira at noon. About three o'clock in the afternoon we ſailed along its north ſide, which exhibited the richeſt corn-fields, and various villages ſurrounded by trees. We took leave of it in the evening, and then directed our courſe to the channel. On the 29th, at four o'clock, we ſaw the Start Point and Eddiſtone light-houſe near it, the ſame parts of the Engliſh ſhores which we had laſt ſeen Sunday 30. at the beginning of the voyage. The next morning we paſſed through the Needles, and ſwiftly ſailing between the Iſle of Wight and the fertile ſhores of Hampſhire, came to an anchor a little before noon at Spithead.

Thus, after eſcaping innumerable dangers, and ſuffering a long ſeries of hardſhips, we happily completed a voyage, which had laſted three years and ſixteen days; in the courſe

courſe of which, it is computed we run over a greater ſpace of ſea than any ſhip ever did before us; ſince, taking all our tracks together, they form more than thrice the circumference of the globe. We were likewiſe fortunate enough to loſe only four men; three of whom died by accident, and one by a diſeaſe, which would perhaps have brought him to the grave much ſooner had he continued in England *. The principal view of our expedition, the ſearch after a ſouthern continent within the bounds of the temperate zone, was fulfilled; we had even ſearched the frozen ſeas of the oppoſite hemiſphere, within the antarctic circle, without meeting with that vaſt tract of land which had formerly been ſuppoſed to exiſt. At the ſame time, we had made another diſcovery important to ſcience, that nature forms great maſſes of ice in the midſt of the wide ocean, which are deſtitute of any ſaline particles, but have all the uſeful and ſalubrious qualities of the pure element. At other ſeaſons we explored the Pacific Ocean between the tropics, and in the temperate zone; and there furniſhed geographers with new iſlands, naturaliſts with new plants and birds, and, 1775. JULY.

* From the bills of mortality in Europe, it is computed that three men in a hundred annually die; according to which, we ſhould have loſt at leaſt ten men. Therefore, notwithſtanding the beſt precautions may be taken for the future, yet, from the chance or probability of events, another ſhip may not preſerve her men in the ſame proportion as ours; and it would be extremely raſh to ſuppoſe that this exception could always be produced, merely by the prophylactics and antiſcorbutics we had on board.

above

1775. JULY. above all, the friends of mankind with various modifications of human nature. In one extreme we ſaw, and not without compaſſion, the dull, hungry, deformed ſavages of Tierra del Fuego, incapable of guarding againſt the ſeverities of their wretched climate, and having their mental faculties reduced to that miſerable ſituation which places them next to brutes. In the other, the happier tribes of the Society Iſlands, beautifully formed, placed in a delightful climate, which ſupplies all their wants; ſenſible of the advantages of a well-ordered ſociety, affectionate towards each other, and accuſtomed to gratify their ſenſes, even till they lead to exceſſes. From the contemplation of theſe different characters, the advantages, the bleſſings which civilization and revealed religion have diffuſed over our part of the globe, will become more and more obvious to the impartial enquirer. He will acknowledge, with a thankful heart, that incomprehenſible goodneſs which has given him a diſtinguiſhed ſuperiority over ſo many of his fellow-creatures, who follow the impulſe of their ſenſes, without knowing the nature or name of virtue; without being able to form that great idea of general order, which could alone convey to them a juſt conception of the Creator. Upon the whole, nothing appears more evident, than that the additions to the ſtock of human knowledge which have been made during this voyage, however conſiderable they may be when put in competition with what was known before, are

are of ſmall moment when compared with the immenſe variety of unknown objects which, even in our preſent confined ſituation, are ſtill within our reach, and which, for ages to come, will probably open new and extenſive fields, where the human ſoul will have room to expatiate, and diſplay its faculties with ſuperior luſtre. 1775. JULY.

——Vedi inſieme l'uno e l'altro polo,
Le ſtelle vaghe e lor viaggio torto;
E vedi, 'l veder noſtro quanto e corto! PETRARCA.

FINIS.